

## **Martial God Asura #Chapter 5001: 5100**

### **Cage - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 5001: Cage**

*Chapter 5001: Cage*

“Netherworld Sect?”

Those words brought about shocked looks on the faces of everyone present. They had all heard of the Netherworld Sect.

They were a group of people dressed in red robes and a white veil. They went around finding talented cultivators to plant terrifying monsters in their bodies, turning them into fools.

Song Yun had also fallen prey to the Netherworld Sect as there was the same terrifying monster inside of her as well. However, due to Song Yun’s special constitution and the Godwish Grandmother’s means, Song Yun didn’t turn into a fool. Nevertheless, she still suffered greatly under it.

“I’ve heard of the Netherworld Sect. Elder, are you bringing us to meet someone from the Netherworld Sect?”

Chu Feng suddenly had an ominous feeling.

“Indeed, we’re meeting someone from the Netherworld Sect,” the Godwish Grandmother replied.

“Will the people from the Netherworld Sect be able to treat Yun’er?” the Lady of Dao Sea asked.

From her expression, it was apparent that even the great Lady of Dao Sea was fearful of the Netherworld Sect.

“Since you know of the Netherworld Sect, you should be aware of their deeds. They are a bunch of vile people who have gone around hurting talented children, and the monster inside Yun’er’s body was planted by that man. However, Yun’er’s situation is a little different.

“The envoy from the Netherworld Sect didn’t harm Yun’er right away. Instead, he told me that Yun’er has an unusual condition and would die at this rate, but

he has the ability to save her. Yun'er was indeed in a bad condition back then. Left with no choice, I went along with him.

"I was still worried at the start, but the moment he planted the monster inside Yun'er's body, her condition started to improve. Perhaps due to the peculiar nature of Yun'er's condition, he has been keeping in contact with me over the years. He said that if Yun'er's condition ever deteriorates, I can look for him and he'll treat her. That's why I know where he's at," the Godwish Grandmother said.

"You're really intending to approach the Netherworld Sect for help?" Shengguang Baimei asked with a hint of fear on his face.

"I don't want to get involved with them either, but this is Yun'er's only hope right now," the Godwish Grandmother said.

"That won't do. The Netherworld Sect is too dangerous. Go on your own if you want to."

Shengguang Baimei shook his head vehemently. He even turned to Chu Feng and said, "Young hero Chu Feng, we mustn't go together with them."

"Those from the Netherworld Sect are only interested in highly talented children. Cultivators beyond that age group don't pique their interest. He won't hurt you as long as you don't run your mouth. Think about it, if the Netherworld Sect is truly interested in devastation, the entire Eastern Region would have been in shambles by now.

"Of course, if you're still worried about it, I can bring Yun'er there myself and meet with you later on," the Godwish Grandmother said.

"Elder, I'll go with you. I'm interested in meeting an envoy from the Netherworld Sect," Chu Feng said.

"This... Forget it! Since young hero Chu Feng insists on it, let's head there together. I don't believe that an outsider would be able to do anything to us in the Eastern Region!"

Shengguang Baimei changed his words.

Chu Feng could tell that Shengguang Baimei was afraid of the Netherworld Sect, so he told him that there was no need for him to tag along. However,

Shengguang Baimei insisted on going with him, likely because he was worried for Chu Feng.

In fact, Shengguang Baimei could have simply returned to the Holy Valley now that the Godwish Grandmother was with them, but he still chose to come along because he was worried for Chu Feng. He was afraid that the Godwish Grandmother and the Lady of Dao Sea would renege on their promise and harm Chu Feng.

Of course, he also knew that he wasn't a match for the Godwish Grandmother, but he thought that he could at least buy time for Chu Feng.

To be honest, Chu Feng had a horrible first impression of Shengguang Baimei. He thought that the latter was arrogant, vicious, domineering, and had little regard for the life of others. However, his impression of the latter improved for the better later on.

Shengguang Baimei was fiercely loyal to the Holy Valley and his friends. Just that in itself was enough to win Chu Feng's admiration.

It might be a stretch to say that Shengguang Baimei was a good man, but he was definitely a good friend.

It was extremely hard to track the whereabouts of those from the Netherworld Sect. After all, they were constantly on the move, searching for talented children to plant a monster in their bodies. However, this particular Netherworld Envoy had been maintaining contact with the Godwish Grandmother, which was why the latter knew of his whereabouts.

He was currently in an Ordinary Realm of the Nine Souls Galaxy.

Chu Feng and the others would be extremely close to the Ordinary Realm once they passed through a teleportation formation, but just as they were about to reach the exit, they suddenly encountered an extremely powerful barrier that blocked their path.

"What a powerful barrier! Is this a formation from a God-cloak World Spiritist?" Daoist Niantian exclaimed.

At the same time, Chu Feng and the others also began examining the barrier with frowns on their faces. The barrier was so powerful that it was beyond what a Saint-cloak World Spiritist was capable of pulling off.

It would take either a Half-God level cultivator or a God-cloak World Spiritist to breach the barrier.

Shoosh!

While Chu Feng and the others were rendered helpless before the barrier, the Godwish Grandmother placed a black talisman on her palm and formed a series of hand seals.

Weng!

The talisman disintegrated into a surge of energy that fused with the barrier. A spirit formation gate soon appeared on the barrier, allowing Chu Feng and the others to pass through.

“Big sister, is that black talisman from that man from the Netherworld Sect too?” the Lady of Dao Sea asked.

“Mm. He’s worried that I would be blocked out by his barrier, so he handed the talisman to me in advance,” the Godwish Grandmother replied with a nod.

Chu Feng and the others were able to successfully travel out of the teleportation formation, but what they saw afterward startled them. The first thing they saw was the barrier that had blocked them out while they were in the teleportation formation.

The barrier covered the entire sky, stretching to the horizons of the world. It was just that they were all world spiritists, so they could immediately discern what was going on.

The barrier didn’t just lock out the teleportation formation; it had sealed off the entire Ordinary Realm.

“Big sister, do you know what the Netherworld Envoy is doing here?” the Lady of Dao Sea asked.

She noticed that the barrier had an unusual structure that served not to keep things out but to lock things in. In other words, it was a cage.

It went without saying that the purpose of a cage was to imprison something.

To go to the extent of turning an entire Ordinary Realm into a cage using such formidable means, what could the Netherworld Envoy be trying to imprison?

*Chapter 5002: Meeting the Netherworld Envoy*

“We won’t be able to interfere in his business, so let’s not pay it any heed for now,” the Godwish Grandmother said.

Her intention was to overlook whatever the Netherworld Sect was trying to achieve and prioritize saving Song Yun first. After all, they didn’t have the strength to interfere in the Netherworld Sect’s affairs anyway.

The Godwish Grandmother took out another talisman and crushed it, causing a surge of energy to ripple outward. It was a communication means intended to inform the Netherworld Envoy of the Godwish Grandmother’s visit. All they had to do right now was to wait on the spot.

Roughly four hours later...

“Is he here?”

Chu Feng suddenly raised his head to look toward the south.

“Hm?”

Doubt filled Chu Feng’s eyes.

“What’s wrong, Junior Chu Feng?” the Godwish Grandmother asked.

“I feel like someone is looking at us, but... It might just be my imagination.”

Chu Feng shook his head. He didn’t want to give out a conjecture he wasn’t certain about.

“Are those from the Netherworld Sect here? Why not show yourself?” Shengguang Baimei shouted loudly.

He was the kind of person who liked to maintain a brave front no matter how afraid he was of the other party. His insolent attitude induced a glare from the Godwish Grandmother, who didn’t want to turn the Netherworld Sect against her.

Fortunately, there was no response to his words.

So, they continued waiting.

However, Chu Feng still felt a stare on him from time to time, but the feeling would vanish the moment he turned to look in the direction. He thought that it was just his imagination at the start, but he soon became certain that someone was indeed staring at him.

He thought that it was likely that it was the Netherworld Envoy, but he couldn't understand why the latter refused to show himself.

It was only on the sixth hour after the Godwish Grandmother sent out the signal that a massive tornado started approaching from the north. Despite the terrifying appearance of the disaster, it was actually induced by a single beast.

A humongous bat monstrous beast.

Its cultivation was at early Martial Exalted level, but it had a massive physique. Most notably, its wingspan stretched on for over thirty thousand meters. It was due to those wings that it was able to stir such a huge tornado.

“Is the Godwish Grandmother there?”

The bat monstrous beast didn't recognize the Godwish Grandmother, but it knew that one of them was her.

“I am. May I know if your lord is there?”

The bat monstrous beast was nothing but a small fry to the Godwish Grandmother, but she knew that it had ties with the Netherworld Envoy, so she maintained a polite attitude when addressing it.

“Climb onto my back.”

In contrast, the bat monstrous beast's attitude was a little cold.

However, Chu Feng and the others didn't think much of it. They heeded his instructions and climbed onto his back.

“Pardon me, but I have urgent matters that I need your lord's help on. Could you point a direction out for us and I'll head over first?” the Godwish Grandmother asked.

“Heh...”

Those words brought about a sneer from the bat monstrous beast.

Weng!

Rays of blue light suddenly shone from the bat monstrous beast. Upon closer examination, Chu Feng realized that each ray was a rune in itself. After the surfacing of the runes, the bat monstrous beast beat its wings once more, and it suddenly started moving at a breakneck speed.

Chu Feng and the others had traveled with the Godwish Grandmother thus far, so they could tell that the bat monstrous beast was actually moving at a speed faster than the Godwish Grandmother. It was particularly shocking because they could tell that the bat monstrous beast was only at early Martial Exalted level.

They knew that it must be the doing of the blue runes. It must be some kind of special formation that granted the bat monstrous beast speed far beyond its own means.

“It’s still there?”

Along the way, Chu Feng would still turn around from time to time. He could still feel the gaze persistently lingering on him even though they were traveling at such great speed. That suggested that the owner of the gaze was a formidable expert too.

Soon, under the bat monstrous beast’s lead, Chu Feng arrived at a humongous formation that rose from the earth to heaven, connecting with the barrier that sealed off the Ordinary Realm. As the formation was black in color, the energy pulsations from it resembled dark clouds, bringing about a stifling atmosphere.

A man dressed in a red robe and white veil was currently channeling the formation. The words ‘Netherworld Envoy’ were embroidered in black on his red robe, leaving no room to misinterpret his identity.

“Milord, I’ve brought over the people you have ordered me to fetch.”

As the bat monstrous beast approached the Netherworld Envoy, he morphed into a human, dropped to his knees, and bowed deeply to the latter. That was a huge difference from how he treated Chu Feng and the others.

But again, that was only to be expected, The Netherworld Envoy hadn’t revealed his true prowess yet, but one could already feel the incredible

presence he commanded. Anyone looking at him could easily tell that he was a top-notch expert.

The Netherworld Envoy turned around, but they were unable to see his appearance due to his veil. However, his hands were ghastly pale and his fingernails were exceptionally long, which made him appear more like a zombie than a human.

The Netherworld Envoy walked his hand, and the bat monstrous beast quickly took its leave.

“Milord, please save Yun’er!”

The Godwish Grandmother carried Yun’er forward and kneeled onto the ground.

“It looks like Song Yun is in a bad condition,” the Netherworld Envoy spoke with an eerie, hoarse voice.

“Milord, are you able to save Yun’er?” the Godwish Grandmother asked.

“Given her condition, the only way to save her is to plant another one in her. However, very few people are able to withstand two of them at once, and she might lose her life if she fails to hold on. I’ll leave the decision up to you,” the Netherworld Envoy said.

“Milord, is there any other solution?” the Godwish Grandmother asked.

“This is the only way out. You need to quickly make your decision. Song Yun’s condition is deteriorating with each passing moment. The longer you wait, the lower the chances of success,” the Netherworld Envoy said.

“... I’ll accept your offer, milord. Please save my Yun’er,” the Godwish Grandmother quickly made her decision.

“Alright. I’ll be starting the procedure now.”

The Netherworld Envoy took out a being from his robe. The moment the being appeared, Chu Feng and the others felt chills running through their bodies.  
*novε-|B|n*

] Starvecleric & Yang Wenli's Thoughts



]

] 1/4

*Chapter 5003: Fusing Netherworld Embryos*

The being held in the hand of the Netherworld Envoy was only the size of an egg, but it was actually an embryo. It had a sinister black appearance with red runes inscribed all over it. These runes were emanating a red gaseous flame, which made it look even eerier.

The black appearance was likely to be the embryo's original appearance whereas the red runes were added onto it.

“So this is the monster?” Chu Feng asked uneasily.

After all, this was the culprit that turned countless prodigies into fools.

Furthermore, Chu Feng believed that the Netherworld Sect had malicious intentions for placing such things into the bodies of talented children, which was likely to breed these monsters using those talented children's bodies.

If possible, Chu Feng would rather not allow that thing to enter Song Yun's body.

However, there was no other choice here.

Thus, he could only watch helplessly as the Netherworld Envoy took out a dagger and slice a hole in Song Yun's forehead. Then, he slipped the eerie embryo into her head.

After that, the Netherworld Envoy erased the injury with a swipe of his hand, looking as if nothing had happened at all.

Wu!

Soon, Song Yun let out a moan of pain. Her voice slowly grew louder, and before long, she had already started thrashing around.

Gah!

She opened her eyes and let out a long howl. Her eyes had already turned blood-red, and four beams of blood-red light gushed into the sky from her pupils.

“Milord, what’s going on?” the Godwish Grandmother asked worriedly.

It was clear that the situation wasn’t going well.

“You should be aware that the Netherworld Embryo is a life form too. There are now two different life forms trying to occupy the same body, so it’s only natural for them to resist each other. This is an ordeal that Song Yun has to overcome. She’ll die if she fails to hold on, but if she can grit her teeth and pull through, her condition will improve significantly. She’ll be much healthier than before,” the Netherworld Envoy explained.

“Milord, is there anyone who has survived this before?”

The Godwish Grandmother was actually trying to ask what were the chances of success.

“You’re a world spiritist yourself too. You should be aware that Song Yun’s condition brings about certain death. Otherwise, you wouldn’t have come to look for me. I only did this as a last resort too. At least she’ll have a sliver of hope this way.

“In order to create more outstanding prodigies for the world of cultivation, our Netherworld Sect has once conducted a large-scale experiment. We found 10,000 children in the vast world of cultivation and planted two Netherworld Embryos in their bodies simultaneously. In the end, only three of them survived,” the Netherworld Envoy said.

“Only three? What about the rest? Are they all dead?” the Godwish Grandmother asked.

“Those who can’t withstand a single Netherworld Embryo would go mad. There is only one fate that can befall those who fail to withstand two Netherworld Embryos, and that’s death,” the Netherworld Envoy replied.

Upon hearing those words, the Godwish Grandmother looked at the suffering Song Yun, who looked like she might lose her life at any moment, and her eyes turned red. Her body began to tremble uncontrollably.

“On top of that, I can frankly tell you that the ideal timing to plant the Netherworld Embryo is when the child is within ten years old. The younger the child is, the greater the chances of success. Song Yun’s age has already exceeded this range, so I suggest that you mentally prepare yourself for the worst,” the Netherworld Envoy added.

That was yet another blow to the Godwish Grandmother, who was already on the verge of a mental breakdown.

“Milord, why didn’t you say that earlier?!”

Despite the Godwish Grandmother’s fear of the Netherworld Envoy, she still revealed a reproachful look toward the latter.

“I’ve already told you that Song Yun is bound to die at this rate if you don’t do anything at all. The chances might be slim here, but at least there’s still a sliver of hope,” the Netherworld Envoy replied.

“What’s your goal of planting those Netherworld Embryos into the body of those children? Is it to nurture the Netherworld Embryos?” Chu Feng suddenly asked.

He couldn’t hold himself back anymore. He wanted to know the goal of these people.

“Nurture the Netherworld Embryos? Child, you’re really underestimating our Netherworld Sect. The goal of our Netherworld Sect is to bring prosperity to the world,” the Netherworld Envoy replied.

“Through planting these monsters into the bodies of innocent children without consent? It’s one thing if it succeeds, but what if it fails? They could go insane or even lose their lives. Is that how you bring prosperity to the world? Have you considered the feelings of the parents who lost their children?” Chu Feng asked.

His tone remained rather calm, but it was clear that he was displeased at the Netherworld Sect.

“Chu Feng, stop talking.”

Numerous voice transmissions reached Chu Feng’s ears. They were from Daoist Niantian, the Lady of Dao Sea, Godwish Grandmother, and a few

others. They could tell that the Netherworld Envoy wasn't to be trifled with, so they were worried that Chu Feng would anger him.

Unexpectedly, the Netherworld Envoy didn't lose his temper.

"That's what the naive think. Child, remember this. There are bound to be sacrifices if you wish to make the world a better place. That's a necessary path that humankind has to take to undergo metamorphosis," the Netherworld Envoy said.

His words were high and lofty, carrying not a sliver of regret.

"In other words, you're saying that the Netherworld Sect is filled with selfless individuals who have devoted themselves to a noble cause," Chu Feng scoffed.

However, the Netherworld Envoy replied with a chuckle, "You can say so."

Gah!

Song Yun's cries suddenly grew even louder, and her body started to float in the air. Soon, the four beams of blood-red light began to converge. At the same time, faint red marks started appearing on Song Yun's skin, and they slowly grew more pronounced with time.

These marks were the very same red runes on the Netherworld Embryo.

"T-this... Am I actually that lucky?"

The Netherworld Envoy began to tremble with excitement.

"Milord, what's going on?" the Godwish Grandmother quickly asked.

"Godwish Grandmother, pray for heaven's blessing. If I'm not mistaken, Song Yun is undergoing the fusion of Netherworld Embryos, an event that is practically only spoken of in the legends. If it works out, she will have a boundless future ahead of her!"

The Netherworld Envoy could hardly conceal his elation.

] Starvecleric & Yang Wenli's Thoughts

]

] 2/4

*Chapter 5004: Guidance of the Divine Vat*

“Milord, is the fusion of Netherworld Embryos something good?” the Godwish Grandmother asked.

“Of course! If it works out, not only will she be able to preserve her life, but she’ll wield limitless potential for her future. The experiment that I mentioned earlier was done with the purpose of inducing the fusion of Netherworld Embryos, but it’s already hard to find an individual who can withstand two Netherworld Embryos, let alone fuse them together.”

The Netherworld Envoy started explaining in greater detail out of excitement.

According to him, the purpose of planting Netherworld Embryo into the bodies of talented children was to boost their talents and have those children grow together with the Netherworld Embryos. In the end, they would be able to tap into the power of the Netherworld Embryos to rise to even greater heights.

Just a single Netherworld Embryo was enough to bring a single cultivator to the top echelon of the world of cultivation, let alone two. To use a metaphor, it was similar to a person possessing Heavenly Bloodline and Divine Power at once.

Naturally, the potential they wielded far surpassed that of their peers.

Furthermore, the fusion of the Netherworld Embryos would induce a qualitative evolution in the Netherworld Embryos. The Netherworld Sect had never encountered anyone who managed to pull this off.

According to the legend of the Netherworld Sect, if anyone who succeeded in the fusion of Netherworld Embryos was allowed to reach maturity, they would surely become one of the strongest experts in the vast world of cultivation.

Wu!

The four blood-red beams that were shooting out of Song Yun’s eyes finally converged into two before eventually disappearing. The red marks on her body also gradually faded. Her body that was floating in mid-air slowly fell back down to the ground.

The Godwish Grandmother and the Lady of Dao Sea rushed forward to carry her, but the Netherworld Envoy simply waved her hand and pulled Song Yun over to his side.

He earnestly examined Song Yun, but the confused look on his face suggested that he was unable to find anything peculiar.

Chu Feng also took this opportunity to assess Song Yun.

Song Yun was currently unconscious, but her vitals had stabilized. It looked like she was already out of danger, and it was only a matter of time before she made a full recovery. Other than that, there was nothing peculiar about her.

“Milord, based on what you see... did Yun'er succeed in the fusion of Netherworld Embryos?” the Godwish Grandmother asked.

She was delighted to see that Song Yun's vitals had stabilized, but she was a little excited about the great latent potential mentioned by the Netherworld Envoy too. There were no parents in the world who wouldn't wish the best for their children, and the same applied to her too.

“One of the traits of the fusion is the surfacing of the Netherworld Embryo's runes, as well as the convergence of the four blood-red eyes into two. This tallies with the earlier observation, but I'm still not too certain about it. I'll have to bring Song Yun back to the Netherworld Sect with me to have the elders verify it,” the Netherworld Envoy said.

“The Netherworld Sect? Milord, can I go as well?” the Godwish Grandmother asked.

“Rest assured, Godwish Grandmother. I've been maintaining contact with you because I have high hopes for Song Yun. She would have lost her life if not for my interference. What's there to worry about her being with me? Besides, our Netherworld Sect doesn't infringe on the freedom of the members. Leave me with a location, and I'll bring Song Yun over to meet you in the near future.”

The Netherworld Envoy's words made it clear that the Netherworld Sect would focus its efforts on grooming Song Yun, but he wouldn't allow the Godwish Grandmother to go together with them.

“Milord, is it really impossible? I know that I’m unqualified to enter the Netherworld Sect with my limited strength, but as long as I can be with Yun’er... I’ll do anything as long as I can enter the Netherworld Sect.”

The Godwish Grandmother was saying that she was willing to humble herself as long as she could be with Song Yun.

However, the Netherworld Envoy shook his head and said, “I’m not the one who set the rules. I don’t have the right to call the shot. If others oppose your presence, you might be in danger. Do you get what I’m saying?”

“I understand... Milord, I’ll be entrusting Yun’er into your hands then. You also know that she’s born with demonic nature in her body, so she’s unlike normal children. If she ever offends anyone, I hope that you can take care of her,” the Godwish Grandmother said.

She couldn’t bear to part ways with Song Yun, but there was no other way around it. Furthermore, she thought that it might be a good thing if Song Yun could join a powerhouse like the Netherworld Sect. She could very well grow into an expert far surpassing everyone else in the Nine Souls Galaxy.

“Young hero Chu Feng, the situation doesn’t look good. It looks like Song Yun has caught the eye of the Netherworld Sect, and the fusion of Netherworld Embryos or something sounds like something formidable. Will she exact vengeance on your Hidden Dragon Martial Sect once she matures?”

“After all, your sectmaster nearly took Song Yun’s life the other day,” Shengguang Baimei sent a voice transmission to Chu Feng.

That was also what Chu Feng was worried about.

The Hidden Dragon Martial Sect was indubitably powerful, but Chu Feng was uncertain whether it could match up to the Netherworld Sect. If Song Yun were to mobilize the Netherworld Sect to exact vengeance on the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, things could get awry.

“Elder, there’s something I’d like to tell Song Yun. I know that Song Yun is unconscious and unable to talk, so could I leave her with a message in her mind instead?” Chu Feng asked the Godwish Grandmother.

“Milord, this young friend over here is on good terms with Yun’er. Would you allow him to leave a mental message for Yun’er?” the Godwish Grandmother asked the Netherworld Envoy.

Even though she was Song Yun’s mother, she knew that she couldn’t call the shots for Song Yun anymore.

“Of course. Feel free to do so.”

The Netherworld Envoy walked over to the massive formation and retrieved a vat covered in formations. He formed a series of hand seals, and the massive formation began surging into the vat too.

It looked like he was planning on retracting the cage-like formation and quickly leaving this place with Song Yun.

“I might have failed to capture that thing, but I’d still be pretty lucky if Song Yun has truly succeed in the fusion of Netherworld Embryos,” the Netherworld Envoy murmured to himself.

Meanwhile, Chu Feng and the Godwish Grandmother left a mental message in Song Yun’s head. Song Yun would be able to see those letters when she woke up, and due to the unique nature of mental messages, she would be certain that they were from Chu Feng and her mother.

Chu Feng had no idea what kind of letter the Godwish Grandmother had left for Song Yun, but the one that he had left behind was an apology to her for having failed to protect her. He then moved on to advise Song Yun not to make things hard for Zi Ling and the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect’s sectmaster. He hoped that she could let bygones be bygones.

Soon, the massive formation shrouding the entire world had been kept inside the vat.

“Milord, what is it that you wish to capture? I might be able to offer some help to you,” the Godwish Grandmother stepped forward and asked.

In truth, she was just saying that in hopes of getting on closer terms with the Netherworld Envoy. After all, her beloved daughter was going to be taken away by the other party. Whether she would be able to see her daughter in the future would likely depend on the Netherworld Envoy’s will.



“Godwish Grandmother, I appreciate your goodwill, but do you think that you’ll be able to capture something I’m unable to. Don’t worry, it doesn’t matter. Song Yun is worth much more than that,” the Netherworld Envoy replied with a smile.

Weng!

All of a sudden, the vat began to tremble intensely. Following that, the runes covering the vat began glowing brightly. Soon, it released a whiff of aura toward Chu Feng.

“The guidance of the Divine Vat! No wonder they say good things come in pairs!” the Netherworld Envoy exclaimed in delight.

However, Chu Feng and Shengguang Baimei knew that something bad was going to happen. Even though they couldn’t see the Netherworld Envoy’s face, they could sense his gaze. The eyes he was directing toward Chu Feng were filled with greed.

] Starvecleric & Yang Wenli's Thoughts

]

] 3/4

*Chapter 5005: Good Things Come In Threes*

“Milord, w-what’s wrong? What happened?”

Sensing that something was going awry, the Godwish Grandmother quickly rushed in front of the Netherworld Envoy. It looked like she was asking a question, but she was actually holding back the Netherworld Envoy.

She could tell that the Netherworld Envoy was going to do something detrimental to Chu Feng.

“This item is the Divine Vat of our Netherworld Sect. Usually, the decision of whether to plant a Netherworld Embryo into a talented child is based on the Netherworld Envoys’ judgment, so there are times when there are lapses in our judgment, such that the children are unable to withstand the Netherworld Embryo.

“However, a child who has received the guidance of the Divine Vat would surely be able to withstand the Netherworld Embryo. Not only so, but his body will also be able to fuse impeccably with it too.

“During the experiment back then, there were only three children who survived having two Netherworld Embryos implanted into them. Of them, two suffered tremendous pain, but there was one who overcame it with ease. He’s the one whom we have found through the guidance of the Divine Vat.

“However, the guidance usually occurs only to children of ten years of age or younger, so it’s completely unheard of that a junior of your age would actually be able to trigger it. Your body must be very compatible with our Netherworld Embryo. Godwish Grandmother, I’ll really have to thank you for bringing such a talented individual to me,” the Netherworld Envoy spoke with greed gleaming in his eyes. *no vE/1b*.In

“Milord, didn’t you say that children of ten years of age and above would find it hard to withstand the Netherworld Embryo? Even though Chu Feng is a junior, he has already exceeded ten years of age,” the Godwish Grandmother said.

“Godwish Grandmother, I don’t see you as an outsider so I’ll be direct with you. It’s typically true that any of ten years of age and above who takes in the Netherworld Embryo will end up either dead or crippled, but it’s different for him. He’s someone who has received the guidance of the Divine Vat. I believe that the Divine Vat wouldn’t make a mistake. He’ll surely be able to withstand the power of the Netherworld Embryo,” the Netherworld Envoy said.

“Young hero Chu Feng, what are you standing there for? Hurry up and run!” Shengguang Baimei sent a voice transmission to Chu Feng.

However, the Godwish Grandmother and the Lady of Dao Sea didn’t bother sending a message at all. They knew that it was impossible to escape from the Netherworld Envoy.

Putong!

The Godwish Grandmother kneeled to the ground and pleaded, “Milord, he’s my junior. I was the one who insisted on bringing him with me. Please, let him off!”

“What are you doing, Godwish Grandmother?” He received the guidance of our Netherworld Sect. That’s a good thing!” the Netherworld Envoy said.

With a single step, he walked up to Chu Feng.

Shengguang Baimei immediately released his martial power, hoping to stop the Netherworld Envoy from laying his hands on Chu Feng. However, before he could make a move, he found himself freezing in place. The same applied to Chu Feng too.

Everyone except for the Netherworld Envoy had lost their ability to move. A power that surpassed that of Martial Exalted level had fallen upon the vicinity, rendering even the Godwish Grandmother utterly helpless.

That was the power of a Half-God level cultivator!

“Child, just bear with it. It’ll be beneficial for you if you can pull through.”

The Netherworld Envoy took out the same dagger he used on Song Yun earlier.

Awoo!

It was then that a piercing sound echoed behind Chu Feng. The crowd immediately turned their gazes over, only to see a black gush of gaseous flames rushing toward the Netherworld Envoy.

The black gaseous flames harnessed incredible might, such that it actually knocked the Netherworld Envoy back. Yet, Chu Feng surprisingly remained unharmed even though the black gaseous flames had barely brushed him by.

Furthermore, the black gaseous flames even stopped right beside Chu Feng. It wrapped itself around him before gradually converging to form a silhouette.

“It’s you?” Chu Feng exclaimed in astonishment.

The Godwish Grandmother, the Lady of Dao Sea, Daoist Niantian, and the others were shocked too. The black gaseous flames had morphed into the form of a little girl that looked to be around twelve. Despite her young appearance, she looked incredibly beautiful.

Her skin was fair and delicate, to the point where one would hesitate to touch her out of fear of injuring her. Her facial features were also exquisite, especially her eyes. She had a clean and innocent gaze, unmarred by the darkness of the world.

Yet, no one dared to look down on her due to the black gaseous flames she was wrapped in. It emanated a terrifying aura as if it had originated from the depths of hell, inducing goosebumps.

Chu Feng had met this little girl before in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm.

Back then, the Chu Heavenly Clan was pursuing a demon that was killing many innocent lives in the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm. Chu Feng had investigated the gaze, and it led him to this little girl. It was just that the little girl was too powerful, such that the Chu Heavenly Clan was no match for it.

The entire group from the Chu Heavenly Clan should have died in the encounter, including Chu Feng. Yet, a miracle happened.

When Chu Feng came close to the little girl, she suddenly seemed to be awakened to her conscience. Instead of hurting Chu Feng, she simply turned around and left.

The little girl disappeared from the Great Chilocosm Upper Realm afterward, and Chu Feng hadn't seen her ever since.

Who could have thought that they would meet each other here?

“Could it be that...”

Chu Feng suddenly thought about something. He sensed that someone had been observing him from the shadows ever since they arrived in this Ordinary Realm. He thought that it was the Netherworld Envoy, but from the looks of it now, it was probably this little girl.

On top of that, the Netherworld Envoy had constructed a formation to seal off the entire realm in order to capture something. That ‘something’ could very well be this little girl

“Is this really happening? Hahahahaha! To think that even you would appear as well! My gosh, lady luck is really gracing me today! It seems like good things don't come in pairs but threes!”

The Netherworld Envoy burst into frenzied laughter.

That verified Chu Feng's guess—the Netherworld Envoy was indeed trying to capture the little girl.

But soon, the Netherworld Envoy directed a questioning gaze toward the little girl.

“That's weird. Why would you appear now when you have already hidden for so long? It can't be that... the two of you are acquainted?”

The Netherworld Envoy turned his gaze toward Chu Feng.

The little girl didn't answer that question, but her pure eyes started to be tainted by darkness.

Whoosh!

A burst of black gaseous flame poured out from her body.

Boom! Boom!

A series of explosions ensued.

By the time Chu Feng snapped out of his daze, the little girl and the Netherworld Envoy were no longer in his line of sight. However, tremendous martial power and a flood of black gaseous flames could be seen in the distant sky.

That little girl had made a move against the Netherworld Envoy!

*Chapter 5006: Infusing the Netherworld Embryo Into the Soul*

The grounds shattered and mountains collapsed. Even the forest in the distance started toppling over. Black smoke puffed into the sky as though signaling the arrival of doomsday.

It looked like the world would collapse at this rate, and it was all because of the rampaging black gaseous flames and martial power.

The two forces intersected with each other, creating massive devastation. Were it not for those crossing blows intentionally holding back, even the shockwaves would have been enough to obliterate Chu Feng and the others.

Both the Netherworld Envoy and the little girl were exerting strength that surpassed Martial Exalted level. Chu Feng couldn't tell for sure how powerful they were, but they had to be at Half-God level at the very least.

Even powerhouses like Shengguang Baimei, the Godwish Grandmother, and the others felt utterly insignificant before such force.

This was how merciless the world of cultivation was. Those who stood on higher grounds could easily dictate the life and death of those beneath them.

“Chu Feng, do you recognize that little girl?” the Godwish Grandmother asked with irreconcilable astonishment on her face.

The others were also curious about it too. They could tell that the little girl was the ‘being’ whom the Netherworld Envoy was trying to capture, and it was likely that she had been hiding in this Ordinary Realm for a very long time. The only reason why she had chosen to appear at a moment like this was to save Chu Feng.

But how did Chu Feng get acquainted with such a terrifying individual?

The aura that was emanated by that little girl was so terrifying that it deeply intimidated them. Even if she was a monstrous beast, there was no way she was any ordinary monstrous beast.

“I have met her once before, but we hardly interacted at all. I don’t know why she has chosen to step forward to save me,” Chu Feng replied with a look of confusion.

“Where did you meet her? I don’t think that she’s human. Do you know what she is?” the Godwish Grandmother asked.

“I met her back in the Ancestral Martial Galaxy. I’m not sure whether she’s human or not, but she has been rather friendly to me all this while.”

Chu Feng could still remember his first encounter with the little girl. The latter had also demonstrated terrifying strength and killing intent, but she held herself back due to him.

“Let’s not bother about who she is right now. We need to get out of here right now while she’s keeping the Netherworld Envoy busy!” Shengguang Baimei exclaimed.

He didn’t think that they were out of danger yet. It was one thing if the little girl won the battle, but what if she lost?

“Chu Feng, you leave first. I’ll find a way to contact you later on,” the Godwish Grandmother said.

She had chosen to stay here before she dared not to offend the Netherworld Envoy. After all, Song Yun was going to join the Netherworld Sect, which would put her under the care of the Netherworld Envoy.

“Take care, elder.”

Chu Feng understood where the Godwish Grandmother was coming from, so he didn’t say anything about that. He turned his sights toward Shengguang Baimei, and the latter immediately caught his drift. Without any hesitation, he wrapped Chu Feng and Daoist Niantian in his martial power and began rushing off.

The Lady of Dao Sea quickly followed them.

She still remembered the mission the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect’s sectmaster had entrusted to her, so she chose to leave with Chu Feng instead of staying behind with the Godwish Grandmother.

Even as Chu Feng and the others left, they couldn’t help but sneak glances backward with worried looks on their faces. The clash between the Netherworld Envoy and the little girl was simply too intense.

Despite Shengguang Baimei’s swift movement speed—the surroundings were literally zipping past them—the massive congregations of gaseous flames and martial power remained well within sight.

Most likely, the gaseous flames and martial power would remain visible no matter where they escaped to in this Ordinary Realm. That was how huge they were.

“So this is the strength of a Half-God. I never thought that I would encounter experts of such caliber in the Eastern Region. Sh\*t! I feel like utter trash before them,” Shengguang Baimei cursed under his breath as he continued rushing toward the teleportation formation.

He was both awed and fearful of the prowess displayed by the Half-Gods. It was the same for the others too.

On the other hand, Chu Feng was feeling apologetic. He wasn't close with the little girl, but the latter had only come out of her hiding in order to protect him. Yet, he was turning his back on her right now, abandoning her.

While he was powerless to do anything, he still felt deeply guilt-ridden about it.

Weng!

All of a sudden, the scenery that was still zipping them by a moment ago came to a halt. To be more exact, it was Shengguang Baimei who had stopped moving.

A force was holding him in place.

"Where do you think you're going?" a voice echoed ahead of them.

Chu Feng and the others looked forward and immediately realized that the situation had turned awry.

The person who was blocking their path was none other than the Netherworld Envoy. The little girl was lying unconscious over his shoulders with blood trailing from her lips.

It was clear who the victor of the battle was.

As powerful as the little girl was, she wasn't a match for the Netherworld Envoy. This sight left Chu Feng feeling even more conscience-stricken.

The little girl must have chosen to hide because she knew that she wasn't a match for the Netherworld Envoy. She could have made her escape after the formation sealing off the entire Ordinary Realm was lifted, but she ended up getting captured in a bid to save Chu Feng.

"I'll accept anything you wish to do to me, but can you let her off?" Chu Feng asked.

"Child, you don't have any say over this matter. Besides, this is good news for the two of you. You'll have a chance to join our Netherworld Sect, and you'll thank me for that in the future," the Netherworld Envoy replied.

He whipped out his dagger and began approaching Chu Feng.



“I am Shengguang Baimei from the Holy Valley. Young friend Chu Feng is the benefactor of our Holy Valley. If you dare to hurt him, our Holy Monarch will hunt you down and kill you!” Shengguang Baimei uttered threats.

However, the Netherworld Envoy turned a deaf ear to those words and walked right past Shengguang Baimei. Using the dagger, he slit an incision in Chu Feng’s forehead.

This time, there was no one else who could step in to save him. Chu Feng could only watch helplessly as everything happened.

He could clearly feel something opening up his forehead, but the mysterious dagger inhibited his sense of pain.

Following that, the Netherworld Envoy took out the Netherworld Embryo and inserted it into his head. To be more exact, it was inserted into his soul.

A bizarre power emanated from the Netherworld Embryo, threatening to devour Chu Feng’s entire soul. However, the bizarre power soon started receding before vanishing altogether. Fortunately, there was no other side effect other than that.

Meanwhile, the Netherworld Envoy erased Chu Feng’s wound with a wave of his hand. He continued to stare at Chu Feng intently, seemingly worried that he would suffer a backlash.

*Chapter 5007: Entering the Northern Region*

Not too long later, the Godwish Grandmother came rushing over with the unconscious Song Yun. When she saw the worried looks on the faces all around, she realized what had happened.

“Milord, y-you really planted the Netherworld Embryo in my junior’s body?”

The Godwish Grandmother cursed herself for arriving late, but she wouldn’t have been able to stop the Netherworld Envoy even if she was present.

“Don’t worry. Look, he isn’t suffering from any side effects at all. That’s the guidance of the Divine Vat. Those chosen by the Divine Vat are bound to be extraordinary. I am truly fortunate,” the Netherworld Envoy spoke with a smile.

He was also delighted to see that Chu Feng wasn’t suffering from any backlash.

"Today truly is a lucky day! Godwish Grandmother, this is all your credit. I'll generously reward you for your contribution to our Netherworld Sect. It's just that I have to bring them back to the Netherworld Sect as soon as possible, so I'll have to bid farewell right now," the Netherworld Envoy said.

"Milord, are you intending to bring Chu Feng back to the Netherworld Sect as well?" the Godwish Grandmother asked.

"Of course," the Netherworld Envoy replied.

"Milord, please bring me with you. Chu Feng is my junior. I've promised my master that I'll accompany him and ensure his safety," the Godwish Grandmother said. *nove-ℒb/In*

"Do you think that anyone will be able to hurt him under my watch? Rest assured! Be it Chu Feng or Song Yun, they'll be completely different people when you meet them once more," the Netherworld Envoy said.

He bound Chu Feng with his martial power, and Song Yun also started levitating away from the Godwish Grandmother's arms to float over to his side. He was really planning on taking them away with him.

"Wait a moment!" Chu Feng anxiously spoke up.

"Child, you should hurry up and finish up whatever you wish to say to them. Time is tight on our hand," the Netherworld Envoy said.

"I have unsettled business to attend to. I'm willing to follow you to the Netherworld Sect, but would you allow me to stay here for a few more days to finish my affairs? It isn't my intention to stall your time, but a life is at stake here," Chu Feng said.

"What does other people's life have to do with you? If there's nothing else, we'll set off right now."

The Netherworld Envoy turned a blind eye to Chu Feng's words. The next moment, Chu Feng, Song Yun, and the little girl vanished into thin air.

"Damn it! I said that we shouldn't have come here, but you just had to insisted on it. You did manage to save your daughter in the end, but young hero Chu Feng got done in because of you! Your master told you to protect your junior,

not to sabotage him!” Shengguang Baimei furiously bellowed at the Godwish Grandmother.

If not for the Godwish Grandmother insisted on coming over, Chu Feng wouldn't have encountered all this trouble.

“What's done is done. There's no point blaming me now. Besides, I don't think the Netherworld Envoy will hurt Chu Feng. If the Netherworld Sect is as evil as the rumors put them out to be, we wouldn't have been standing here safe and sound right now,” the Lady of Dao Sea said.

“Lord Baimei, calm down. This isn't necessarily a bad thing to young friend Chu Feng,” Daoist Niantian also spoke up.

“He might not have harmed us today, but it doesn't change the fact that the Netherworld Sect has caused the death of many innocent children. It is clearly an unorthodox sect. How could anything good come from going to a place like that?” Shengguang Baimei exclaimed indignantly.

“So what if it's an unorthodox sect? My daughter was saved because of that unorthodox sect! I don't think that your Holy Light Clan has the right to be pointing fingers at others. Don't you think that your clan has a huge part to play in the decline of the Holy Light Galaxy? Hah, the number of talents who have died in the hands of your clan might just number more than that of the Netherworld Sect!” the Godwish Grandmother bellowed.

“How dare you insult our Holy Light Clan? Are you courting death?”

Shengguang Baimei glared at the Godwish Grandmother with murderous eyes.

“You want a fight? Try it then. I don't plan on tolerating your nonsense just because you're Junior Chu Feng's friend!” the Godwish Grandmother snapped.

Her rank nine Martial Exalted level cultivation began flowing out, exerting immense pressure on Shengguang Baimei.

Shengguang Baimei was so infuriated that veins were popping on his neck, but he dared not to make a move. He knew that he wasn't the Godwish Grandmother's match.

“It could spell an opportunity for Junior Chu Feng too if the Netherworld Sect could provide him with fortuitous encounters and resources to advance his cultivation. That being said, I won’t deny that I have made a lapse in judgment today, and I’ll take full responsibility for it. However, the only ones who are qualified to blame me are Junior Chu Feng and my master. As for you, don’t even think that I’ll tolerate your nonsense!”

After saying her piece, the Godwish Grandmother turned to the Lady of Dao Sea and said, “Junior Chu Feng might be gone, but we still have to accomplish his wish for him. Let’s go and find Yin Ren.”

The two of them rose into the sky and began heading off.

Shengguang Baimei was still feeling deeply frustrated, but he eventually chose to tag along.

...

Meanwhile, Chu Feng had been forcibly taken away by the Netherworld Envoy. He tried negotiating with the Netherworld Envoy along the way, but the latter turned a blind eye to him.

The Netherworld Envoy had a black boat that traveled an incredible speed in ancient teleportation formations, faster than any treasure Chu Feng possessed. That greatly shortened the length of their journey.

As a result, Chu Feng could only watch helplessly as he was taken out of the Eastern Region.

The Netherworld Sect was moving too swiftly. He didn’t just travel in a straight path; he would alternate among various ancient teleportation formations, constantly changing his route. It was likely that he knew of some kind of detour to maximize their traveling speed.

Soon, they stepped foot into the Northern Region of the vast world of cultivation, the Totem Galaxy.

The atmosphere of the Totem Galaxy was very different from what Chu Feng was used to. The cultivators of Totem Galaxy were, on average, stronger than those in the Nine Souls Galaxy, let alone the Holy Light Galaxy. However, the gap in cultivation wasn’t just the result of a difference in talent.

Chu Feng could feel that the energies in the surroundings were much more condensed than that of the Nine Souls Galaxy and the Holy Light Galaxy, and they were much easier to absorb too. There was also martial comprehension weaved into them that could be easily grasped.

These were important resources for cultivators to achieve breakthroughs.

To use an analogy, a child who grew up eating only greens was bound to be weaker than a child who grew up eating meat. It was the difference in their surroundings that gave rise to such a massive difference in their abilities as cultivators.

Along the way, Song Yun and the little girl remained unconscious, so the Netherworld Envoy chose to put them into his formation. Chu Feng was curious about the little girl's enigmatic background, so he wanted to find an opportunity to talk to her. It was unfortunate that the latter was unconscious all this while, so he could only patiently wait for an opportunity.

"Is the Netherworld Sect located in the Totem Galaxy?" Chu Feng suddenly asked the Netherworld Envoy.

He was curious because they had spent most of their time traveling through teleportation formations. Even when they exited from a teleportation formation, they would swiftly rush into the next one.

However, the Netherworld Envoy suddenly moved in a peculiar direction after leaving the previous teleportation formation. He led them into a vast forest, where they would stumble upon other cultivators from time to time. Instead of rushing on, he began scanning their surroundings intently, seemingly searching for something.

For that reason, Chu Feng thought that they might have arrived at their destination. Otherwise, it would mean that the Netherworld Envoy had something he was intending to do here.

"Our destination isn't the Totem Galaxy. I only stopped here to see if I can procure a delicacy from the Totem Galaxy," the Netherworld Envoy said.

"Delicacy? What kind of delicacy?"

Chu Feng's interest was piqued.

The Netherworld Envoy was in such a rush to return to the Netherworld Sect, but he actually took a detour in order to seek out this delicacy. It was likely that there was something more to this delicacy.

“You wouldn’t have tried it before. It’s a delicacy that even natives of the Totem Galaxy crave but are unable to get their hands on. Let’s see if luck is with us today,” the Netherworld Envoy replied secretively.

*Chapter 5008: Dragon Breath*

Even if Chu Feng wasn’t interested in the delicacy, there was nothing he could do about it. Even though he appeared to be the Netherworld Envoy’s traveling companion on the surface, the truth was that he was nothing but a prisoner.

The forest was vast beyond imagination, larger than a smaller Ordinary Realm.

Chu Feng noticed that the other cultivators in the forest were also searching aimlessly around, seemingly looking for the delicacy too.

In contrast, the Netherworld Envoy seemed to know his way around. He confidently led the way.

Soon, he stopped before the edge of a cliff.

There was an old and weathered wooden hut hanging by the cliff, but Chu Feng could tell with a glance that there was something extraordinary about the wooden hut. It seemed to possess a life of its own, grabbing tightly onto the cliff to keep itself from falling.

There was a signboard hanging in front of the wooden hut, writing ‘Dragon Breath Spring Chamber’.

“I actually found it! Chu Feng, you’re really blessed with good luck!” the Netherworld Envoy exclaimed in delight.

As he spoke, a layer of spirit power flowed out from him and cloaked his body. His red veil and robe turned blue, and the embroidered words ‘Netherworld Envoy’ vanished from sight.

“What kind of place is this for you to go to the extent of disguising yourself? Does this place not welcome members from the Netherworld Sect?” Chu Feng asked.

“The Netherworld Sect doesn’t have the best reputation out there. You should also take note not to mention my identity inside later,” the Netherworld Envoy said.

It sounded like a reminder, but Chu Feng knew that it was actually a threat.

After that, the Netherworld Envoy led Chu Feng into the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber.

The interior was larger than what the exterior let show, but it still looked old and shabby. There were quite a few people inside when they entered, and all of them had excited looks on their faces. It was as if being able to enter the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber was something worth celebrating.

“That brother over there, do you have any Dragon Spring Coins? I’m willing to exchange it with this Exalted Armament I’ve inherited from my ancestors.”

As soon as they stepped in, a white-haired elder approached them with a silver saber in hand. It was an Exalted Armament, and it looked to be of decent quality.

“I do, but I refuse.”

The Netherworld Envoy turned him down before settling down at one of the tables.

“Waiter, two bowls of Dragon Spring.”

The Netherworld Envoy slammed his hand on the table, placing twenty triangular metallic items down.

These metallic items looked ordinary at first glance, but their peculiar nature revealed itself upon careful examination. They were made out of exquisite material, and each of them was inscribed with a dragon. The dragon was able to move on the surface of the coin as if it possessed a life of its own.

It was actually a type of formation.

Soon, a waiter rushed over.

Chu Feng’s eyes widened upon seeing the waiter. He immediately noticed that there was something unusual about the waiter.

Despite looking like a human, the waiter had scales on his face and body. These scales belonged neither to that of a fish or snake; it resembled that of a dragon.

“Hold on for a moment.”

The waiter took the Dragon Spring Coins and left the area.

“Brother, why don’t you take pity on me and exchange those Dragon Spring Coins with me? I’ll throw this treasure in as well! It took me 500 years to find this Dragon Breath Spring Chamber. It wasn’t easy for me to stumble upon it today, but...”

The white-haired man from earlier on approached them with the same Exalted Armament in his grasp, but there was an additional Cosmos Sack in his hand.

“How could you fail to find ten Dragon Spring Coins within five hundred years? That only shows that you haven’t been looking hard enough, or maybe you weren’t even trying to look for it at all. It’s only sheer luck that you managed to stumble onto the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber today.

“Brother, the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber is reserved for those who are prepared. Someone who isn’t prepared is bound to be unable to enjoy the Dragon Spring. You should give up,” the Netherworld Envoy replied impatiently.

“Indeed! Those who don’t have Dragon Spring Coins aren’t qualified to enjoy the Dragon Spring. Stop embarrassing yourself here and get lost!”

“Scram! Scram!”

Those words won the approval of many in the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber. There were even some who tried to chase him off.

What was worth mentioning was that the waiter of the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber didn’t say a word at all. He didn’t try to chase off the white-haired elder even though the latter didn’t have the money to pay.

“Hmph! I don’t believe that no one would exchange their Dragon Spring Coins with me!”



The white-haired man harrumphed coldly upon facing yet another rejection, but he didn't leave the wooden hut. Instead, he returned to the entrance and waited for another group of customers to enter.

Meanwhile, Chu Feng began glancing at the other tables. He noticed that the other customers had bowls filled with water in front of them. The water seemed to harness some kind of energy, but it wasn't particularly strong.

At first glance, he couldn't discern anything special about the Dragon Spring.  
n-(0ve**l**1n

However, he did notice that the customers would reveal looks of pleasure whenever he took a sip of the Dragon Spring. It was hard to exactly describe their expressions with words; it looked almost as if they had ascended to paradise for a moment there.

"What's so special about the Dragon Spring for that person to exchange his Exalted Armament for it?" Chu Feng asked.

"We were lucky enough to stumble upon the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber. I would have told you just how special the Dragon Spring is even if you hadn't asked me."

The Netherworld Envoy began sharing the story behind the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber.

No one know who the owner of the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber was, but the person managing it was a clan member of the Dragon Breath Clan. The waiter they had met earlier on was a clan member of the Dragon Breath Clan too.

The Dragon Breath Clan were descendants of the True Dragon, inheriting the power of Dragon Breath. The Dragon Spring was none other than spring water refined using the power of Dragon Breath.

The Dragon Spring was known for its ability to strengthen one's body and enhance one's lifespan, and what truly drew people in was its delectable flavors. It was an unrivaled delicacy in the world.

It was said to bring unspeakable bliss to those who were fortunate enough to taste it.

The only problem was that it was no easy feat to prepare the Dragon Spring, and the quantity was severely limited too.

As a result, the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber, despite having ten branches, would only open for business once every year. The location it would appear at each time was also random.

Furthermore, the Dragon Spring could only be bought with Dragon Spring Coins.

In other words, anyone who sought to have a taste of the Dragon Spring would need to prepare Dragon Spring Coins beforehand and be lucky enough to stumble upon the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber.

It was just that the Dragon Spring Coins circulating outside were being sold at exorbitant prices, and there was a good chance that it might prove to be useless since finding the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber posed a huge problem as well. Few in the world would bear to spend a hefty sum to purchase Dragon Spring Coins beforehand just for an uncertain possibility.

These restrictive factors made it the Dragon Spring an incredibly elusive beverage for most cultivators.

The white-haired old man was one example. He was lucky enough to stumble upon the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber, but he failed to prepare the Dragon Spring Coins beforehand, so he couldn't order the Dragon Spring for himself.

"But you knew where the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber was," Chu Feng pointed out quizzically.

"I received guidance from an expert. It wasn't certain either. I could only say that we were lucky. This is also my first time tasting the Dragon Spring. I heard that it can make a person forget about all his troubles. Let's wait patiently. You definitely won't be disappointed."

The excitement in the Netherworld Envoy's tone made it clear that he looked forward to it.

That explained why the Netherworld Envoy had chosen to stop by this area despite being in such a rush to return to the Netherworld Sect.

*Chapter 5009: True Dragon Chessboard*

The Dragon Spring needed additional processing before it could be served, so they had to wait a while after paying. So, Chu Feng turned his sights toward a painting hanging on the wall of the wooden hut.

It was five meters in length and one meter in height, but its content was uninterpretable. There was a peculiar aesthetic to it, but it was impossible to make out anything from it.

There were a group of people gathered in front of the painting. One of them was an old man who gave off a feeling of unfathomable depth.

It wasn't just a pretense. It was the disposition that only experts who had reached a certain cultivation level would emanate.

Chu Feng guessed that the elder was a Half-God level cultivator.

Aside from the old man, the others gathered around the painting were all juniors. The tokens on their waists showed that they were from Heavenwind Sword Sect.

From their interactions with the painting, Chu Feng learned that the painting could be dissected and moved around. Those juniors were discussing intensely with each other while moving the painting around, trying to make out something meaningful from it.

There were four words written above the painting—True Dragon Chessboard.

“True Dragon Chessboard? Why is it called a chessboard when it's a painting?” Chu Feng murmured in confusion.

It might appear that way to you, but that's actually a chess puzzle. It's said that there's a chess puzzle in every Dragon Breath Spring Chamber, and anyone who successfully deciphers it will receive a Dragon Breath Token. It's just that no one has deciphered the chess puzzle to date,” the Netherworld Envoy said.

“What use does the Dragon Breath Token have?” Chu Feng asked.

“I don't know either,” the Netherworld Envoy replied.

Nevertheless, Chu Feng began examining the chess puzzle intently, even resorting to his Heaven's Eye for it. Under the scrutiny of Heaven's Eye, the chess puzzle began taking on a different appearance.

Its jumbled appearance began reshaping to reveal another form.

Chu Feng got a feeling that it was originally a complete painting, but it was sliced into many parts and jumbled up. Nevertheless, a world spiritist like Chu Feng could figure out how to reassemble it with just a single glance.

The painting would depict a domineering massive dragon in its complete form. That would explain why it was called the True Dragon Chessboard.

"Would the chessboard be considered deciphered if I could put it together to form a complete image?" Chu Feng asked.

"Indeed. Young master, are you interested in giving it a try?" one of the waiters asked.

The waiter actively encouraged the customers present to attempt deciphering the chessboard.

"Is it that simple?" Chu Feng asked.

It was far too easy for him to reassemble the True Dragon Chessboard with the help of Heaven's Eye, to the extent that Chu Feng thought that it was unrealistic.

"Simple? What nonsense is that fellow saying?"

Innumerable eyes turned toward Chu Feng before snorting in disdain. In particular, the juniors from the Heavenwind Sword Sect gathered in front of the True Dragon Chessboard spoke awfully repulsive words.

Even the waiter who had encouraged Chu Feng to give it a try broke out in a smile.

"Customer, it's true that all you have to do is to piece the True Dragon Chessboard together into a complete picture, but it is no easy feat to pull that off. Rumor has it that the complete painting depicts an imposing true dragon, but are you able to see any traces of the true dragon on the chessboard right

now? If not, how do you intend to piece the painting together?” the waiter teased.

Chu Feng couldn't help but wonder if there was something deeper to the True Dragon Chessboard because it was simply too easy for him to piece the painting together with his Heaven's Eye.

One must know that he was in the Totem Galaxy right now! In fact, there were already quite a few experts gathered in this Dragon Breath Spring Chamber.

It was hard to believe that they couldn't see through the chessboard when Chu Feng could do it so easily. That made him wonder if there was something deeper to the painting that he was missing out on here.

“Elder, are you able to discern anything from the True Dragon Chessboard?” Chu Feng asked the Netherworld Envoy.

While Chu Feng harbored deep hostility toward the Netherworld Envoy at the very start, he soon realized through their interactions that even though the Netherworld Envoy was an obstinate man fixated on his ideals, he wasn't someone who easily took the lives of others.

Furthermore, the Netherworld Envoy had been rather respectful to him thus far, so Chu Feng eventually chose to return the respect and address the other party as 'elder' too.

“I'm afraid not. Chu Feng, did you notice something?” the Netherworld Envoy asked.

“You can't see the dragon on the painting?” Chu Feng asked.

“Dragon? This young master over here, you're able to see a dragon?”

A lady from the Heavenwind Sword Sect immediately turned around and asked Chu Feng.

This lady wasn't particularly beautiful, but she carried an air of valiance. From their conversation, Chu Feng could tell that the lady possessed considerable standing amongst the juniors of the Heavenwind Sword Sect.

She appeared to be truly interested in the True Dragon Chessboard. In fact, the other juniors were only attempting to decipher the chessboard due to her interest in it.

That was why she turned around and asked Chu Feng about it upon hearing his words.

However, before Chu Feng could answer, a pale-faced man next to her sneered, "Junior, can't you tell that he's a braggart? Just look at him! He's obviously someone who lacks capability! There are many scammers like him out there in the world. You can't be so trusting of them!"

The lady thought that those words made sense, so she turned around and continued studying the True Dragon Chessboard.

At the same time, a voice transmission arrived into Chu Feng's ears.

"Brat, stop showing off! Are you trying to catch my junior's attention? You better drop that idea, or else I'll purge your sect!"

Needless to say, the threatening voice transmission came from the pale-faced man.

Chu Feng was no pushover either. He wouldn't tolerate others blatantly threatening him like that. Thus, he stood up and said, "I'm only voicing out my opinion. Yet, you're threatening to purge my sect just because your junior asked me a question? Hah! Are you planning to massacre everyone who speaks even a single word to your junior?"

Chu Feng's words were spoken out loud, and they immediately caught everyone's attention.

The pale-faced man also didn't expect Chu Feng to confront him straight on, and it left him flustered.

"What nonsense are you spouting? Is there something wrong with your head?!" he bellowed.

The pale-faced man wouldn't admit to secretly threatening Chu Feng.

“Hah! I thought that you must be pretty formidable to dare talk about purging my sect, but it turns out that you’re just another coward who dares not to own up to his own words,” Chu Feng sighed.

“Who are you saying is a coward? You’re asking to be crippled!”

That man flew into a state of rage. He released his oppressive might, revealing his rank five Martial Exalted level cultivation.

“Customers, the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber is not a place to cause trouble. If you continue disturbing the other guests, we’ll have no choice but to evict you from the premises,” one of the waiters spoke up.

Chu Feng could sense an aura that surpassed Martial Exalted level from the waiter.

Despite the waiter’s unassuming appearance, it turned out that he was actually a formidable expert.

“Chu Feng, forget it. We’re here to taste the Dragon Spring, not to cause trouble,” the Netherworld Envoy said as he pulled Chu Feng back onto his seat.

“Don’t disturb others.”

At the same time, the unfathomable elder from the Heavenwind Sword Sect also spoke up.

The pale-faced man held his tongue, but he shot Chu Feng a threatening glare before turning away. It was an indication that he wasn’t planning to let things rest just like that.

As displeased as Chu Feng was, he could tell that it would be unwise to come to blows in the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber, so he could only let things rest for the time being.

“Customers, there’s no need to lose your temper. Here, have a taste of our Dragon Spring.”

The waiter who took their Dragon Spring Coins earlier soon returned with two bowls of Dragon Spring.

## **Martial God Asura #Chapter 5010: Dirty Father and Son - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 5010: Dirty Father and Son**

*Chapter 5010: Dirty Father and Son*

Chu Feng quickly picked up the bowl of Dragon Spring and took a small sip.

As soon as the Dragon Spring flowed into his mouth, he realized why cultivators would go to the extent of offering Exalted Armaments for a mere consumable. While it wasn't of much help to one's cultivation, the Dragon Spring had an invigorating effect that left one feeling cleansed.

Even Chu Feng's anger had died down the moment he ingested the Dragon Spring.

He took another two more mouthfuls, and a wave of comfort and relaxation washed over his body. It had been a long time since he had felt this way. Even his troubles seemed to vanish at this very moment.

"Father, look! The Dragon Spring looks tasty!"

Chu Feng was immersing himself in the sensations washing over his body when he was suddenly dragged back into the present by a boyish voice. He glanced over and saw two individuals walking into the premises.

It was a middle-aged man and a little boy.

The middle-aged man had a burly appearance, especially with the stubble he had on his face. He wore clothes that made one wonder if he had picked up a random rucksack off the street and fastened it around himself with a piece of rope to serve as makeshift clothes. He also wasn't wearing any shoes, revealing a pair of pitch-black feet stained with grime.

He carried an ax behind him that didn't look like a weapon at all, let alone an Exalted Armament. It looked like an ordinary ax intended for chopping wood.

The little boy that was with him appeared to be around ten years of age, and he was covered in dirt too. He could hardly be said to be good looking, but his innocent eyes and honest appearance made him rather adorable.



“Ahem! That young hero over there... Erm, I have a request to make. Could you let my son have a taste of the Dragon Spring? Just a bit would do. It'll be perfectly fine if you're unwilling too. I know that it's a brash request for me to make all of a sudden,” the middle-aged man asked Chu Feng in embarrassment.

He even dared not to look straight at Chu Feng, as if fearing the latter would berate him.

Chu Feng could tell that the middle-aged man wasn't a thick-skinned person, but he still bore with the shame and made this inappropriate request for the sake of his son. It reminded him of his own father and godfather.

So, he formed a bowl using his spirit power, intending to share some of his Dragon Spring with the little boy.

Shoosh!

A hand suddenly swiped in and snatched Chu Feng's bowl of Dragon Spring over. It was the Netherworld Envoy.

“Those who fail to prepare aren't qualified to taste the Dragon Spring. To even consider offering the Dragon Spring to a person like that, Chu Feng, you have also lost your rights to enjoy the Dragon Spring,” the Netherworld Envoy said.

Without any hesitation, he downed Chu Feng's bowl of Dragon Spring.

“Heh... Feigning a good person? Look at where it landed you. You even lost your own portion. Have some self-awareness!”

The pale-faced man from the Heavenwind Sword Sect must have been keeping an eye on Chu Feng all this while, for he let out a sneer right away.

Feeling conscience-stricken, the middle-aged man apologized, “My apologies, young hero. I've implicated you.”

“I'm sorry, big brother.”

Even the little boy also obediently apologized to Chu Feng.

“This has nothing to do with you. If you really wish to have a taste of the Dragon Spring, I'll think of a solution. Give me a moment,” Chu Feng said.

Upon hearing those words, the pale-faced man from the Heavenwind Sword Sect didn't hesitate to mock him, "You'll think of a solution? Are you going to learn from that old man and trade your Exalted Armament for Dragon Spring Coins? Or are you going to be thick-skinned like those two poor things and beg others?"

Chu Feng couldn't be bothered to waste his time bickering with that man. He rose to his feet and walked toward the crowd from the Heavenwind Sword Sect.

The crowd thought that Chu Feng was going to cause trouble, so they eyed him with hostile faces. Some of them even reached for their swords.

"This young lady over here, do you have extra Dragon Spring Coins?"

Unexpectedly, Chu Feng ignored that pale-faced man and instead approached the valiant lady.

"I do, but I have no intention of trading it with you. I agree with your elder. Those who have come unprepared aren't qualified to enjoy the Dragon Spring," the lady replied.

"I'd like to propose a bet," Chu Feng said.

"I don't bet with others."

The lady turned her head away, indicating her reluctance to continue speaking with Chu Feng. She hadn't thought that Chu Feng would propose a bet, and she abhorred such practices. Due to that, her tone even sounded a little annoyed.

"I'd like to make a bet with you that I'm able to decipher this True Dragon Chessboard," Chu Feng said.

"What did you say?"

The woman looked at Chu Feng in bewilderment, not expecting the bet proposed by Chu Feng to be related to the True Dragon Chessboard.

"If I'm able to decipher this True Dragon Chessboard, all you have to do is to give me twenty Dragon Spring Coins," Chu Feng replied.

“Whether you’re able to decipher the True Dragon Chessboard or not has nothing to do with me. I have no reason to make this bet with you.”

The woman was intrigued, but she chose to turn down Chu Feng’s proposal.

“Brat, are you really going to bet on that?”

However, it piqued the pale-faced man’s interest.

“Do you have Dragon Spring Coins?” Chu Feng asked.

“I have plenty of that,” the pale-faced man boasted.

He reached into his Cosmos Sack and took out twenty Dragon Spring Coins.

“If you’re really able to decipher the True Dragon Chessboard, I’ll give all of this to you. However, if you aren’t able to do so, you’ll have to sever your own tongue. What do you say?” the pale-faced man asked.

“Very well, let’s go with that. Everyone here shall bear witness to our bet, so I hope that you won’t renege on your promise,” Chu Feng said.

“I, Li Han, do not break my promise. Rather, I’m more concerned that you won’t hold the end of your promise,” the pale-faced man said.

“Li Han?”

“He’s Li Han?”

“Isn’t that the name of the number one junior of the Heavenwind Sword Sect?”

Some discussion broke out in the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber after the pale-faced man gave out his name. Li Han revealed a look of glee upon seeing how well-known his name was, and that made him even more confident.

“Why aren’t you saying anything? Are you getting afraid now? I can’t blame you for that. How could someone of your caliber possibly be able to decipher the True Dragon Chessboard?” Li Han scoffed.

“Haven’t I already accepted your bet? I am not one to back down from a bet. Please make way. I’m going to decipher the chessboard right now.”

Chu Feng walked right past the juniors of the Heavenwind Sword Sect, who looked at him with contemptuous eyes. None of the juniors of the Heavenwind Sword Sect believed that Chu Feng was capable of deciphering the True Dragon Chessboard. They were just waiting for Chu Feng to make a fool of himself.

The others in the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber began paying attention to the commotion, including the waiter. Of course, none of them had much confidence in Chu Feng either.

Shoosh shoosh shoosh!

Chu Feng began to move the True Dragon Chessboard. Within moments, the vague silhouette of a dragon started to show through the seemingly nonsensical painting. With each rearrangement, the dragon grew clearer and clearer.

It didn't take long for the painting to be completed, revealing a majestic dragon.

"It has been deciphered! He was able to do it in such a short period of time!"

Exclamations of incredulity echoed throughout the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber. The crowd was baffled by what they had just witnessed.

"Impossible! How could you have possibly deciphered the True Dragon Chessboard? You must be resorting to trickery!"

However, Li Han refused to acknowledge that Chu Feng had really deciphered the True Dragon Chessboard. He insisted that Chu Feng was resorting to trickery.

"Trickery? He'd be really despicable if that's the case."

"Someone like that ought to be punished!"

Li Han's words won the approval of the crowd. Many of them thought that if the True Dragon Chessboard were to be solved one day, it would be in the hands of a formidable cultivator. However, Chu Feng clearly didn't fit the criteria.

In the first place, it didn't make sense for a nobody to be able to decipher the chessboard so easily when so many experts had failed before him. That lent credence to Li Han's assertion that Chu Feng had used some kind of trick here.

Awooo!

A dragon's howl suddenly echoed from the True Dragon Chessboard, and the majestic dragon soared out of the painting. It first circled around Chu Feng before turning into a whiff of smoke that converged at Chu Feng's hand.

When the smoke finally dissipated, the crowd saw a token sitting on Chu Feng's hand. It was clear with a glance that the token was no ordinary object.

"Trickery? Why don't you have a good look at my token and tell me whether it's trickery or not?" Chu Feng asked Li Han with a sneer.

*Chapter 5011: Chu Guyu*

"Is that... the Dragon Breath Token?"

The crowd gathered around Chu Feng to take a better look at the token in his hands. The two characters inscribed on the token, 'Dragon Breath', were sufficient to verify its origin.

Even the waiters of the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber had come over to verify the situation too. They carefully inspected the True Dragon Chessboard, trying to discern whether Chu Feng had really deciphered it or not.

"Customer, it looks like you... really managed to decipher the True Dragon Chessboard."

Soon, they turned to look at Chu Feng with eyes filled with respect.

Clearly, they had already come to an answer.

"In other words, I'm not playing any tricks here, right?" Chu Feng asked.

"Of course not. You have deciphered the True Dragon Chessboard for real. Young master, you're truly formidable. You're the only person in so many years to have deciphered the True Dragon Chessboard!" one of the waiters exclaimed.

His voice was filled with admiration.

“How is it? Are you going to admit your loss?” Chu Feng asked Li Han.

“I...”

There was an awful look on Li Han’s face, almost as if someone had stuffed feces into his mouth. If there was a hole in the ground right now, he would leap in without a moment’s hesitation.

It was simply too embarrassing.

“What’s with that expression on Li Han’s face? Is he going to renege on his promise?”

“Admit your loss and fulfill the end of your bet!”

“This young master over here has already proven his capabilities.”

The spectators started to speak up on Chu Feng’s behalf. Despite looking down on Chu Feng just a moment ago, they had changed their tunes and were now pointing their fingers at Li Han.

“Hmph! I, Li Han, am a man of my words. Take it!”

Indignance could be heard through Li Han’s words, but he couldn’t break his promise in a public like this. That would have sullied the Heavenwind Sword Sect’s reputation. Thus, he handed the twenty Dragon Spring Coins to Chu Feng.

“Please bring me two bowls of Dragon Spring,” Chu Feng said as he passed the twenty Dragon Spring Coins to one of the waiters.

“Bring me a bowl too,” the valiant woman from the Heavenwind Sword Sect said.

“Alright! Coming right up!”

This time, the waiter brought the two bowls of Dragon Spring up much faster than before. It could be because Chu Feng had proven himself, raising their opinions of him.

“You can drink your fill now,” Chu Feng said as he passed the two bowls of Dragon Spring to the father and son.

“Young hero, t-this won’t do. It’ll do for us to just have a sip of it. I can’t accept such a precious gift from you,” the middle-aged man said in embarrassment.

“Big brother, I don’t need so much.”

The little boy also vehemently shook his head even though he gulped down a mouthful of saliva.

“There’s no need to stand on ceremony. I’m doing this of my own volition. I can tell you’re a good father who cares deeply for your son. I just feel like helping you here,” Chu Feng replied earnestly.

Chu Feng didn’t think that he was an evil person, but neither did he think that he was a hero whose mission was to save the world. He cultivated for the sake of protecting his family and friends, not to bring salvation to the world.

He did do good deeds from time to time, but that was not out of obligation but simply because he felt like doing so.

That father and son had managed to move Chu Feng’s heart, and that was why he was willing to go this far for them.

“Young hero, kind people like you will be rewarded!”

The middle-aged man accepted the two bowls of Dragon Spring and began enjoying it with his son.

Just then, someone passed a bowl of Dragon Spring to Chu Feng.

“Don’t mistreat yourself in the midst of helping others. It’s not easy to stumble upon the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber. Have your own fill too.”

It was the valiant woman from the Heavenwind Sword Sect. It turned out that the bowl of Dragon Spring she had ordered earlier was intended for Chu Feng.

“I am Chu Guyu from the Heavenwind Sword Sect. I apologize for my fellow sect member’s offense, and I hope that you’ll be magnanimous enough to forgive us with this bowl of Dragon Spring.”

She offered the bowl of Dragon Spring with both hands, even bowing slightly as she spoke. Her attitude was much better than before.

“Chu Guyu? She’s the granddaughter of the Heavenwind Sword Sect’s sectmaster?”

“I heard that Chu Guyu possesses talent greater than that of Li Han, and it’s only a matter of time before she surpasses him as the number of disciples.”

“This is my first time seeing her. I heard that she rarely leaves the Heavenwind Sword Sect, so hardly anyone has seen her face before.” n/-  
0vEIBIn

“I didn’t think that she would be such a dignified woman. Truly extraordinary.”

Discussions could be heard echoing in the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber after the woman introduced herself. This explained why the younger disciples, including Li Han, were fawning on her.

It turned out that she was a person who possessed both strength and background. It would be weird if she wasn’t fawned on by those around her.

“You’re Chu Guyu?”

However, what Chu Feng was more interested in was the woman’s name.

“What’s wrong?” Chu Guyu asked in bewilderment.

“Your name sounds endearing,” Chu Feng replied with a smile.

His big brother in the Chu clan also went by the name of Chu Guyu. Even though he knew that they were just homonyms, he still felt a lot of goodwill toward her over the name. That was how much he treasured that older brother of his.

Chu Feng had been oppressed in his younger years in the Chu clan. If not for his godfather and Chu Guyu, things would have been much harder for him.

“Endearing? You sure know how to utter nonsense. I never knew that a person could find a name endearing. If I have to say, aren’t you just finding a pretext to get close to my junior?” Li Han sneered.

Chu Feng chuckled in response, knowing that Li Han was just envious.



“Miss Chu, I am Chu Feng. Fate has brought us together today. Since this bowl of Dragon Spring contains your sincerity, I’ll humbly accept your token of goodwill.”

Chu Feng took the bowl of Dragon Spring and gulped it down in a single mouthful. It felt even more refreshing than the first time he drank it.

If it was possible, he would have willingly traded his Exalted Armaments for another bowl of Dragon Spring. The taste was definitely worth the price.

“Young master Chu Feng, I’m impressed by how you were able to decipher the True Dragon Chessboard with ease. You must be the disciple of a renowned expert. May I know which sect are you from?” Chu Guyu asked.

If she was only interested in the True Dragon Chessboard previously, she was now interested in Chu Feng as a person.

“I’m not from here,” Chu Feng replied.

His words indicated his reluctance to reveal his personal details.

“Is young master Chu Feng a foreigner? If so, our Heavenwind Sword Sect ought to play the role of a host and invite you over,” Chu Guyu said.

“I’m afraid it’s not convenient at the moment. Let’s do that another day.”

He knew that even if he wanted to go, the Netherworld Envoy wouldn’t agree to it.

“Feel free to visit us whenever you wish, young master Chu Feng. Our Heavenwind Sword Sect will welcome you.”

The woman passed a token to Chu Feng. It was an honorary guest invitation token.

“Thank you.”

Chu Feng accepted the token from her.

It was unlikely that he would visit the Heavenwind Sword Sect, but it wouldn’t be good for him to refuse the other party’s goodwill.

*Chapter 5012: Blocking the Path*

“Young master Chu Feng, we still have matters to attend to so we’ll take our leave first. I hope to meet you once more in the future,” Chu Guyu said.

Her words left the disciples of the Heavenwind Sword Sect feeling conflicted even though they were aware that there was something special about Chu Feng. This was especially so for the number one disciple, Li Han. He didn’t feel well seeing the person he fancied treating Chu Feng so amicably.

He gnashed his teeth, and his face distorted from anger.

Chu Guyu left afterward, but not before bidding Chu Feng farewell and greeting the Netherworld Envoy. She must have thought that given how formidable Chu Feng was, the elder accompanying him must be someone extraordinary too.

Little did Chu Guyu know that Chu Feng was undergoing an internal struggle. He was tempted to borrow the strength of the Heavenwind Sword Sect to deal with the Netherworld Envoy.

While he didn’t think that the Netherworld Envoy was a thoroughly evil person, he didn’t want to go to the Netherworld Sect just yet. He wanted to save Xian Miaomiao first.

It was just that he didn’t think that the Heavenwind Sword Sect would do him this favor, considering that it was only their first meeting. If he failed, the Netherworld Envoy might just get more guarded against him.

That would make things much harder for Chu Feng in the future.

While he was still conflicted between his options, Chu Guyu and the others from the Heavenwind Sword Sect left the premises.

With that, Chu Feng’s opportunity was gone.

There were quite a few people who approached Chu Feng, hoping to get on good terms with him as well as to find out his background. It was just that these people were not strong enough to help him.

Not to mention, most of them simply sided with whichever side was advantageous to them. This was evident from how they acted earlier.

Chu Feng didn't think that he could count on such people, so he simply politely responded to them, not bothering to engage them in a conversation.

"Young hero, we'll be leaving now. You're a good person. Kindness begets kindness."

"That's right, big brother. You'll be rewarded for your kindness!"

Soon, the father and son who finished their Dragon Spring walked up to Chu Feng and bade their farewell.

"Little brother, you have a good father. You must be filial to him in the future," Chu Feng said with a smile.

"I will," the little boy promised with a bright smile.

The father and son left afterward.

Chu Feng watched their departing silhouette. Even though the two of them were dressed shabbily, he could feel a deep kinship between them.

He returned to his seat afterward, only to see that the two bowls of Dragon Spring had been emptied. The Netherworld Envoy was staring at him.

"Should we leave since we're done drinking?" Chu Feng asked.

The Netherworld Envoy ignored Chu Feng and instead beckoned the waiter over.

"Two more bowls of Dragon Spring."

He smacked another twenty Dragon Spring Coins on the table.

When another two bowls of Dragon Spring were served to them, the Netherworld Envoy pushed one of them toward Chu Feng and said, "I've really underestimated you. It looks like the True Dragon Chessboard doesn't pose a challenge to you at all. Can I have a look at the Dragon Breath Token?"

It was apparent that the Netherworld Envoy had a much higher view of Chu Feng as well after the latter deciphered the True Dragon Chessboard.

"If you like it, you can have it."

Chu Feng passed the Dragon Breath Token to the Netherworld Envoy.

“You’re giving it to me? There must be conditions behind it, right?”

The Netherworld Envoy examined the Dragon Breath Token as a wily smile crept onto his lips.

“Elder, I promise you that I’ll accompany you back to the Netherworld Sect. It’s just that my friend is in trouble. I can’t turn a blind eye to her plight. Please allow me to return to resolve my affairs. I’ll willingly come with you afterward.”

Chu Feng didn’t want to cause a commotion, so he spoke those words via voice transmission.

“This token doesn’t look like anything much, but it is made out of special material. Still, there isn’t anything particularly special about it. I reckon it’s just a memento. You may keep it.”

The Netherworld Envoy passed the token back to Chu Feng, not answering the latter’s question. His intent was already made clear. He opposed Chu Feng’s decision to remain in the Nine Souls Galaxy.

Chu Feng felt frustrated by his response, so he decided to ignore the Netherworld Envoy. Nevertheless, he still picked up the bowl of Dragon Spring and began drinking it. He had no intention of wasting good stuff like that.

“Alright, it has been a fruitful trip, but it’s time for us to continue on our journey.”

The Netherworld Envoy stretched his back lazily before leaving together with Chu Feng.

Nothing much happened along the way, but the Netherworld Envoy suddenly halted his footsteps. He glanced at the surroundings and spoke aloud, “You have been following us for a while now. What are your intentions?”

Shoosh shoosh shoosh!

Many figures darted out from the shadows to appear before Chu Feng and the Netherworld Envoy. They were all from the Heavenwind Sword Sect, and one of them was Li Han.

Not all of them were in the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber earlier, especially the black-haired elder with a vicious face standing beside Li Han. Nevertheless, the black-haired elder gave off an extremely powerful aura.

He was a Half-God level cultivator!

This was not the first time Chu Feng was feeling the aura of a Half-God level cultivator, but he was still awed by how powerful Half-God level cultivators were. Those were experts who could easily obliterate him.

“What do you mean by this?” the Netherworld Envoy asked.

“What do I mean by this? Haven’t you seen what happened in the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber earlier? Did you really think that you can take possession of our Heavenwind Sword Sect so easily?” Li Han asked.

“Isn’t it just twenty Dragon Spring Coins? I have two Exalted Armaments here. I’ll give them to you as compensation.”

The Netherworld Envoy took out two Exalted Armaments and tossed them to Li Han. However, someone stopped them halfway through their trajectory. It was Chu Feng.

“I won those two bowls of Dragon Spring with my own capabilities. There’s no reason to give that to them,” Chu Feng said.

“Hoh! It looks like you have quite the backbone. Let’s see if you can keep it up with your bravado. Chu Feng, I’ll turn a blind eye to the trickery you used earlier if you have a 1-on-1 spar with me. If you’re able to defeat me, I’ll let you go and even apologize to you. However, if you aren’t able to defeat me, you’ll have to apologize to me,” Li Han said.

*Chapter 5013: An Opportunity*

“Trickery? Even those from the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber have acknowledged that I have deciphered the True Dragon Chessboard, but you still continue to claim that I have resorted to trickery? Is this how the sect members of the Heavenwind Sword Sect conduct themselves? It looks like there’s no point keeping this token anymore.”

Chu Feng threw the token he had just received from Chu Guyu onto the floor.

“Hmph! That little show of yours can only deceive that naive junior of mine. Chu Feng, I won’t take advantage of me. Tell me what’s your cultivation level and I’ll suppress my cultivation to your level. We’ll have a fair battle. If you dare not even do that much, you might as well admit your mistakes. Otherwise, you need not dream of leaving this place safely!” Li Han spoke forcefully.

He sounded more arrogant than he was back at the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber, presumably because he had the backing of the black-haired elder now.

Chu Feng glanced at the Netherworld Envoy and saw that the latter wasn’t reacting at all. That being said, it was unlikely that the Netherworld Envoy would let Chu Feng die.

That was why Chu Feng didn’t have much fear even though the black-haired elder from the Heavenwind Sword Sect was a Half-God level cultivator.

“You’re at rank five Martial Exalted level, right? There’s no need for you to suppress your cultivation. I can defeat you without that.”

As Chu Feng spoke, he released his rank four Martial Exalted level cultivation.

“That brat... He’s actually a rank four Martial Exalted level cultivator? I couldn’t tell at all.”

The disciples of the Heavenwind Sword Sect were shocked by Chu Feng’s cultivation. Even the Half-God level black-haired elder looked at him in a different light.

“He might be a rank four Martial Exalted level cultivator, but he’s clearly no match for the rank five Martial Exalted level Senior Li. His head must have gotten clogged with water to accept the fight with Senior Li!”

“Indeed. Senior Li already offered to lower his cultivation, but that fool actually refused. He’s courting his own death!”

It didn’t take long for the disciples of the Heavenwind Sword Sect to continue insulting Chu Feng once more. They had the utmost confidence in Li Han’s strength.

Chu Feng might have stood a chance if they were of the same cultivation level, but there was a rank of difference here. No matter how they looked at it, there was no way Chu Feng could win the battle.

“Brat, are you sure about this? I don’t plan on holding back at all. Are you sure you want to fight me at my full strength?”

Even Li Han also looked at Chu Feng in disbelief.

Tzlala!

A Lightning Mark appeared on Chu Feng’s forehead, raising his cultivation from rank four to rank five Martial Exalted level.

“You’re too noisy. I don’t want to waste my time with you. If you don’t want to fight, get lost!” Chu Feng said impatiently.

“No wonder you’re so arrogant. It looks like you’ve cultivated the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique. However, if you think that you can defeat me with just this much, you’re overestimating yourself!”

Shoosh!

With a flash of light, Li Han began charging toward Chu Feng. The latter let out a sneer and began rushing forth too.

Boom boom boom!

Their martial power clashed against each other, producing a series of explosions.

The crowd expected an intense battle, but it didn’t take long for the curtains to be drawn on the fight. Li Han was sent flying with blood trailing from his lips. The hand he was holding his Exalted Armament with had been fractured.

What was shocking about this was that Li Han’s current cultivation wasn’t at rank five Martial Exalted level but rank seven!

Li Han possessed a Divine Power and had cultivated the Heavenwind Sword Sect’s mysterious technique too. On top of that, he even consumed a forbidden medicine. Thanks to that, he was able to raise his cultivation by two ranks.

Yet, despite the rise in his cultivation, he still ended up falling in defeat within moments.

Chu Feng stood in the sky with the Immemorial Hero's Sword in his grasp, gazing down on Li Han from above. His imposing presence intimidated the disciples of the Heavenwind Sword Sect.

To their horror, Chu Feng's cultivation had also reached rank seven Martial Exalted level too.

On top of his Lightning Mark, he was wearing the Lightning Armor and emanating the aura of the Four Symbols Divine Power. It was due to these abilities that Chu Feng dared to accept Li Han's duel.

It was just that no one had expected Chu Feng to be this powerful. Even the Netherworld Envoy was surprised as well.

"How could I be unaware that such a formidable child has appeared in the Eastern Region!"

The Netherworld Envoy looked at Chu Feng with a hint of delight in his eyes.

On the other hand, Chu Feng wasn't surprised by the result of the battle at all. There was no joy on his face because he knew that this matter wasn't over yet. After all, the real trouble here wasn't Li Han but the Half-God level black-haired elder.

The elder hadn't made a move or said a single word thus far, but it was clear from his vicious face that he was planning to stand up for Li Han.

"Li Han, hurry up and apologize to this young hero."

The black-haired elder finally spoke up, but his words caught Chu Feng by surprise. Instead of standing up for Li Han, he urged the latter to apologize to Chu Feng instead.

"I admit defeat. I apologize for my earlier offense."

Li Han obediently stood back up and apologized to Chu Feng.



While Chu Feng was still confused as to what was going on, another two more figures appeared. They were Chu Guyu and the unfathomable elder he had met earlier in the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber.

“Young master Chu Feng, I apologize for this. You were simply too mysterious, so I wanted to try deducing your background from your martial skill. I don’t mean any ill-will. I ask you not to blame Senior Li Han for this. We have no intention of making things difficult for you even if you had lost the earlier battle,” Chu Guyu said.

That enlightened Chu Feng to the truth.

It turned out that this was all Chu Guyu’s doing. The Heavenwind Sword Sect wasn’t trying to get even with Chu Feng; they were just trying to probe Chu Feng to figure out which power he belonged to.

Chu Guyu raised her hand, and the honorary guest token that Chu Feng had thrown onto the ground earlier flew into her grasp. She glanced at the token before stowing it away.

“The honorary guest token isn’t worthy of young master Chu Feng considering the talent you have displayed. If you don’t mind, please accept this instead.”

Chu Guyu took out another token and handed it to Chu Feng.

It was another invitation token, but it was the exalted guest token this time around.

Its significance was vastly different from that of the honorary guest token. Only the most esteemed of guests would be qualified to receive it.

“Young master Chu Feng and this elder over here, I’d like to apologize once more for the earlier transgression from our Heavenwind Sword Sect.”

After Chu Feng accepted the invitation token, Chu Guyu bowed once more to Chu Feng and the Netherworld Envoy as a show of apology.

The truth was that Chu Feng was angry at the Heavenwind Sword Sect’s actions even though they didn’t mean any ill-will, but he knew that this wasn’t the time for him to lose his temper. On the contrary, this was actually an opportunity for him.

Chu Guyu's actions were inappropriate, but they did show how highly she thought of Chu Feng. After her earlier transgression, it could be said that she owed one to Chu Feng.

If he were to make a request of her right now, she might not necessarily reject it.

Thus, Chu Feng gritted his teeth and sent a voice transmission to Chu Guyu.

*Chapter 5014: A World of Difference*

"Miss Chu, may I ask how powerful are the two elders from your Heavenwind Sword Sect?" Chu Feng asked.

"The black-haired elder is the chief of our Law Enforcement Hall. He's at rank one Half-God level. The person beside me is our grand elder. He's at rank two Half-God level."

Chu Guyu was a smart person. Seeing that Chu Feng was talking to her via voice transmission, she tactfully responded in the same manner.

"May I ask your grand elder to discern the cultivation of the person standing beside me?" Chu Feng asked via voice transmission.

There was a moment of silence before Chu Guyu gave her response.

"Young master Chu, the elder beside you probably has a treasure on him. Our grand elder is unable to discern his cultivation level. Pardon me, but why don't you ask him yourself? Are the two of you not close to each other?"

"That would be an understatement. To be frank with you, I'm currently his prisoner. I have been kidnapped by him," Chu Feng replied.

"Are you serious, young master Chu Feng?" Chu Guyu asked in shock.

"I wouldn't dare to speak lightly of something like that," Chu Feng replied.

"If that's the case, why don't you accompany me back to our Heavenwind Sword Sect. We'll ensure your safety."

Chu Feng's heart was set at ease upon hearing those words. It looked like Chu Guyu was willing to help him.

After a quick chat, Chu Guyu turned to Chu Feng and spoke aloud, “Young master Chu Feng, I believe that my grandfather will be interested to meet you. Are you willing to accompany us to our Heavenwind Sword Sect as a guest?”

“There’s no need for that. We still have business to attend to,” the Netherworld Envoy replied before Chu Feng could say a thing.

His voice sounded a little cold, hinting that he might have noticed something.

“Miss Chu, you’ll have my deepest gratitude if you can save me from this man,” Chu Feng told Chu Guyu via voice transmission.

“Rest assured, young master Chu Feng. Leave this to me,” Chu Guyu replied.

Boom!

Boom!

The earth started quaking!

Terrifying oppressive might gushed forth from the two elders of the Heavenwind Sword Sect. They were both Half-God level cultivators, such that their oppressive might could easily decimate anyone from existence if they wished to.

They focused their oppressive might solely on the Netherworld Envoy, determined to suppress him.

It was just that the oppressive might came to a halt before it could even touch the Netherworld Envoy. The latter was already guarded against their attack, and he had used his own oppressive might to counter theirs.

From the aura that the Netherworld Envoy was emanating, Chu Feng could tell that the Netherworld Envoy was at the same cultivation level as the grand elder of the Heavenwind Sword Sect, rank two Half-God level.

That gave Chu Feng a boost of confidence.

As powerful as the Netherworld Envoy was, the Heavenwind Sword Sect had the advantage in terms of number. They might just be able to defeat the Netherworld Envoy.

“Is this your doing, Chu Feng? Did you ask them for help?”

The Netherworld Envoy glared at Chu Feng. He had already guessed what had happened.

“Elder, please don’t blame me for this. You know that I have urgent matters to attend to,” Chu Feng said.

“Heh...”

Unexpectedly, the Netherworld Envoy let out a cold sneer.

“Why don’t you ask them whether they really dare to help you?”

The Netherworld Envoy looked at the Heavenwind Sword Sect with scorn in his eyes.

“Arrogant! Do you think that our Heavenwind Sword Sect is a pushover? You need not dream of getting away scot-free today if you don’t explain why you have kidnapped young hero Chu Feng!” the grand elder of the Heavenwind Sword Sect said.

“Hahaha! A mere Heavenwind Sword Sect dares to speak to me in such a manner? Take a closer look at who I am!”

A tempest started to revolve around the Netherworld Envoy, reverting his veil and robe back to their normal state.

“Y-you are from the Netherworld Sect?”

Horror could be immediately seen on the faces of everyone from the Heavenwind Sword Sect, including the rank two Half-God level grand elder.

“My deepest apologies, I was unaware of your true identity. If I had known that you were from the Netherworld Sect, I wouldn’t have dared to get involved in your business.”

The two Half-God level elders of the Heavenwind Sword Sect hurriedly retracted their oppressive might and apologized to the Netherworld Envoy. Even Chu Guyu had shut her mouth too.

“Scram. Otherwise... I’ll decimate your Heavenwind Sword Sect,” the Netherworld Envoy threatened coldly.

It took a mere split moment for everyone from the Heavenwind Sword Sect to disappear from the vicinity. The sight of that left Chu Feng feeling as if he was falling into the abyss.

He thought that he could finally be free of his quandary, but who could have thought that the Netherworld Sect was so feared even in the Totem Galaxy. All the Netherworld Envoy did was to reveal his identity, and the Heavenwind Sword Sect scrambled away without a moment's hesitation.

"Chu Feng, you better dispel those thoughts from your mind. No one can change what I have decided on."

The Netherworld Envoy was feeling gleeful at having scared the members of the Heavenwind Sword Sect off. He turned to warn Chu Feng, but to his astonishment, Chu Feng had vanished from view.

To be exact, it wasn't that Chu Feng had vanished but that the space around him was morphing. The forest he was in and the mountain range in the distance had vanished from view, replaced with a layer of shrouding fog.

The fog had devoured the lands, making it impossible for him to see anything at all.

Soon, two figures emerged from the fog. n./0V**EL**ln

"It's you?" the Netherworld Envoy remarked in surprise.

He had just met those two figures back in the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber. They were none other than the father and son who asked Chu Feng for Dragon Spring.

Yet, their disposition was now completely different from before despite being dressed the same. They emanated an intimidating pressure. Even the little boy was not to be looked down upon.

"It looks like you have been concealing your strength. Speak, what business do you have with me?" the Netherworld Envoy asked.

"You can't take that child with you," the middle-aged man said.

"You want to interfere in my business too?" the Netherworld Envoy asked.

“Heh...”

The middle-aged man chuckled softly under his breath before continuing, “If I really intended to interfere in the Netherworld Sect’s business, none of you would have been able to enter the Nine Souls Galaxy in the first place.

“I don’t want to come to blows with you today. Send Chu Feng back to the Nine Souls Galaxy. I’ll permit you to take Song Yun away with you. As for that little girl, you’ll have to hand her over. Neither her nor Chu Feng belongs to your Netherworld Sect.”

The middle-aged man’s words were calm and placid, but the certainty behind them made it clear that it wasn’t a request but an order.

“It looks like you’re from the Nine Souls Galaxy? I’ve been in the Nine Souls Galaxy for quite some time now, but I never thought that someone would dare to utter such arrogant words before our Netherworld Sect. I’ll have you know that you have already angered me. You better get lost right now, or else...”

“Uwa!”

The Netherworld Envoy let out a cry of agony before he could finish his words.

The world around him began to distort, and the Netherworld Envoy felt incredible pressure crushing down on him. It felt like his body and life were no longer under his control anymore.

“I don’t know what the consequences of angering you are, but I suggest that you don’t anger me,” the middle-aged man replied calmly.

The Netherworld Envoy looked at the shabbily dressed middle-aged man carrying an ax on his back with eyes filled with fear. He finally understood that he didn’t stand a chance against the man standing before him.

There was a world of difference in their strength!

*Chapter 5015: A Powerful Existence*

“W-who in the world are you?” the Netherworld Envoy asked in apprehension.

The Netherworld Envoy wasn’t a cowardly individual who was afraid of trouble, but the other party was simply too powerful that he couldn’t help but feel intimidated.

“You aren’t qualified to know my father’s name. All you have to do is to heed his instructions, or else there’s no guarantee that you’ll be able to keep your head,” the little boy replied. n-(Ove**l**1n

His voice was that of an adult despite his ten-year-old appearance, making for an eerie contrast.

However, the Netherworld Envoy wasn’t too surprised by that. Nothing else seemed important in comparison to the terrifying might displayed by the middle-aged man.

“You need not know who I am. You just have to do as you’re told,” the middle-aged man replied.

The Netherworld Envoy dared not to hesitate before such a terrifying individual. He obediently took the sleeping little girl out and passed her over to the middle-aged man before taking his leave.

“Remember this. You mustn’t talk about me before Chu Feng. Don’t let him know that I’ve looked for you. Also, I shall remind you that your job is to safely escort Chu Feng back to the Nine Souls Galaxy. If anything happens to him along the way, you won’t be the only one to take the fall. I’ll massacre every single person your Netherworld Sect has in the Nine Souls Galaxy.”

The middle-aged man’s voice remained calm from the start to the end, but that only made his threat even more terrifying.

After those words were spoken, both the middle-aged man and little boy vanished amidst the fog. Soon, the fog started to dissipate.

Finally, the Netherworld Envoy was able to see Chu Feng once more.

The latter was standing right next to him, staring intently at him with curiosity in his eyes.

Chu Feng had no idea what the Netherworld Envoy had been through, but the latter suddenly stood still on the spot after those from the Heavenwind Sword Sect left. He couldn’t understand what the Netherworld Envoy was up to since the latter wasn’t even answering his questions at all.

He knew that it was impossible for someone of his cultivation to escape from the Netherworld Envoy, so he had no choice but to stand his ground and wait.

“I... haven’t moved a step since earlier?” the Netherworld Envoy asked Chu Feng.

He remembered moving after the fog had set in, but somehow, his position had reverted to that before the arrival of the fog. This made him realize that what had happened earlier didn’t occur in the physical world but in his subconscious mind.

“Shouldn’t you be aware whether you have moved or not?” Chu Feng asked.

“Sss!”

The Netherworld Envoy breathed in deeply.

He knew from the middle-aged man’s oppressive might that he stood no chance against the latter, but even so, he couldn’t discern the other party’s level of cultivation at all. If the middle-aged man was able to slip into a person’s subconscious mind on top of that, his means would truly be incredible.

The middle-aged man wasn’t boasting when he said that he would massacre every member the Netherworld Sect had in the Nine Souls Galaxy if he failed to escort Chu Feng safely back to the Nine Souls Galaxy. The middle-aged man did have the power to pull that off.

“Chu Feng, are you certain that you would like to return to the Nine Souls Galaxy?” the Netherworld Envoy asked.

“Elder, I really wish to go back. A life is at stake here.”

This was a chance for him to convince the Netherworld Envoy. As unlikely as it was for the Netherworld Envoy to heed his words, he still wanted to give it a try.

“Very well. I’ll take you back,” the Netherworld Envoy said.

As he spoke, he began taking Chu Feng toward the ancient teleportation formation. It was such an abrupt change of mind that Chu Feng was left utterly bewildered.

“Elder, a-are you really taking me back to the Nine Souls Galaxy?”



Chu Feng thought that the situation was so incredulous that he even stumbled over his words.

In the first place, it was due to the Netherworld Envoy's obstinacy in taking him to the Netherworld Sect that he was forced to ask the Heavenwind Sword Sect for help. He thought that the Netherworld Envoy would punish him for his defiance, but the Netherworld Envoy chose to take him back to the Nine Souls Galaxy instead.

The change in attitude simply didn't make sense.

Chu Feng racked his brain but was unable to make sense of the situation.

"I mean what I say. Is there anywhere you wish to go? I'll bring you there?" the Netherworld Envoy said.

"Elder, there's no need to trouble you. I can return on my own too."

Chu Feng was worried that the Netherworld Envoy would change his mind halfway through, so he wanted to shake off the Netherworld Envoy and return on his own.

"You do realize that we're currently in the Totem Galaxy, a long distance away from the Nine Souls Galaxy. It might not have taken long for us to reach here, but that's only because I was the one bringing you along. You'll take far longer than you can imagine if you return there on your own. By the time, the friend you wish to save might have already lost her life," the Netherworld Envoy said.

Chu Feng thought that those words made sense. He had seen how fast the Netherworld Envoy had traveled along the way, and that was not something the current him could match.

Besides, the Netherworld Envoy didn't appear to be a scheming individual despite his obstinate views. Chu Feng didn't think that there was any reason why the other party would lie to him all of a sudden.

So, he revealed the location he was intending to head to.

Fortunately, he had chatted with the Godwish Grandmother along the way and learned where the Sagacious Grandmaster was at, so he could directly head there. He figured that it was likely that he would meet the Godwish Grandmother and the others there too.

Even though Chu Feng didn't think that the Netherworld Envoy would lie to him, he was still a little worried about it. He couldn't tell if the Netherworld Envoy was earnest about helping him or not.

It was only when the Netherworld Envoy really brought him into the ancient teleportation formation and brought him back the way where they came from that Chu Feng finally believed it.

"Elder... may I know why you suddenly changed your mind?"

Chu Feng was simply too curious to know what had happened for the Netherworld Envoy to change his stance so abruptly.

"Don't bother asking about it. You just need to know that I'll send you back. You don't have to come to the Netherworld Sect with me anymore," the Netherworld Envoy said.

"I don't?" Chu Feng asked in bewilderment.

"That's right," the Netherworld Envoy replied affirmatively.

Chu Feng was even more confused upon hearing those words.

He could tell that the Netherworld Envoy was an inflexible person who would go to all lengths to do what he had decided on. There was likely to be a compelling reason why the Netherworld Envoy was so intent on bringing him to the Netherworld Sect. It might be possible that he was entrusted with an important mission.

Considering that Chu Feng had successfully taken in the Netherworld Embryo, it made no sense for the Netherworld Envoy to let him go.

"Don't ask any further. You'll know the truth one day," the Netherworld Envoy replied.

Elder, what if... I wish to enter the Netherworld Sect on my own accord?" Chu Feng asked.

*Chapter 5016: Lord Mucheng*

"You can make the choice on your own. I won't force you to join the Netherworld Sect anymore. Still, I should remind you that the other members

of the Netherworld Sect might have different thoughts from mine,” the Netherworld Envoy said.

“Elder, what kind of power is your Netherworld Sect?” Chu Feng asked.

He had asked this question many times along the way. He did hate the Netherworld Sect at the very start, thinking that it was an evil organization that resorted to all means to achieve its goals. He thought that its hands were tainted with the blood of countless innocent people.

However, he later realized that the Netherworld Sect wasn't as evil as he thought. There was no denying that their act of implanting Netherworld Embryos into children was vile, but they rarely killed the innocent.

Other than that, the Netherworld Envoy had been taking an amicable attitude toward Chu Feng thus far. Shengguang Baimei had also insolently confronted the Netherworld Envoy at one point in time, but the latter didn't punish him at all.

In fact, Chu Feng had also directly questioned the Netherworld Envoy during their first meeting, but the latter patiently explained the goals of their sect to him.

Similar situations also happened along the way.

In any case, the Netherworld Envoy did seem like quite a peculiar guy to Chu Feng. He wouldn't go as far as to say that the Netherworld Envoy was a good person, but he didn't think that the latter was the worst of villains either.

“Our Netherworld Sect serves to bring prosperity to the world. If you wish to probe into the secrets of our sect, I'll advise you to stop there.”

That was the standard answer offered by the Netherworld Envoy each and every time, no matter what Chu Feng asked. He even tried asking if the Undying Starfield was taken away by the Netherworld Sect.

Before the Great Monstrous Slayer Emperor completely lost his consciousness, he once told Chu Feng that his true heritage was located in the Undying Starfield's Flowersea Ordinary Realm.

Back then, Chu Feng was still too weak to obtain the heritage. When he felt that he was finally strong enough, he attempted to make his way there, only to find that the entire Undying Starfield had vanished.

The series of clues afterward pointed the Netherworld Sect out as the culprit. Chu Feng thought that he could find out more about it by asking the Netherworld Envoy, but the latter simply answered with three words: I don't know.

Even though the Netherworld Envoy chatted with Chu Feng like a friend, his lips were tightly sealed when it came to important matters. Thus far, he hadn't even revealed a single clue about the Netherworld Sect.

....

While Chu Feng was rushing the way together with the Netherworld Envoy, the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber finally came to the end of their business hours.

They would be resting for an entire year after this before opening their shop once more at an unknown location. That was their unique business model.

In truth, there were many people who were curious to know what the waiters of the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber did in their resting time.

At this very moment, the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber had departed from the cliffside, but it was still floating above the mountain range. All eight of its waiters had already taken off their clothes to don similar armor.

Their armor was covered in scales similar to their own, and the aura it emanated was also similar to that of their people. Without a doubt, the armor was created specifically for them.

No one else could bring out the full prowess of the armor other than them.

As the saying went, 'clothes make the men'.

These words were simply too fitting on the waiters of the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber. Now that they were in armor, not a single person would think of them as mere waiters. Some might even be intimidated to the point where they dared not to speak up in their presence.

The presence of the eight waiters was simply too powerful. They felt like heavenly generals who naturally commanded an air of authority, making it hard to look them in the eye.

They were all extremely powerful cultivators.

Creak!

The tightly shut doors of the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber finally opened, and a middle-aged woman with a curvaceous figure walked in. She had alluring fox eyes and an irresistible figure which she didn't hesitate to flaunt.

It was hard for any man to turn a blind eye to her. Her presence demanded attention.

“Lord Mucheng, you're back.”

The waiters of the shop revealed smiles, but their heads were all respectfully lowered. They hadn't been so humble even when they dealt with the customers earlier.

“You have all worked hard. Our Dragon Breath Spring Chamber might be closed now, but something even more tiring awaits you,” Lord Mucheng said.

“Lord Mucheng, we have no qualms operating the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber, but asking us to passionately serve those beneath us is simply too taxing. It has only been a day, but I feel like many years have already passed me by!”

“Yeah! It's so hard to tolerate it!”

The waiters chirped in agreement.

“I know that you have worked hard. Here is the gift I've prepared for you.”

Lord Mucheng tossed a Cosmos Sack to each of the eight waiters with a seductive smile. The waiters immediately opened the Cosmos Sack to take a look, and delighted smiles emerged on their lips.

“Thank you, Lord Mucheng!!!”

Lord Mucheng's smile deepened upon seeing how happy the waiters were. However, she quickly noticed the completed True Dragon Chessboard.

“That is? How did the True Dragon Chessboard turn into such a state?”

Her voice was quivering as she said those words.

“Lord Mucheng, we forgot to tell you that someone has managed to decipher the True Dragon Chessboard,” one of the waiters stepped forward and answered.

“Someone deciphered it? Who? Where is he?”

Lord Mucheng’s body started to tremble as she said those words as if something huge was going to happen next.

“It’s a junior named Chu Feng, but he has already left the area,” a waiter replied.

“What? He has left the area? How could you let him go? Find him! Find him right now, or else I’ll hold you responsible!”

It was just a moment that Lord Mucheng was addressing them amicably, but her face had already warped in rage.

“W-we’ll go right now!”

The waiters of the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber paled in fright. This was the first time they saw Lord Mucheng revealing such an infuriated look. In truth, they did feel a little indignant since no one had told them to retain the person who solved the True Dragon Chessboard.

However, they dared not argue against the infuriated Lord Mucheng.

“Wait a moment. Tell me what that young man looks like,” Lord Mucheng said.

The waiter quickly drew out Chu Feng and the Netherworld Envoy’s appearance for her.

“Lord Mucheng, the young man is Chu Feng, the one who deciphered the True Dragon Chessboard. The one wearing the veil is his companion,” the waiter replied.

“What are you waiting for? Hurry up and find them! Don’t bother coming back if you can’t find them!” Lord Mucheng roared furiously.

The waiters quickly rushed out to look for Chu Feng.

Shortly after the waiters left, Lord Mucheng took out a box that was filled with scaled worms.

“Take a good look at these portraits. No matter what it takes, I want you to capture these two people alive,” Lord Mucheng pointed to the portraits of Chu Feng and the Netherworld Envoy as she spoke.

“Jip jip jip!”

The worms in the boxes immediately answered her order.

Lord Mucheng then tossed the box outward, causing the worms to swiftly fly out of the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber. These worms expanded as soon as they left the box, and they started morphing into beings with a human body and a dragon tail. They swiftly scattered in all directions.

They moved at incredible speeds, such that it only took the blink of an eye for them to disappear into the surroundings.

Meanwhile, Lord Mucheng sat down at the entrance of the Dragon Breath Spring Chamber and stared in a daze. She took out a token from her robe.

The words, ‘Qing Clan’, were inscribed on the token.

The token didn’t appear to be a treasure, but Lord Mucheng looked at it with wistful eyes.

“Lord Xuantian, don’t worry. The person who possesses the Heaven’s Eye has appeared in the world. I, Long Mucheng, will surely find him for you,” Lord Mucheng said.

*Chapter 5017: What Will Happen?*

In the plains of an Upper Realm located in the Nine Souls Galaxy, there was a deserted old village. No one was living in this village anymore, and its buildings were tattered under the erosion of time.

Such places were actually quite common in the Nine Souls Galaxy. Putting aside mere villages, there were even abandoned cities as well.

Usually, no one would pay any attention to a place like this, but there were numerous figures floating above the village at this very moment. They were all renowned figures of the Nine Souls Galaxy, and that was only counting those out in the open.

There were even more people hiding in the shadows, and they included Shengguang Baimei, Daoist Niantian, and the Lady of Dao Sea.

These experts were appearing here because this place was where the Sagacious Grandmaster was born, his hometown.

It might be out of reminiscence of his hometown, but the Sagacious Grandmaster would always choose to go into closed-door training here. For that reason, those who were familiar with him would always wait for him in this deserted village.

However, their eyes were currently not on the village itself but a distance away from it, where multiple layers of brilliant light stacked upon one another like terrifying beasts threatening to devour the world.

It should have been the middle of the night right now, but the sheer radiance made it look even brighter than daytime.

However, this wasn't a phenomenon. Three powerful forces were currently clashing against one another.

As soon as the Sagacious Grandmaster came out of closed-door training, Master Yin Ren stepped out and invited the Sagacious Grandmaster to work together with him.

What Master Yin Ren didn't know was that the Godwish Grandmother and Shengguang Baimei had been waiting in the vicinity too. Unlike the others, they weren't waiting for the Sagacious Grandmother but Master Yin Ren.

Thus, the moment Master Yin Ren appeared, the Godwish Grandmother revealed the intention behind her visit. She wanted Master Yin Ren to hand over Xian Miaomiao and Princess Xiaoxiao.

And when Master Yin Ren turned her down, the Godwish Grandmother made her move.



Everyone thought that the outcome of the battle was clear. Despite Master Yin Ren's resounding reputation as the number one world spiritist of the Nine Souls Galaxy, he was still nowhere close to matching the Godwish Grandmother.

Those who were unaware of the truth thought that Master Yin Ren was out of his mind to dare challenge the Godwish Grandmother. It was only when they started crossing blows that the crowd was shocked to realize that Master Yin Ren was more powerful than they had thought.

The Godwish Grandmother even fell into a disadvantageous position.

For some reason, the Sagacious Grandmaster, who had been spectating the battle thus far, suddenly joined the fray on the Godwish Grandmother's side, working together with her to curb Master Yin Ren.

The Sagacious Grandmaster proved to be a formidable foe too.

Both Master Yin Ren and the Godwish Grandmother were using martial power whereas the Sagacious Grandmaster used his spirit power.

Even so, the situation was hardly optimistic. Even with the Godwish Grandmother and the Sagacious Grandmaster combining forces, they were only able to barely fight Master Yin Ren to a draw. They weren't able to defeat him.

At this rate, it was only a matter of time before the Godwish Grandmother and the Sagacious Grandmaster lost the battle.

"I didn't think that Yin Ren would be this powerful. The Sagacious Grandmaster isn't just a rank nine Dragon Transformation Sensation world spiritist; he also possesses means that allow him to rival enemies a rank stronger than him. His most recent closed-door training is a huge success. Yet, despite joining forces with my older sister, they are still unable to curb Yin Ren?"

The Lady of Dao Sea had a tight frown on her forehead. All this while, she thought that Master Yin Ren was no more than a small fry, but the current situation told her that she had been underestimating how dangerous the latter was.

The thought that someone that powerful was scheming something behind everyone's back left her feeling frightful.

It would be one thing if they could win this battle, but if they were to lose this fight, there might just be no one left in the Nine Souls Galaxy who could stop Master Yin Ren. Even the Nine Souls Sacred Clan might find their hands tied against him.

That left the Lady of Dao Sea with an ominous premonition.

“Could this mean that a calamity is going to befall our Nine Souls Galaxy? But the person who can break the calamity has already left...” the Lady of Dao Sea murmured worriedly.

Using the Spirit Rock of Prophecies, she had prophesied that the Nine Souls Galaxy would face a huge calamity, and the one who could stop the calamity was none other than her disciple, Wang Yuxian.

In order to put a halt to the calamity, the Lady of Dao Sea had practically imparted everything she knew to Wang Yuxian. Fortunately, Wang Yuxian hadn't let her down either. She became a renowned prodigy of the Nine Souls Galaxy.

However, the prophecy suddenly changed halfway through. It prophesied another person who could stop the calamity, and the person was none other than Chu Feng.

The Lady of Dao Sea was initially skeptical about it, thinking that the affairs of the Nine Souls Galaxy shouldn't be left in the hands of an outsider. However, as she watched Chu Feng's growth, her thoughts began to waver.

Chu Feng was simply growing too fast. To this day, he had already completely surpassed her disciple, Wang Yuxian.

Yin Ren had finally torn off his mask today, revealing his terrifying strength and a huge scheme. This made the Lady of Dao Sea suspect that the impending calamity might have something to do with Yin Ren.

If Chu Feng was the only one who could save them from this calamity, what would happen to the Nine Souls Galaxy now that he was gone?

Boom!

There was yet another loud explosion accompanied by rippling shockwaves, devastating the surroundings. However, the fight started quieting down from this point onward. A gust of wind swiftly appeared and dissipated the shockwaves.

“This...”

When the dust finally settled, the crowd revealed grim looks.

The battle had been decided... but the ones who were defeated were the Godwish Grandmother and the Sagacious Grandmaster.

They were reputable figures whose name was known throughout the Eastern Region, but there they were, lying helplessly on the ground. Even though Master Yin Ren didn't make any further moves on them, it was clear that he could take both their lives whenever he pleased.

If the crowd hadn't seen it with their own eyes, no one would have thought that these two powerhouses would be defeated by Master Yin Ren.

At this point, no one dared to look down on Master Yin Ren anymore.

Woosh!

Master Yin Ren's sleeves suddenly started fluttering, and a powerful oppressive might gushed out from him. All of the spectating crowd were caught in the oppressive might and found their movements restricted.

Then, Master Yin Ren waved his hand, and his spirit power rippled out into the surroundings. All disguises were removed by a touch of his spirit power. Daoist Niantian, Shengguang Baimei, and the Lady of Dao Sea were no exception to the rule.

“Just as I expected, you are here too. It doesn't seem like Chu Feng is with you? What a pity,” Master Yin Ren said.

“You old scoundrel! Don't act so smug just because you have us in your grasp. Our Holy Light Clan will not turn a blind eye to this!” Shengguang Baimei bellowed.

“The only thing that’s tough about you is your mouth. Why isn’t your Holy Light Clan here then? Don’t you think that this is a sign of cowardice? However, it matters not. Even if your Holy Light Clan dares not to confront me, I’ll return to the Holy Light Galaxy to look for them. You better pray hard that your people are good at hiding, or else that might just spell the end of your clan,” Master Yin Ren said with a chuckle.

“What a joke! You think that you can destroy our Holy Light Clan?” Shengguang Baimei sneered.

While he wasn’t a match for Master Yin Ren, he wasn’t too worried about the latter confronting the Holy Light Clan. He was confident in the strength of their Holy Monarch.

Master Yin Ren didn’t bother to continue squabbling with the obstinate Shengguang Baimei. He turned his sights toward the rest of the crowd instead.

“Today is a wonderful day. Not only do we have the Sagacious Grandmaster, the Godwish Grandmother, and the Lady of Dao Sea here, but we have so many esteemed individuals here with us too!”

Master Yin Ren directed a sweeping glance at the crowd before his eyes finally fell upon the Lady of Dao Sea. The fact that he was paying extra attention to the Lady of Dao Sea despite the abundance of reputable world spiritists present showed just how highly he thought of the latter.

“Yin Ren, what schemes are you hatching?” the Lady of Dao Sea asked.

By now, she was already certain that the calamity that would befall the Nine Souls Galaxy had something to do with Yin Ren. For that reason, she wanted to know Yin Ren’s plans since this could very well determine the future of the Nine Souls Galaxy.

“Schemes? What an awful choice of word. I guess that all of you are curious about what my plans are, but there’s no rush here. You’ll know in due time. If you’re lucky enough, you might just be able to witness my glorious feat in person.

“For the time being, I guess I can satisfy another one of your curiosity. Yin Ren isn’t my name at all. My real name is Sima Xiangtu.”

Right after Master Yin Ren said those words, his appearance started changing. His face still looked as aged as before, but there was a distinct change in his facial features.

“Sima Xiangtu! You’re actually Sima Xiangtu!”

Shengguang Baimei and Daoist Niantian were astounded by the revelation. The two of them had met Sima Xiangtu before.

It was just that the Sima Xiangtu they knew was nothing more than a small fry back then. It was hard for them to think of the powerful Master Yin Ren as the same humble Sima Xiangtu they knew of.

“It looks like the two of you still remember me. Since that’s the case, you should know why my next destination is Holy Light Galaxy. After all... it’s only right to pay a visit to my homeland, right?”

An unnerving smile surfaced on Sima Xiangtu’s lips. Even Shengguang Baimei felt chills running down his spine.

“Sima Xiangtu! It turns out that you were hiding here all along!”

A furious bellow echoed, but it came not from an elder but a young man. The crowd quickly turned their eyes over, only to be shocked by what they had seen.

Unbeknownst to them, a young man had appeared in the vicinity. He was glaring at Sima Xiangtu with eyes blazing with rage.

Most of the crowd were shocked because they had no idea who this young man was, but it was the opposite for Shengguang Baimei, Daoist Niantian, the Godwish Grandmother, and the Lady of Dao Sea. They felt panicked because they recognized the young man to be none other than Chu Feng.

With even the Godwish Grandmother and the Sagacious Grandmaster falling in defeat to Master Yin Ren, Chu Feng was practically courting his own death by appearing at a time like this!

Even though the Godwish Grandmother had been suppressed, she still gathered all of her strength to let out a shout.

“Junior Chu Feng? That young man is the Godwish Grandmother’s junior?”

The Godwish Grandmother's words failed to drive away Chu Feng, but it gave the rest of the crowd a deeper understanding of the mysterious young man who suddenly appeared here.

"Junior? Hoh, I was still wondering why the Godwish Grandmother suddenly turned on me. It turns out that there's such a relationship between the two of you. But why would the Godwish Grandmother be your senior? Who is your master then?" Sima Xiangtu asked curiously.

"Sima Xiangtu, you should have hidden better. You shouldn't have exposed your identity today," Chu Feng said with gritted teeth.

Chu Feng also knew of Sima Xiangtu, for the latter was the culprit who backstabbed the Ox-nosed Old Daoist back then. *n--Orel*

"Chu Feng, I know why you hate me so much. You wish to exact vengeance for your master, right? What a coincidence. Your master happens to be in my hands right now, but I'm guessing that he's not the master of you and the Godwish Grandmother, right? Trash like him can only hope to hoodwink you. How could he possibly be qualified to become the Godwish Grandmother's master?" Sima Xiangtu said.

"What do you mean?"

Sima Xiangtu's words had revealed some crucial information to Chu Feng, but he was unwilling to believe them.

"I'm saying that your master is my prisoner."

Before everyone's eyes, Sima Xiangtu plucked out his right eyeball and crushed it.

Bam!

Fresh blood spurted out, and the crushed bits of the eyeball swiftly converged to form a spirit formation gate. The spirit formation gate was transparent, allowing one to see the insides of it.

"Master!"

Chu Feng could tell that it was a prison with two people trapped inside. One of them was Princess Xiaoxiao, and the other was Chu Feng's master, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist!

*Chapter 5019: Pill Dao Immortal Sect*

“Master!!!”

Seeing the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's plight, Chu Feng felt extreme anger.

Even though Princess Xiaoxiao and the Ox-nosed Old Daoist were trapped in the prison beyond the spirit formation gate, their conditions were vastly different from each other.

Princess Xiaoxiao was still relatively unharmed despite being trapped, but the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was plunged to a black wooden board by 136 formation nails.

“Ox-nosed- Ah, no no no. I should be calling your Senior Yuankong instead. I am truly impressed by your means. How did you get a prodigy like Chu Feng to become so loyal to you? Look at the rage in his eyes. He looks just like a loyal dog. I must say, I'm really envious of you,” Sima Xiangtu scoffed.

Meanwhile, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist ignored Sima Xiangtu and instead directed a heartened smile at Chu Feng.

“Brat, you sure improved quickly. You have probably surpassed me by now, right?”

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist showed not a tinge of nervousness or pain. It was as if this was nothing more than an ordinary reunion with his disciple after a long time.

Seeing that, Chu Feng felt a stabbing pain in his heart. He wasn't so naive as to believe that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist felt no pain from those formation nails. The latter was only feigning composure.

He knew that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist cared a lot about putting up a front, so he didn't cause a fuss. Instead, he directed a smile back at the latter and said, “Master, just give me a moment. I'll save you very soon.”

After saying those words, Chu Feng raised his head to look toward the sky. There was nothing there, but he went on and said, "Elder, didn't you say that you would help me today? I hope that you can eliminate this man for me."

...

"I won't kill others for your sake, but I can help you save them," a voice sounded from the empty sky above.

The Lady of Dao Sea, the Godwish Grandmother, and the others were delighted to hear that. They could tell from the voice that the person in the sky was the Netherworld Envoy.

As powerful as Sima Xiangtu was, he was only able to flaunt his strength in front of the Godwish Grandmother and the others. However, the tables would likely be turned if his opponent was the powerful Netherworld Envoy.

Following that, a figure descended from the sky.

The Netherworld Envoy had disguised himself, but the Godwish Grandmother and the others were still able to identify him through his silhouette.

"Yin Ren, it looks like you're in trouble today," the Godwish Grandmother sneered.

"It turns out that you have a helper. No wonder you dare to show yourself."

Surprisingly, Sima Xiangtu wasn't afraid of the Netherworld Envoy at all.

"If you know what's better for you, you shouldn't get involved in this matter," Sima Xiangtu told the Netherworld Envoy.

"If you know what's better for you, you should free those two and leave this place. Don't force my hand."

The Netherworld Envoy released his oppressive might right after he said those words. It swept away Sima Xiangtu's oppressive might and spirit power, freeing the crowd from their restraints.

"My gosh, that aura... Is he a Half-God level cultivator?"

The crowd was shocked by the prowess displayed by the Netherworld Envoy. They looked at him with eyes filled with deference and admiration.



Even though they were all famous figures in the Nine Souls Galaxy, they dared not to pull their weight before a Half-God level cultivator. That was a being at a higher existence than them, a level that they were unlikely to reach even when they were on their deathbed.

“Half-God level cultivator?”

Sima Xiangtu’s face darkened upon feeling the Netherworld Envoy’s oppressive might, but he still showed no hints of fear.

“May I know if you’re the master of Chu Feng and the Godwish Grandmother?” Sima Xiangtu asked.

“It’s none of your business who I am. I’m telling you to get lost. If you don’t understand my words, I’ll have no choice but to express it physically,” the Netherworld Envoy said impatiently.

“Domineering indeed. I’d expect no less from a Half-God level cultivator. However, I’ll put my word out here today. I’ll be taking all of these people away with me today, including you,” Sima Xiangtu said.

The crowd, including Chu Feng, was surprised to hear those words. It suggested that Sima Xiangtu wasn’t afraid of Half-God level cultivators.

Could this mean that Sima Xiangtu hadn’t revealed his true prowess yet? Or could he be a Half-God level cultivator too?

“It looks like you don’t know your place.”

The Netherworld Envoy’s silhouette suddenly disappeared. Before the crowd could see anything, he was already standing right in front of Sima Xiangtu.

“That is...?”

The crowd froze in shock.

Another figure had appeared in front of Sima Xiangtu. It was a middle-aged man with a dashing appearance and a lofty disposition. He had a pair of sharp eyes that made him look imposing.

The Netherworld Envoy had intended to strike Sima Xiangtu with a palm strike, but this middle-aged man had blocked his attack.

Chu Feng finally understood why Sima Xiangtu wasn't afraid of Half-God level cultivators. It turned out that he had backing behind him too!

Chu Feng didn't know who this middle-aged man was, but he was dressed in a white robe that made him appear like an immortal descending upon the mortal world. There were words embroidered on his white robe and inscribed on the token he wore around his waist: Pill Dao Immortal Sect.

"You're from Pill Dao Immortal Sect? What are you doing here?" the Netherworld Envoy blurted out.

"You recognize me? It looks like I can't let you leave this place alive then," the middle-aged man said with a smile, but his eyes flared with murderous intent.

He pushed aside the Netherworld Envoy's palm before hurling a punch forward.

Boom!

There was a loud explosion. Chu Feng and the others were jolted backward.

Those who were in the vicinity of the clash, the Godwish Grandmother, the Sagacious Grandmaster, and even Sima Xiangtu, started bleeding from their seven apertures.

Mysteriously, both the Netherworld Envoy and the middle-aged man had vanished from sight.

Whoosh!

Boom!

Boom!

Boom!

However, a series of piercing explosions started echoing from the sky above. The crowd quickly raised their heads and saw the sky covered in golden light and billowing storm clouds. It was a phenomenon caused by the clash between the Netherworld Envoy and the middle-aged man.

"That fellow is backed by the Pill Dao Immortal Sect. No wonder he's so arrogant!"

Chu Feng noticed that even the usually fearless Shengguang Baimei had a grim look on his face, as if a calamity was going to befall the world.

“Elder Baimei, what’s the background of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect you speak of?” Chu Feng asked.

“Chu Feng, this is bad news. The Pill Dao Immortal Sect is a sect with countless years of legacy behind it. Even in the Totem Galaxy, it is only second to the overseers of the Totem Galaxy.

“Let me put it this way. Just like how the Situ World Spiritist Clan is already a behemoth to our Eastern Region, the Pill Dao Immortal Sect is a behemoth to the Situ World Spiritist Clan. It’s a power that’s renowned throughout the entire world of cultivation!” Shengguang Baimei said.

## **Martial God Asura #Chapter 5020: Revelation of Identity - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 5020: Revelation of Identity**

*Chapter 5020: Revelation of Identity*

This was the first time Chu Feng saw such a panicked look on Shengguang Baimei’s face, but he could understand the latter’s reaction after listening to his explanation.

Even the Holy Monarch of the Holy Valley would be helpless against a sect that was considered a powerhouse in the entire world of cultivation.

“Why would a power like the Pill Dao Immortal Sect come to our Nine Souls Galaxy? Does this mean that the imminent calamity of our Nine Souls Galaxy has something to do with the Pill Dao Immortal Sect?” the Lady of Dao Sea murmured to herself.

“Calamity? Elder, what calamity are you speaking of?” Chu Feng asked.

Even though the Lady of Dao Sea was speaking softly, it still caught Chu Feng and the others’ attention.

The Lady of Dao Sea thought that there was no point hiding the truth anymore, so she told them about how she had prophesied that a calamity would befall the Nine Souls Galaxy using the Spirit Rock of Prophecies.

There were different reactions from everyone after hearing her story.

Some fell into deep thoughts whereas others smiled helplessly.

“Aren’t prophecies usually unreliable? It seems awfully naive for a renowned world spiritist like you, the Lady of Dao Sea, to believe in such stuff,” Shengguang Baimei remarked.

“I agree. I don’t think that it would be wise to be so trusting of prophecies.”

There were also others who agreed with Shengguang Baimei’s point of view.

“But rumor has it that prophecies shown by the Spirit Rock of Prophecies tend to be highly accurate, and the current circumstances surrounding our Nine Souls Galaxy do suggest an imminent calamity. If the Pill Dao Immortal Sect is really up to something, it’ll likely spell a tragedy to our Nine Souls Galaxy.”

There were also those who believed in the prophecy.

Given the Pill Dao Immortal Sect’s power and influence, they could do whatever they like in the Nine Souls Galaxy and determine its fate.

“How in the world did Sima Xiangtu get those from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect to back him?”

Chu Feng was much more concerned about Sima Xiangtu because the latter was simply too hateful. The latter’s deed as Master Yin Ren was already enough to pique his killing intent, but it turned out that he was actually the dastardly Sima Xiangtu who backstabbed his master.

With that, it was no longer possible for Chu Feng to forgive Sima Xiangtu anymore. He was determined to kill the latter at all costs.

For that reason, he had to learn more about Sima Xiangtu.

As the saying went, ‘know thyself and thy enemy, a hundred battles, a hundred victories’.

Not to mention, Sima Xiangtu was proving to be a truly troublesome enemy.

“Chu Feng, do you believe in prophecies?” the Lady of Dao Sea suddenly asked.

“Elder, I don’t really believe in them,” Chu Feng replied.

“I see...”

The Lady of Dao Sea fell silent upon hearing those words.

Chu Feng sensed that there were some words lingering at the tip of her tongue, so he asked, “Elder, is there something you wish to tell me?”

“No,” the Lady of Dao Sea replied with a shake of her head.

She was intending to tell Chu Feng that he was prophesied to be the one who would save the Nine Souls Galaxy from the calamity, but on second thought, it didn’t seem meaningful to do so when Chu Feng himself didn’t believe in prophecies.

“Young hero Chu Feng, how did you convince the Netherworld Envoy to bring you back?” Shengguang Baimei asked.

They had seen how obstinate the Netherworld Envoy was, so it was unbelievable to them how the Netherworld Envoy had brought him back and was even helping him deal with Sima Xiangtu and the Pill Dao Immortal Sect.

Something special must have happened for the Netherworld Envoy to drastically change his mind.

“This young hero over here, may I ask who is that man you have brought with you? He isn’t a member of our Eastern Region, right?”

A few other people also started questioning Chu Feng about the matter. They were all renowned experts in the Nine Souls Galaxy, but their attitude toward Chu Feng was respectful.

How could they not after learning that Chu Feng had a Half-God level cultivator accompanying him?

Boom!

Boom!

However, a series of ensuing explosions disrupted their conversation. The earth started to collapse inward, and lava started spurting out from underground.

It felt like this world was swiftly regressing to its most primitive form.

Chu Feng and the others were powerful cultivators in their own rights, but the battle that was ongoing above them left them feeling deeply pressured. That was the overwhelming might of Half-God level cultivators.

It was fortunate that those two Half-God cultivators were conscious about protecting them, so the shockwaves of their battles didn't reach them. Otherwise, a simple ripple from their blows would have been enough to obliterate their existence.

The term, Half-God, suggested the existence of divine power.

To ordinary civilians, a powerful cultivator was no different from god. Similarly, a Half-God cultivator was no different from a god to Martial Exalted level cultivators.

If the other party willed so, their lives could be forfeit.

Chu Feng stared at the sky intently because he sensed that the battle was getting to the climax. It shouldn't take long for the battle between the Netherworld Envoy and the expert from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect to come to an end.

And the conclusion of the battle would determine their fate.

In the sky, the Netherworld Envoy had raised his cultivation and whipped out two black scythes. Both of them were top-quality Exalted Armaments. He had wrapped himself inside a black aura, making him appear like a demon who had walked out of hell.

Yet, he was gasping for air. Bloodied wounds could be seen on his body. He was injured.

As for the middle-aged man from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect, he held onto a silver compass in his left hand and a silver sword in his right. His white robe would flutter along with the wind, and there was a thin layer of golden light wrapping his body.

It looked as if the sun was embracing him. He gave off an air of righteousness, reminiscent of a dignified deity. There was not a wound to be found on him.

It was apparent who was in an advantageous position.

“Why is the Pill Dao Immortal Sect interfering in the affairs of the Nine Souls Galaxy?” the Netherworld Envoy asked.

“There’s no need for our Pill Dao Immortal Sect to explain our actions to anyone,” the middle-aged man from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect replied.

He was incredibly arrogant. Despite knowing that his opponent wasn’t a pushover, he didn’t seem to take the Netherworld Envoy seriously at all.

“I can’t care less about your goals. I only made a move here because of Chu Feng. Would you let Chu Feng and his friends off for my sake?” the Netherworld Envoy asked.

“Who do you think you are to ask such a request of me?” the middle-aged man replied.

“You’re asking who I am? Since you wish to know, I’ll fulfill your curiosity.”

The Netherworld Envoy wrapped his body in spirit power, causing the clothes he was wearing to change back to those of the Netherworld Sect.

“I see. You’re from the Netherworld Sect. The Netherworld Sect has gotten really nose over the years.”

However, a shocking sight occurred.

Even when the Netherworld Envoy had revealed his identity, the man from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect showed no signs of fear. On the contrary, he continued speaking in a snarky tone.

*Chapter 5021: Lord Taibai*

“Our Netherworld Sect rarely gets involved in secular affairs, but we have our own reasons when we do. I’ve revealed my identity to you so as to give you a reason to step down. Chu Feng is a member of our Netherworld Sect, so his business is our Netherworld Sect’s business. Isn’t that enough reason for me to get involved?” the Netherworld Envoy replied.

“I understand. What if I refuse?” the middle-aged man replied.

“Then you’ll be making an enemy out of the Netherworld Sect. Does your Pill Dao Immortal Sect has the guts to do that?” the Netherworld Envoy replied.

“Heh... Guts?”

The middle-aged man laughed deeply before pulling his robe open to reveal his chest. There should have been a formation at his heart, implanted into his body while he was still a child. However, the formation has been utterly destroyed, inflicting irreparable harm to his heart.

The scar that remained was glaring.

“Since you know that I’m from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect, you should understand what this scar means,” the middle-aged man said.

“You’re an exile. Since you have been exiled from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect, why are you still wearing its robes and posing yourself as a member?” the Netherworld Envoy asked.

“Regardless of whether I have been exiled or not, the blood that flows inside me is that of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect. Who has the right to say otherwise if I identify myself as a member of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect?”

The middle-aged man’s tone had gotten a little heavier, and there was a hint of rage in his voice.

“Since you still identify yourself as a member of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect, I trust that you still care about it. If that’s the case, you should understand what it means to make an enemy out of the Netherworld Sect,” the Netherworld Envoy replied.

“I do care about the Pill Dao Immortal Sect, but not those lowlifes in it. Besides, aren’t you putting yourself on a pedestal here? You’re nothing more than a lowly Netherworld Envoy, a grunt of the Netherworld Sect. Do you think that you’re qualified to threaten me using the Netherworld Envoy’s name?”

“Furthermore, who would know if I kill you right here?”

The middle-aged man suddenly charged forward the next moment.

Woosh!



The roar of a ferocious beast, produced by the clashing of martial power, echoed in the sky.

“They have started fighting again. It looks like there’ll be a conclusion this time.”

Chu Feng and the others couldn’t hear the conversation between the Netherworld Envoy and the middle-aged man from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect, so they didn’t know what happened. All they saw was a brief respite in that intense battle.

However, the fight that broke out afterward was even more intense than before. It was likely that they were planning to put an end to this fight.

So, Chu Feng and the others looked at the sky with tight frowns. Even Sima Xiangtu looked a little worried.

They knew that the outcome of this battle would determine their fates.

Weng!

Chu Feng suddenly felt a surge of energy wrapping around him, and his surroundings started to change. By the time it was all over, he was astounded to find that he was already standing in the midst of another land.

The place he was at previously had already been ravaged by the clash between the two Half-God cultivators, making it no different from a living hell. However, the place where Chu Feng was brought to consisted of a grass field filled with flowers.

What was above him wasn’t overwhelming martial power but a beautiful starry night sky.

He had been transported far away from where he was originally at, and the person who took him away was none other than the Netherworld Envoy.  
novE/b.In

The Netherworld Envoy was standing beside Chu Feng at this very moment, but his condition didn’t look too optimistic. Half of his body had been devastated.

He had lost the battle.

“Elder, are you alright?”

Chu Feng quickly released his spirit power in an attempt to treat the Netherworld Envoy, but his means were simply too weak. He was unable to help the latter by much.

“It’s just a small wound. Those from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect are really not to be underestimated. Despite being of the same cultivation level, I wasn’t a match for him,” the Netherworld Envoy sighed.

Indignance could be heard from his tone.

“Elder, you...”

Chu Feng felt guilt-ridden.

It was the Netherworld Envoy who told him to step forward earlier on, promising to lend him a helping hand. Nevertheless, Chu Feng knew that the Netherworld Envoy had only gotten injured because of him.

Seeing Chu Feng’s anxious look, the Netherworld Envoy said, “You’re truly a loyal friend. I finally understand why you’re so determined to save your friend. It’s not that I didn’t want to take your friends along with us, but I’m unable to do so. In fact, I was only able to take you with me thanks to the formation I left on you beforehand.

“However, you need not worry. Your friends will be saved. This isn’t an affair between you and Sima Xiangtu anymore.”

The Netherworld Envoy told Chu Feng about how he had revealed his identity to that man from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect, only to be snubbed.

“Elder, you intend to continue helping me?” Chu Feng asked.

“I’m not just helping you now. I’ll teach that arrogant man a lesson for daring to underestimate me. Does he really take me for just an ordinary Netherworld Envoy? Follow me.”

Chu Feng could sense the Netherworld Envoy’s rage. The latter was so agitated that he insisted on traveling despite having half of his body blown away.

...

Meanwhile, the Godwish Grandmother and the others were still oblivious as to what had happened. They had only noticed that Chu Feng had suddenly gone missing.

It was only when the middle-aged man from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect started descending from the sky that the crowd realized that things had gone awry. By this point, it was clear what was the outcome of the fight.

“Milord, did that man get away?” Sima Xiangtu stepped forward and asked.

“Mm,” the middle-aged man replied.

He turned his eyes to the crowd, who had been tied up by Sima Xiangtu, and asked, “How do you plan to deal with them?”

“Milord, these people are of use to me. We can’t kill them yet,” Sima Xiangtu replied.

“Capture them. I’ll tell you more about it later on,” the middle-aged man replied.

“Understood.”

Sima Xiangtu quickly stuffed the Godwish Grandmother, Shengguang Baimei, and everyone else into the same prison where the Ox-nosed Old Daoist and Princess Xiaoxiao were in. Then, he reverted the spirit formation gate back into his eyeball before popping it back into his eye socket.

“Can’t you use a more normal spirit formation cage? Disgusting,” the middle-aged man said disdainfully.

“Milord, this spirit formation cage of mine is a treasure,” Sima Xiangtu replied with a smile.

It was rare for him to show such a fawning attitude.

“That young man from earlier on is called Chu Feng, right?” the middle-aged man asked.

“Yes, Milord,” Sima Xiangtu replied.

“That helper Chu Feng brought isn’t any ordinary figure. He’s from the Netherworld Sect,” the middle-aged man replied.

“Netherworld Sect? Lord Taibai, are you certain about that? He’s really from the Netherworld Sect?”

Terror showed on Sima Xiangtu’s face. He had heard of the Netherworld Sect too.

n).0**V**e**l**b**l**n

*Chapter 5022: That Man*

“He revealed his identity to me,” the middle-aged man whom Sima Xiangtu addressed as Lord Taibai said.

“But doesn’t the Netherworld Sect only make a move on talented children? As far as I know, they rarely get involved with the conflicts in the world of cultivation,” Sima Xiangtu asked.

“That’s where the problem lies. The reason he gave for interfering here is that Chu Feng is a member of the Netherworld Sect,” Lord Taibai replied.

“Chu Feng... is a member of the Netherworld Sect? Does he have the Netherworld Embryo implanted inside his body too?” Sima Xiangtu exclaimed with fear reflected in his eyes.

“Do you finally understand what kind of risk I’m taking for helping you? I hope you understand what kind of outcome will befall you if you fail to fulfill your promise,” Lord Taibai said with menacing eyes.

“Rest assured, Lord Taibai. I wouldn’t dare to deceive you. Take a look at this.”

Sima Xiangtu took out a gourd filled with runes from his Cosmic Sack and passed it to Lord Taibai.

As soon as the gourd was uncorked, a green aura drifted out from within, causing the surrounding space to shudder. As the aura grew denser, the intensity of the quakes heightened.

The underground lava began to bubble, and the sky started to tremble. Even spatial rifts started appearing eventually.

The green aura wielded the power to influence everything.

“You actually found it.”

Lord Taibai revealed a smile when he saw the green aura.

“Milord, if this energy is like the boundless ocean, all I have inside this gourd is just an infinitesimal portion of it,” Sima Xiangtu said.

“Wonderful. Sima Xiangtu, as long as you can fulfill your end of the promise, I guarantee that you’ll rise to heights you have never reached before,” Lord Taibai said.

“Milord, it’s just that I’m unable to accomplish that step with my current step. I’ll need you to lend your Immortal Cauldron to me,” Sima Xiangtu said.

“We’re already in the midst of activating the Immortal Cauldron, and it won’t take long before it’s fully activated. It’s just that using the Immortal Cauldron requires an immense amount of power. Just as I’ve told you before, our Pill Dao Immortal Sect won’t be helping you on that. You only have yourself to count on. Are you certain that you can pull it off?”

Lord Taibai eyed Sima Xiangtu doubtfully.

“Rest assured, milord. As long as you lend the activated Immortal Cauldron to me, I can settle the rest on my own,” Sima Xiangtu said.

“I see that you’re confident, but I still want to put it out here clearly. Our agreement is for me to lend you the Immortal Cauldron, and you’ll help me acquire what I need. Regardless of whether you are able to use the Immortal Cauldron or not, I expect you to fulfill the end of your bargain. Otherwise... you know the consequences,” Lord Taibai said.

“Milord, I won’t let you down. I’m just worried about Chu Feng. He won’t let things rest easily. If the Netherworld Sect chooses to help him, I’m afraid that...”

Sima Xiangtu’s voice slowly trailed off.

“You don’t have to worry about that. As troublesome as the Netherworld Sect is, a mere Netherworld Envoy means nothing to me. I’ll ensure your safety till our deal is done,” Lord Taibai said.

“I’ll be counting on you then, milord.”

A bright smile broke out on Sima Xiangtu's face after receiving a guarantee.

...

After rushing quite a distance, Chu Feng and the Netherworld Envoy arrived at a realm in the Nine Souls Galaxy. The Netherworld Envoy led Chu Feng toward a black lake that was furiously bubbling as if it was boiling.

What was queer about this lake was despite its unseemly appearance, it was emanating a faint fragrance.

“Stay here and don't go anywhere else.”

The Netherworld Envoy had managed to recover from his injuries, but his aura was still extremely weak. After saying those words, he dived into the lake.

Chu Feng knew that the Netherworld Envoy was here to find someone, though the latter refused to tell him who it was. Nevertheless, he could still deduce as much that the person inside the lake was likely to be someone from the Netherworld Sect who could help them deal with the Pill Dao Immortal Sect.

The Netherworld Envoy dived all the way down until he reached the bottom of the lake. There, he took out a talisman paper, formed a hand seal with his left hand, and murmured, “Open!”

The talisman paper started burning up, releasing smoke filled with glowing runes. The smoke diffused into the surroundings at the lake bottom, expanding at a swift pace.

There was nothing peculiar at first, but all of a sudden, the smoke seemed to have bumped into something.

Weng!

The glowing runes washed over the obstacle, and something started materializing. From its outlines, one could tell that it was an ancient underwater palace.

However, there was clearly nothing there before it was touched by the glowing runes.

The Netherworld Envoy turned toward the palace and kowtowed deeply.

“Ghost Rank Netherworld Envoy requests an audience with Lord Netherworld General!” the Netherworld Envoy said.

Creak!

The gates to the ancient underwater palace started opening, and a silhouette could be seen standing behind the gates. The silhouette had an intimidating presence, standing at almost ten meters tall with a brawny physique. His face was hidden amidst the shadow, making it impossible to make out his appearance.

His clothes were very similar to that of the Netherworld Envoy, a white veil accompanied with a red robe, except that he had an additional white cape behind his red robe with the words ‘Netherworld General’ embroidered on it.

“What happened?” the Netherworld General asked.

“Milord, I have encountered three incredible prodigies in the Nine Souls Galaxy and wanted to bring them back to the Netherworld Sect, but...”

The Netherworld Envoy talked about the events that had transpired thus far, be it his meeting with Chu Feng, Song Yun, and the mysterious girl, his meeting with the mysterious father and son pair at Totem Galaxy, and his encounter with a cultivator from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect.

“Something like that happened? Show me Song Yun.”

The Netherworld Envoy quickly brought out the unconscious Song Yun from his formation space and presented her to the Netherworld General.

“It really is the legendary fusion of Netherworld Embryos. Wonderful! You have contributed greatly to the Netherworld Sect once again!”

The Netherworld General quickly inspected Song Yun before laughing heartily.

“Milord, Chu Feng, who received the guidance of the Divine Vat, is a formidable prodigy too. I believe that he would be a great asset to our...” the Netherworld Envoy continued.

The truth was that he was reluctant to give up on Chu Feng.

“There’s no need to bother with Chu Feng. That man has already made a move anyway,” the Netherworld General said.

“Milord, could it be that you know who that man is?” the Netherworld Envoy asked.

“I can’t say that I know him, but I have heard of him. Do you remember the ancient remnant that was discovered in the Nine Souls Galaxy two years ago?” the Netherworld General asked.

“Milord, are you referring to the ancient remnant we have found in the Nine Souls Galaxy’s Soulgrudge Ordinary Realm?” the Netherworld Envoy asked.

“Indeed,” the Netherworld General replied.

“Of course I do. Milord, I was the one who found the ancient remnant. I remember that the ancient remnant was so dangerous that Milord had to return to the sect and request the help of many elders before we were able to open it.

“Who could have thought that the man with an ape got to it before we could?”

The Netherworld Envoy felt aggrieved just thinking about it, but a thought suddenly arose in his head.

“Milord, could it be that the person whom I’ve met was the man with an ape?” the Netherworld Envoy asked.

“That’s not it.”

Surprisingly, the Netherworld Envoy shook his head in response to that question.

“You weren’t able to enter the ancient remnant because your cultivation was too weak, so you aren’t aware of the happenings back then. In fact, I was only able to explore the front portions of it, so most of what I know about it was heard from others,” the Netherworld General said.

“Milord, what happened inside the ancient remnant?” the Netherworld Envoy asked.



He was so curious that he asked about it back then, but no one answered his doubt. He dared not to probe any deeper back then because he sensed that it might be a sensitive topic.

But since they happened to chance upon this topic once more, he bucked up his courage and asked about it once again.

“It’s true that the treasure inside the ancient remnant was taken away by the man with an ape, but the person who first got in the way of our Netherworld Sect was another person. He was a middle-aged man who carried a wood axe on his back. I suspect that he’s the person whom you have encountered in Totem Galaxy,” the Netherworld General said.

“Milord, may I ask how strong that man is?” the Netherworld Envoy asked.

“I don’t know the details, but just like the man with an ape, he isn’t someone whom we can deal with. Even the elders whom I have invited over from the Netherworld Sect chose to retreat from the ancient remnant upon encountering the man with an axe and the man with an ape. From the moment they appeared, it was no longer safe for us to remain in the vicinity of that ancient remnant,” the Netherworld General replied.

*Chapter 5023: He Is Your Son, Right?*

The Netherworld Envoy fell silent, but his breathing hastened. It was apparent just how shocked he was by the news from his rapid breathing.

“Why would such figures suddenly appear in the Eastern Region? Hasn’t the Eastern Region already fallen into decline?” the Netherworld Envoy asked.

His question sounded like a shocked exclamation rather than one posed to the Netherworld General. He thought that it was unreasonable for experts of such caliber to appear in the Eastern Region.

“Don’t look down on the Eastern Region. Be it in the Ancient Era or the start of the current era, the Eastern Region was the strongest in the entire world of cultivation. It might have fallen into decline since then, but there are many opportunities lying in wait here. Numerous monstrously talented individuals have risen from the Eastern Region too.

“I wouldn’t be too surprised if there are exceptionally powerful experts lurking in the Eastern Region,” the Netherworld General said.

“Milord, based on what I got from the man with an ax, he seems to be from the Nine Souls Galaxy. Is the man with an ape from the Nine Souls Galaxy too?” the Netherworld Envoy asked.

“That’s hard to say. Based on what I’ve heard, that wasn’t the first time our Netherworld Sect encountered the man with an ape,” the Netherworld General replied.

“We have a history with the man with an ape?” the Netherworld Envoy asked in astonishment.

“I heard bits and pieces from the other elders, but I’m not sure if he’s the same person. However, if he really is, it would mean that he’s terrifyingly strong. That’s also the reason why our Netherworld Sect chose not to pursue the matter at the ancient remnant. Otherwise, our Netherworld Sect might have to pay a hefty price for that,” the Netherworld General replied.

That explained why the Netherworld Sect didn’t go after the man with an ape despite having an important ancient remnant stolen from them, just that the reason sounded even more shocking to the Netherworld Envoy.

He knew just how powerful the Netherworld Sect was. There were only so few people who could intimidate the Netherworld Sect in the vast world of cultivation.

“Milord, what about the matter concerning the Pill Dao Immortal Sect?” the Netherworld Envoy asked.

He came here in hopes that the Netherworld General would step in on his behalf to deal with the middle-aged man from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect.

“If Chu Feng is a member of our Netherworld Sect, we won’t let this matter go easily. However, he isn’t a member of our sect yet, so we aren’t obliged to help him.

“Don’t worry, since that man with an axe has stepped in to demand that you release Chu Feng, it likely means that he has been keeping an eye on Chu Feng from the shadows. He’ll step in if Chu Feng really finds himself in a desperate position,” the Netherworld General said.

“But...” n-(0ve**l**l1n

The Netherworld Envoy was put in a spot.

“But what? Did you promise Chu Feng that you would help him?” the Netherworld General asked.

“Milord, I have indeed given out such a promise,” the Netherworld Envoy admitted.

“Haaa...”

The Netherworld General shook his head. He walked over to the Netherworld Envoy’s side and patted the latter’s shoulders.

“Never forget that you’re a Netherworld Envoy of our Netherworld Sect. You have to constantly remind yourself of the mission you have chosen to take on. Don’t let secular desires get in your way,” the Netherworld General said.

“Milord, I understand,” the Netherworld Envoy replied.

“Bring that lass back to the Netherworld Sect. You’ll be rewarded for your merit.”

The Netherworld General passed Song Yun back to the Netherworld Envoy.

“Thank you, milord.”

The Netherworld Envoy took Song Yun back and bowed deeply out of gratitude. He knew that the Netherworld General could have snatched his credit, but the latter didn’t do so.

Not everyone in the Netherworld Sect was as noble as this Netherworld General.

...

Meanwhile, Chu Feng was still waiting for the Netherworld Envoy by the lake.

Out of curiosity, he tried to examine the lake, but there was something unusual about the lake that disallowed him from peering through it even with his Heaven’s Eye. As a result, he was unaware of the conversation that occurred at the bottom of the lake.

Fortunately, it didn't take long for the Netherworld Envoy to emerge from the lake.

"My apologies, Chu Feng. Our Netherworld Sect has no intention of meddling in this matter," the Netherworld Envoy gave a direct reply to Chu Feng.

"Elder, there's no need for you to apologize to me. I'm grateful that you were willing to help me in the first place."

The outcome was different from what Chu Feng had been promised, but he didn't blame the Netherworld Envoy for it. It was not as if the Netherworld Envoy owed him anything, so he had every right to choose not to help him.

It would have been childish and entitled of Chu Feng to expect the Netherworld Envoy to unconditionally help him.

"You're a person of great luck. I believe that you'll be able to overcome this crisis even without the aid of our Netherworld Sect," the Netherworld Envoy said.

Just as the Netherworld General had said, if Chu Feng had the man with an axe backing him, it was unlikely that any danger would befall him. Thus, he believed that Chu Feng should be able to resolve his current problems without a hitch.

After all, the man with an axe was even stronger than the Netherworld General. The like of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect wasn't a threat at all.

In fact, he thought that there was a chance that the man was spying on Chu Feng at this very moment.

...

Little did the Netherworld Envoy know that the man with the axe didn't follow Chu Feng.

He was currently inside an underground palace located deep inside an Ordinary Realm of the Nine Souls Galaxy. The palace was small but extremely old.

He was together with the little boy.

The little boy sat in the middle of the palace, and a powerful formation was currently operating with him at the center.

Chu Feng would have been shocked to see this formation, for he would have known how formidable it was as a world spiritist himself. It felt as if all energies in the world would be completely devoured by the formation.

Soon enough, a green aura started emerging from the formation. It was identical to the one inside the gourd that Sima Xiangtu had shown Lord Taibai of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect. It was just that the green aura puffing from the formation was in a much greater quantity.

As the green aura accumulated, the underground palace started to tremble intensely.

Bam!

A dull thud suddenly echoed.

The middle-aged man had simply stomped his leg lightly, and the trembling came to a halt. At the same time, the green aura started seeping into the boy's body.

It appeared that the boy was cultivating using the green aura.

Meanwhile, the middle-aged man took down the wood axe from his back and slowly traced his finger through it before abruptly stopping on a crack. It was a small one, but it made this axe imperfect.

As he touched the small crack, his eyes slowly turned contemplative. Complex emotions surfaced on his calm face.

"Chu Feng is your son, right?" the middle-aged man mumbled to himself.

## **Chapter 5024: The Imprisoned**

The Netherworld Envoy left by himself right after informing Chu Feng of the verdict. He didn't take Chu Feng with him, so the latter had to leave on his own.

Before he left the Ordinary Realm, he tried leaping into the lake to see if he could find the person whom the Netherworld Envoy spoke about. He could tell that the Netherworld Envoy was intending to help him, and the reason why he

changed his mind afterward was likely because he had received an order not to intervene.

So, Chu Feng wanted to see if he could change the mind of the person residing inside this black lake.

It was just that he couldn't find anything at all after leaping into the lake, so he had no choice but to give up on the attempt. In the end, he could only look for an ancient teleportation formation and leave this place by himself.

To be honest, he felt incredibly helpless at the moment. The situation had turned for the worse, after all.

He was only planning to save Xian Miaomiao at the start, but he discovered that Master Yin Ren was actually Sima Xiangtu, and the latter had captured his master, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist. Even Shengguang Baimei, the Lady of Dao Sea, and the Godwish Grandmother had been taken away by him.

Shengguang Baimei and the others didn't have any grudges with Sima Xiangtu, and they had only gotten involved in order to help Chu Feng. In a sense, Chu Feng was partially responsible for why they ended up getting captured by Sima Xiangtu.

This made him feel extremely conscience-stricken.

The problem was that he didn't even have the strength to go against Sima Xiangtu yet, let alone the one from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect who was backing him.

He had encountered many powerful enemies and dangerous situations in his long journey as a cultivator, but he had always been able to find ways to overcome them. However, the current situation left him feeling powerless.

He was still thinking that he could fall back on the Holy Monarch of the Holy Valley in the worst-case scenario, but it didn't seem like the Holy Monarch would be a match for the Pill Dao Immortal Sect.

As for the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect's sectmaster, she had already made her stance clear from the very start that she wouldn't intervene in this matter.

Chu Feng only had himself to count on right now, but the problem was that he didn't have the strength to oppose those people.

“Elder, please help me. I’m willing to do anything for you as long as you help me save them.”

Left with no choice, Chu Feng could only plead with the Divine Deer inside his body. He knew that it was unlikely that the Divine Deer would help, but there was nothing else he could do.

Lives were at stake here. Even if there was just a slim possibility, he had to give it a try.

“Brat, you should cut it with the nonsense. Even if I’m willing to help you, do you know where they are now?”

The Divine Deer actually answered to Chu Feng’s relentless pleas, just that her impatient answer revealed a practical problem.

Even if Chu Feng had the means to save his master and the others, he had no idea where Sima Xiangtu was at. Sima Xiangtu clearly was up to something, so there was no way he would obediently return to the Nine Souls Sacred Clan.

Before Chu Feng could answer, the Divine Deer quickly added, “Even if you know where they are, I won’t help you either.

“I’ll also offer you some words of advice. It’s never too late for a gentleman to exact his vengeance. You don’t have the means to deal with them right now. You might want to consider not rushing to your death like a buffoon.

“Your friends might die if you don’t head over to save them, but you’ll at least have an opportunity to avenge them as long as you’re around. The best thing you can do for them is to stay alive. If you leap to your death too, your friends will probably die with grudges.

“I’ve already made my words clear, so make your own choice. I don’t want you to disturb my rest anymore.”

The Divine Deer trailed off after saying those words. No matter what Chu Feng said afterward, the Divine Deer no longer gave an answer.

Chu Feng fully understood the logic behind what the Divine Deer had said, but he wouldn’t be him if he really did that. Thus, he gave no thought to the Divine Deer’s advice at all.

Even if it spelled death, he was determined to save his master and the others. In the end, he decided to make his way to the Nine Souls Sacred Clan.

Even though it was unlikely that Sima Xiangtu would return to the Nine Souls Sacred Clan, it was the one possible place where he could find clues regarding the other party.

Perhaps the world was moved by Chu Feng's determination, but he received a piece of news before he reached the Nine Souls Sacred Clan.

The Nine Souls Sacred Clan had suddenly announced that Master Yin Ren had forged an incredible pill that would be helpful to all cultivators. As the overseers of the Nine Souls Galaxy, the Nine Souls Sacred Clan was obliged to help all cultivators of the Nine Souls Galaxy advance their cultivation.

Thus, all Exalted level cultivators and above of the Nine Souls Galaxy were entitled to a pill personally forged by Master Yin Ren, and the location was none other than the Nine Souls Sacred Clan. n-(0ve**l**1n

This news caused an uproar throughout the Nine Souls Galaxy because the Nine Souls Sacred Clan had never done anything like this before.

Chu Feng had a feeling that Sima Xiangtu was behind this, and the pill likely spelled nothing good. However, regardless of what Sima Xiangtu was up to, the news itself strongly suggested that he had returned to the Nine Souls Sacred Clan.

It was good news to Chu Feng, who was desperate to save his master and the others.

Due to the news, a huge number of cultivators made their way over to the Nine Souls Sacred Clan, and the latter welcomed them warmly.

Chu Feng noticed the reluctance on the faces of the Nine Souls Sacred Clan, suggesting that their cordial attitude was feigned. After all, this was the lofty Nine Souls Sacred Clan they were talking about. How could they be happy about having to entertain Utmost Exalted level and Exalted level cultivators, whom they deem to be no different from ants?

This hinted that the current Nine Souls Sacred Clan was under Sima Xiangtu's control, or else there was no way they would do something like this.



In view of the peculiar situation, Chu Feng had no choice but to do something highly risky—disguising his appearance.

Back then, Zhao Hong was kidnapped by a mysterious individual, who left behind a piece of news threatening him to never disguise himself anymore. Otherwise, the mysterious individual would kill Zhao Hong and the members of the Chu Heavenly Clan.

While Chu Feng had no idea who the mysterious individual was, he did as he was told and journeyed the world with his true appearance. He had faced a lot of trouble due to that, but he had no other choice since the safety of his friend and family was at stake.

However, exceptional situations called for exceptional measures.

If he wanted to save his master and the others, he had no choice but to disguise himself. Otherwise, he would be captured before he could even get to them. After all, he was faced with extremely powerful enemies.

Even Sima Xiangtu was beyond Chu Feng's current means to deal with, let alone the man from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect.

It was fortunate that there was a large number of people surging into the Nine Souls Sacred Clan. Even though the Nine Souls Sacred Clan had made preparations beforehand, they still struggled to deal with so many cultivators at once. This left plenty of room for Chu Feng to maneuver around.

He was able to gather quite a few clues easily.

He quickly found out that there was a discreet prison in the Nine Souls Sacred Clan that had recently upped its security. Energy traces of a formation had been leaking out from it over the last few days.

Deducing that it was the most likely location where Shengguang Baimei and the others were imprisoned, he decided to sneak into there to take a look.

There were a lot of guards stationed outside, making infiltrating the prison a highly difficult task. However, when he finally got in after quite a bit of effort, he realized that there were hardly any guards on the inside.

The prison was massive, but the cells were all empty except for one. The formation energy was coming from that single cell.

The formation energy had blocked off sight into the cell, such that Chu Feng couldn't see what was happening inside. All he could hear were screams of agony.

Judging from the other party's voice, he was certain that it was someone he was unacquainted with.

"I got the wrong place... but who is the one imprisoned here?"

Chu Feng was perplexed but he didn't want to get into unnecessary trouble at this juncture, so he decided to leave the area. However, just as he was about to do so, the formation energy started dissipating, and the screams of pain halted.

"Sima Xiangtu, how dare you usurp my position? You better kill me, or else I'll rip off your skin, tear out your tendons, and torture you for an eternity to come!!!"

The furious cry made Chu Feng's footsteps stall to a halt. He had a good idea who was the one being locked inside the cell.

### **Chapter 5025: The One Who Could Save the Nine Souls Galaxy**

Chu Feng looked into the cell once more. This time, he could see what was inside because the formation energy shrouding it had dissipated

The first thing that came into his sight was the formation that filled the cells of the wall. It was an extremely powerful formation, and it was not an easy feat to construct it either.

At the very least, it was not something Chu Feng was capable of constructing with his current means.

A man was trapped at the heart of the formation. He appeared to be in his forties, but his hair had turned completely white. His hands and feet were shackled by chains extending out from the formation. He hung limply in the air with his limbs spread wide.

There were no injuries on him, but he looked emaciated. His cheeks were sunken, and it looked like he was in a terrible state. That was likely to be a result of the torture he had been put through.

Chu Feng already had a good idea who the man inside the cell was.

“You are the Nine Souls Sacred Clan’s Clan Chief?” Chu Feng asked.

He still wanted to verify his guess.

The other party was unaware of Chu Feng’s presence. It was only upon hearing his voice that he slowly raised his head. His movements were painfully laborious due to his severely weakened state.

Nevertheless, the flames of wrath could be seen burning in his eyes.

The moment he saw Chu Feng, a hint of surprise surfaced in his angry eyes.

“You... aren’t a lackey of Yin Ren... Who are you?” the man asked.

He didn’t answer Chu Feng’s question directly, but his response was more than enough to verify his identity.

“You really are the Nine Souls Sacred Clan’s Clan Chief? Who could have thought that the lofty Nine Souls Sacred Clan’s Clan Chief would actually be imprisoned and tortured in your very clan’s own cell? This must be retribution,” Chu Feng scoffed with a contemptuous smile.

Even though Xian Miaomiao was currently in Sima Xiangtu’s grasp, the culprit behind her current state was still none other than the Nine Souls Sacred Clan’s Clan Chief.

“W-who are you?” the Nine Souls Sacred Clan’s Clan Chief asked.

“I am Xian Miaomiao’s friend, Chu Feng,” Chu Feng replied.

“Chu Feng? That’s not right. Chu Feng doesn’t look like that,” the Nine Souls Sacred Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“Take a closer look then.”

Chu Feng’s appearance swiftly reverted back to its original appearance.

“You really are Chu Feng? What are you doing here? Ah... You must have found out about Miaomiao’s affairs and came here to find her,” the Nine Souls Sacred Clan’s Clan Chief said.

He was aware of Chu Feng's appearance even though it was their first meeting.

"I'm indeed here to save Miaomiao, but I'm delighted to see that you're receiving the punishment you deserve," Chu Feng replied.

"It looks like you're aware of what happened. Chu Feng, I know that I have let down my younger sister and Miaomiao. I admit to all of the crimes I have committed, and I'm willing to be punished for them too. However, a huge calamity is about to befall our Nine Souls Sacred Clan.

"I hope that you can do me a favor and find someone in my stead. That person is the only one who can save our Nine Souls Galaxy. Chu Feng, I'm begging you. For the masses of the Nine Souls Galaxy, you have to take this trip for me," the Nine Souls Sacred Clan's Clan Chief pleaded.

He was the lofty Nine Souls Sacred Clan's Clan Chief. Unless forced to a corner, he would have never taken such a subservient attitude.

Chu Feng's true motive was to find out more about Sima Xiangtu from the Nine Souls Sacred Clan's Clan Chief, but he didn't expect the latter to utter such words. So, he decided not to waste any time and enquire deeper into it.

"Who is the person you're speaking of?"

"This person is..."

But before the Nine Souls Sacred Clan's Clan Chief could finish his words, he suddenly became extremely weak before losing consciousness.

"Hey, wake up. Don't fall asleep at a time like this."

Chu Feng quickly released his spirit power to set up a recovery formation, hoping to heal the feeble Nine Souls Sacred Clan's Clan Chief.

Weng!

But as soon as his spirit power seeped through the cell, the formation inside whirred into action once more. That very instant, Chu Feng sensed the aura of death.

The formation inside the cell had released a terrifying surge of energy with the intent to not torture but kill. What made things worse was that this surge of energy wasn't directed at the Nine Souls Sacred Clan's Clan Chief but Chu Feng.

There must have been some sort of mechanism in the formation, and Chu Feng had triggered the mechanism. That was why the formation was trying to take his life.

To Chu Feng's despair, the formation was far too strong that he didn't even have the chance to escape. He could only helplessly wait for his death.

Pah!

At that critical moment, Chu Feng felt a hand grabbing his shoulder.

Shoosh!

The surroundings began rushing past him. In a matter of moments, he was already out of the prison and away from the Nine Souls Sacred Clan. By the time he finally came to a halt, he was already in a faraway location.

He scanned his surroundings and found that he was in the middle of a small hill filled with verdant grass. Beside him stood a man.

It was this man who had saved him from the grasp of danger earlier on.

It was just that this man was dressed in a loose hooded robe that covered all of his features, so Chu Feng wasn't able to make out his appearance. In fact, he wouldn't even have been able to make out whether the other party was a man or a woman if not for the wide palm he felt on his shoulder earlier on.

If one thing was for certain, this man was extremely powerful. He had to be at pinnacle Martial Exalted level at the very minimum.

"Elder, thank you for saving my life."

Chu Feng lowered his head and thanked the other party. If not for the other party, he might have lost his life in the prison.

However, something shocking happened right after.

"It's too early to say thanks. If you wish to save your friends, I can help you."

The other party offered help to Chu Feng, something that he desperately lacked at the moment. That was no different from delivering coal in the midst of a snowstorm!

However, that was not what Chu Feng was surprised by. He was more surprised by the other party's voice.

He had deduced from the other party's hand that he was a man, but the voice coming from the hooded robe belonged to a woman!

### **Chapter 5026: Lush Immortal City**

"Elder, you're willing to help me save my master and the others?" Chu Feng asked despite not knowing anything about the other party.

Just like how the Nine Souls Sacred Clan's Clan Chief looked at him with hopeful eyes earlier, he directed the same gaze toward the mysterious hooded figure before him.

"That'll depend on you. However, I can point a way out for you," the mysterious hooded figure said.

Chu Feng felt his heart sinking upon hearing those words. He thought that the other party would directly make a move for him, but she was only pointing a way out for him. Nevertheless, he was thankful to the other party.

Considering that he had no clues at the moment, he would be grateful to the other party if she could tell him where his master was imprisoned.

"Elder, please tell me where my master and the others are imprisoned," Chu Feng said.

"You won't be able to save them even if I tell you where they are imprisoned," the mysterious hooded figure shook her head and replied.

It was then that Chu Feng realized that he had mistaken the meaning of the other party's words. When the mysterious hooded figure said that she could point a way out for him, she didn't mean that she would tell him where the Ox-nosed Old Daoist and the others were imprisoned.

"Elder, may I ask what do you mean when you said that you would point a way out for me?" Chu Feng asked curiously.

“Sima Xiangtu is backed by the Pill Dao Immortal Sect. You should be aware of that, right?” the hooded figure asked.

“I’m aware of that,” Chu Feng replied.

“The Pill Dao Immortal Sect came here as a group. You’re still too weak to directly confront Sima Xiangtu or the cultivators of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect at the moment, so you’ll have to look for an alternative method. I happen to know the whereabouts of a young master of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect who came here to frolic around.

“That young master is the son of the group’s leader. If you’re able to capture him and use him to threaten Sima Xiangtu, Sima Xiangtu will have no choice but to release your friends,” the hooded figure said.

“Elder, where is the young master you spoke of?” Chu Feng asked.

“It’s written here. I’ve already pointed out a way for you. Whether you’ll be able to succeed or not depends on you.”

The hooded figure reached into her sleeves and took out a scroll. Chu Feng quickly received the scroll from her and unfurled it.

The scroll contained a location and the painting of a man. The man had an ordinary appearance, but he gave off a sinister air. There was a name right beside the painting: Jiang Kongping.

Clearly, Jiang Kongping was the young master of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect that the hooded figure was talking about.

“Elder, thank...”

Chu Feng rolled up the scroll and thanked the hooded figure, only to find that the latter had disappeared.

“Elder?”

Chu Feng called out for the hooded figure, but he didn’t receive any answers. It appeared that she had already left the area.

That left him with even more doubts.

The hooded figure seemed to have a deep understanding of Chu Feng, or else she wouldn't have known that Chu Feng was aware of the link between Sima Xiangtu and the Pill Dao Immortal Sect. This meant that she had been observing Chu Feng all this while.

Chu Feng had no recollections of meeting this hooded figure before, meaning that the latter was a stranger. It was weird how invested she was into this matter. Stringing the clues together, he eventually made a deduction.

Could this hooded figure be the one whom the Nine Souls Sacred Clan's Clan Chief mentioned that could save the Nine Souls Galaxy?

There was no way for him to verify his guess at the moment, so he could only go on his way with a mind filled with doubts.

He thought that the solution provided by the hooded figure was actually quite decent. If he could capture the young master of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect named Jiang Kongping, there was a good chance that Sima Xiangtu would obediently release all of the captives.

It was fortunate that even though Jiang Kongping was in another realm, it wasn't a long journey away from where he currently was. It didn't take him long to arrive there.

He quickly made his way toward a place known as Lush Immortal City.

After some investigation, he found that Lush Immortal City was quite a unique place. It used to be an ancient remnant in the Ancient Era, and there was a powerful barrier cast over it that allowed access only to the juniors.

The treasures inside the ancient remnant had already been taken away, but it was remodeled into a place for the juniors to fool around at.

In other words, even if the Pill Dao Immortal Sect had dispatched experts to protect Jiang Kongping, they could only guard the outside of the city. This made Chu Feng much more confident about capturing Jiang Kongping.

It was not too far-fetched to say that Chu Feng was currently the strongest junior of the Eastern Region given his current cultivation. Unless the young master of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect possessed exceptional skills, he wouldn't pose a problem to Chu Feng at all.



Knowing that his friends' lives were at stake, he dared not to waste any time and rushed straight ahead. Along the way, he flew by several cities and villages, and he couldn't help but notice loud sobbings.

Through overhearing their conversations, he learned that they were in grief because their daughters had been taken away from them. The ones who kidnapped their daughters were from Lush Immortal City, and they did so in broad daylight. They claimed that these women would be serving esteemed guests, and they would return with great riches in the near future.

He could practically hear crying in every single village and city he passed by. It made him shudder to think just many more victims there were out there.

“Could it be the doing of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect's young master? Is it yet another beast who exploits the weak?”

Chu Feng didn't stop by to clarify with the victims, but he already had his guesses.

### **Chapter 5027: Entering the City**

Chu Feng had met many wealthy young masters who acted like beasts. Judging from the reactions of the populace living near Lush Immortal City, he reckoned that such events didn't occur frequently in the past.

Otherwise, they wouldn't have continued living there.

There must be some kind of trigger that caused such tragedies to happen all of a sudden, and Chu Feng couldn't help but relate it to the young master of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect.

He soon arrived outside Lush Immortal City, which was a city floating amidst the clouds. It didn't seem like a heavenly palace despite its size due to its tattered appearance. The walls and buildings inside were also made out of soil.

In fact, many of the walls had cracks on them, and some of the infrastructures within the city appeared to be on the verge of collapse. Nevertheless, there was still a huge crowd moving to and fro this tattered city.

Just by standing there, Chu Feng could spot an endless stream of cultivators entering and leaving the city. All of them were juniors.

Chu Feng was currently scanning the perimeter of Lush Immortal City to see if there were anyone from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect in the vicinity. Under normal circumstances, it would be safe to assume that a young master of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect had people protecting him.

After a quick look around, Chu Feng began making his way toward the city. Before he could step in, he felt some kind of mysterious energy in front of him coming from a formation.

To be clear, there was an ancient formation around the city that emanated the aura of the Ancient Era, but the one that Chu Feng had passed through wasn't it. He could tell that the formation was constructed in recent days.

As a world spiritist himself, Chu Feng could tell that it was a formation that scanned one's martial power. Most likely, his cultivation level had already been exposed.

"There's indeed something going on."

Chu Feng proceeded deeper into the city as if nothing had happened, but he already had an idea of what was going on.

The formation was actually rather discreet even though Chu Feng was able to detect it. It proved that the world spiritist behind the formation was fairly powerful. It was hard to believe that a world spiritist of that caliber would be so bored as to construct a formation around Lush Immortal City for no good reason.

Thus, he guessed that the formation around Lush Immortal City was constructed by those from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect in order to surveil the people entering the city.

Chu Feng was right.

There was a floating warship hidden from sight outside Lush Immortal City, and there were quite a few people gathered at its bow. They were from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect.

Most of them stood at attention, indicating that they were guards, but there were two of them who were clearly of high standing.

One of them was a black-haired elder with his long hair pinned above his head. He was advanced in age, but his cheeks retained a healthy glow that made him look youthful.

Beside him was a white-haired elder. He had his hair scattered all around like a ferocious lion. His eyes were closed, but his sharp snowy eyebrows gave off an intimidating appearance. He appeared to be taking a brief rest instead of cultivating.

From the moment Chu Feng stepped into Lush Immortal City, the white-haired elder opened his eyes and stared at him.

“Milord, what’s wrong?” the black-haired elder asked.

“A rank four Martial Exalted level cultivator has just entered Lush Immortal City,” the white-haired elder replied.

“A rank four Martial Exalted level junior? Does the eastern junior even have a prodigy of such caliber? Could he be from the other galaxies?” the black-haired elder asked.

“There is such a possibility... The question is what is he doing here?” the white-haired elder said contemplatively.

“Is he here for young master Kongping?” the black-haired elder asked worriedly.

“Hahaha!”

The white-haired elder burst into laughter upon hearing those words.

“Even though young master Kongping is playful, his talent is top-notch in our Pill Dao Immortal Sect. No matter how indolent he is, he’s not someone whom a mere rank four Martial Exalted level cultivator could deal with. You need not worry about that.

“Putting aside a rank four Martial Exalted level cultivator, even a rank five couldn’t hope to injure young master Kongping!” the white-haired elder said confidently.

“That’s true. There’s no need for us to worry given young master Kongping’s strength. I must have really gotten foolish to actually worry about young

master Kongping over a mere rank four Martial Exalted level cultivator,” the black-haired elder said.

The white-haired elder closed his eyes once more.

Meanwhile, Chu Feng had entered Lush Immortal City, and he found that it was much larger than he had thought. There were many entertainment avenues and cultivation spots inside it.

Out of fear of alarming the enemy, he didn't take out Jiang Kongping's painting and go around asking the crowd on the street for his whereabouts. Instead, he spread his spirit power out thin to listen into the crowd's conversation so as to gather intelligence.

There were many people in the city, so there was a lot of noise. Fortunately, Chu Feng's mind was strong enough to filter out the useless ones.

Anyone else in the same position would have gone berserk attempting the same method.

It was just that there was no information about Jiang Kongping. While he was listening in to the conversations of others, he arrived at the corner of the street.

There, he found a bunch of people gathered around a tall chair. The chair was ten meters tall, such that it was possible to see it from a distance away despite the crowd around it.

A lady was sitting on the chair. She had an ordinary appearance and was dressed like a little beggar. She held a crystal ball between her hands.

The crystal ball was around the size of a palm, and a peculiar surge of energy was flowing through it.

Chu Feng widened his eyes in astonishment. He sensed that the energy inside the crystal ball had the power to peer through fate. It was not by luck that he had made his way here. Rather, he had overheard from information that had piqued his curiosity, and that led his feet here.

The woman on the chair was prophesying the future of the Nine Souls Galaxy. Thus far, she had already proclaimed that a calamity would soon befall it, and

the next thing she was going to prophesy was whether the calamity could be resolved.

The crowd was gathered around her not because they believed her words. They were simply joining in the commotion. After all, one would have to be really naive to believe the words of a random self-proclaimed seer foretelling an imminent apocalypse. *n--Ovel*

Weng!

The crystal ball suddenly glowed brilliantly. The woman took in a deep breath, and the light drifted into her mouth in a whiff of smoke.

Then, she opened her eyes.

Despite the woman's ordinary appearance, her eyes were incredibly beautiful. She had long eyelashes, and her pupils were filled with spirit. On top of that, she had heterochromatic eyes. Her left eye was black but her right eye was white.

### **Chapter 5028: Black-robed Man**

"So how is your prophecy going, little gypsy? Will our Nine Souls Galaxy survive this calamity you speak of?"

Quite a few people asked her about the conclusion when the woman finally opened her eyes. It was just that their tone was not one of curiosity but teasing.

No one believed her words at all, thinking that she was just a joke.

It was hard to tell whether the woman was too innocent to notice that they were making fun of her or not, but she didn't lose her temper at their teasing. Instead, she revealed a heartened smile.

"There's no need to worry. It turned out to be an empty scare. Someone will put a stop to the calamity that will soon befall our Nine Souls Galaxy, and the person is currently inside Lush Immortal City," the woman said.

"Hoh! Your story is getting more outlandish. You said that the calamity will be resolved by a person in this city. Why don't you point that person out for us then?"

The crowd began probing deeper into it.

“I’m afraid that’s beyond my means, but it’s a huge relief that the calamity will be resolved,” the woman replied with a smile.

Her expression revealed earnest joy and relief.

“Why don’t you tell us what kind of calamity is it, and how will it be resolved?” someone else asked.

“That’s also beyond my means to prophesy,” the woman replied.

“Shit! You might as well have said nothing at all, you damned charlatan!”

All of a sudden, someone hurled malicious words at the woman. Following that, a bearded man leaped over to the woman’s side and grabbed her collar, forcefully lifting her up from her chair.

“Speak, you scammer! What’s your motive for spreading such falsehoods here? Are you trying to dupe us of our money?”

The bearded man emanated the aura of a rank six Utmost Exalted level cultivator, which was fairly decent amongst those gathered in the vicinity.

“I’m not spreading falsehoods! I’m not trying to dupe you of your money!”

The woman shook her head nervously.

“Oh? Are you here to catch our attention here? Why don’t you take a look in the mirror? Even the ugliest servant in my house is much more beautiful than you. Know your own place!”

The bearded man started to publicly humiliate the woman, and his words induced laughter from the crowd.

That brought a frown to Chu Feng’s face. The ugliness of human nature had started to manifest here, and he particularly hated it when the strong exploited the weak.

“I’m really not lying to you. Everything I said are facts! I don’t have any ulterior motives. If anything, I only want to inform you all about it. Milord, I’m begging you. Please let me off!”

The woman's complexion turned pale, and her voice began to quiver. That made her look extremely pitiful.

However, there was hardly anyone who had any sympathy for this woman. Only disdainful sneers were heard as they waited for the woman to be punished.

"Let you off? If you aren't duping us of our wealth or attracting our attention, it can only mean that you're trying to make a fool out of us. I can let you off, but why don't you ask everyone else if they feel the same way?"

The bearded man turned to the crowd.

"That woman dared to make a fool of us and waste our time. How can we let her off so easily? She needs to pay the price!"

"Yes, she needs to pay the price!"

The woman started tearing up out of sheer fright.

Much to everyone's surprise, the tears flowing out of her white eye were white whereas the tears flowing out of her black eye were black.

"What's with your tears? You're a freak! Even your tears are different from that of an ordinary human. You don't look like anything much, but I guess you at least have a pair of unusual eyes. I've played with countless women, but this is my first time seeing one like you.

"Why don't I give you a chance to make amends? You should know that I'm sacrificing myself for your sake here. All you have to do is to serve me. If everyone feels that you're sincere about making amends, we'll let you go. What do the rest of you say?" the bearded man asked the crowd.

Some of the women below thought that the bearded man was being too shameless, so they turned around and left. Some of the men walked away too.

However, there was not a single person amongst the crowd who spoke up for the woman. Instead, most eyes started glowing in excitement. From the cheers, it was apparent that most people agreed with the bearded man's proposal.

“To think that no one is interfering with such atrocities happening in broad daylight. It looks like Lush Immortal City is a lawless land,” Chu Feng remarked with a deep sigh.

He couldn't stand these people bullying that woman, but he chose not to make a move because he wanted to see if anyone would intervene to stop the bearded man. After all, he reckoned that it would cause quite a huge commotion when he found the young master of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect later on.

In truth, he was glad to see that no one was intervening. This meant that no one would cause a fuss even if he made a huge disturbance later on.

So, he turned to look at the bearded man with a vicious look in his eyes.

He wasn't acquainted with the woman, so he couldn't tell whether the woman's prophecy was real or not. However, as a man, how could he watch a woman being taken advantage of in broad daylight?

“Let her go!”

But just as Chu Feng was about to make a move, a bellow suddenly echoed from the crowd.

The crowd immediately parted to reveal a man.

He was dressed in a black robe that was stitched together by many pieces of black cloth, and it extended to his head and palms. It would have been impossible to make out his gender if not for his masculine voice. The only thing that could be seen was his long black ponytail that fluttered outside.

“Hm? Someone actually dares to get in my way? Are you in a group with this woman? Do you know who I am?” the bearded man threatened fearlessly.

Pu!

With a dull thud, the bearded man was sent flying into the distance.

When the bearded man finally landed on the ground, the crowd was shocked to discover that there was a gaping hole in his body. When someone nervously walked forward to check on the body, he realized that the bearded man had breathed his last.



He was dead!

And the culprit was none other than the black-robed man.

The crowd plunged into silence. Terrified eyes gathered on the black-robed man.

They were shocked not by the black-robed man's ability to kill the bearded man in a single strike but by the aura he had emanated that very instant.

The black-robed man was a rank five Martial Exalted level cultivator! That meant that he was easily the strongest junior of the entire Nine Souls Galaxy.

The crowd's first reaction was to guess the background of this black-robed man, deducing whether he was a young master of the Nine Souls Sacred Clan or the closed-door disciple of some renowned expert.

Meanwhile, the black-robed man cast a sweeping gaze across the crowd.

“Listen well! None of you are to cause trouble for this lady anymore, or else I'll take your life!”

### **Chapter 5029: Interesting Inclinations**

The black-robed man left the scene after roaring at the crowd.

The crowd dared not to make a single squeak or move in the least. They feared that a single movement from them would provoke the black-robed man into taking their life.

Chu Feng was the only one who dared to stare straight at the black-robed man.

He didn't notice the black-robed man at the start, but upon careful examination, he noticed that the black robe made from stitching multiple black cloths together was actually a treasure. He couldn't tell what it was, but it was unlikely to be anything ordinary.

“I wonder if he is Jiang Kongping.”

That was the first deduction Chu Feng arrived at. Even if that wasn't the case, the black-robed man was likely to be a member of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect.

It was hard to imagine that a junior as strong as him was from the Eastern Region.

“Hm?”

Chu Feng’s eyebrows suddenly shot up.

He had been continuously gathering information from Lush Immortal City while this commotion was ongoing, but he just caught hold of an interesting piece of news.

The women who had been recently captured were currently being sent to a single location under the escort of guards. Chu Feng thought that there was a good chance that the young master of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect was at that location.

Without any hesitation, he began making his way there.

The black-robed man had already walked quite a distance away by then, but as soon as Chu Feng took his leave, he suddenly halted his footsteps and turned around. The gaze fell upon where Chu Feng was previously standing.

Meanwhile, Chu Feng had already arrived at where the women were gathered. Just as he had expected, these women were all quite young, and they were all ravishing beauties. It was just that their faces were stained with tears, as if they could already see the tragic fate awaiting them.

“What are you crying for? What’s awaiting you is a life filled with riches! This is an opportunity of a lifetime!”

The guards were still trying to coax the women, but their words were far too domineering, not to mention that the women didn’t trust them at all.

Chu Feng took a look around and saw that there were around a hundred women in the room. There were likely to be even more victims than this.

The realization of that left Chu Feng greatly angered. For a moment, he even thought about killing the young master of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect. A beast like that shouldn’t be allowed to live on the face of this world.

However, he chose to suppress his anger for the time being. He hadn't found out the whereabouts of the young master of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect yet. Until then, he couldn't afford to make a huge commotion.

Thus, he concealed his own presence and followed the group.

Soon, they were brought to a majestic palace. It was protected by a treasure, such that Chu Feng was unable to peer through the walls to see what was going on inside. **VE.lb(In**

He snuck into the palace and saw that there were over a thousand women inside. Most of them had weak cultivation, but they were all outstanding beauties. They were most likely the ones who had been captured earlier.

What was intriguing was that none of these women were crying. On the contrary, they were chatting harmoniously amongst themselves.

That was definitely not what Chu Feng was expecting.

From their conversation, Chu Feng soon stumbled upon the truth.

It turned out that the women were captured here not to serve anyone. Rather, they had to practice a peculiar dance for an esteemed guest. This dance was not easy to master, such that they had to practice hard on it even with a mentor guiding them along.

The esteemed guest was rumored to be a young master, but no one seemed to know his true identity, including the dance mentors. They only knew that the young master was of high standing and possessed great powers.

On that aspect, it did seem likely that he was the young master of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect.

"Did I make a mistake here? Is the young master of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect just playful?" Chu Feng wondered.

Just then, a group of twelve people entered the palace. Their entrance immediately caught everyone's attention.

Ten of them were dressed in guard uniforms whereas the remaining two were young men. It was these two young men whom everyone's attention was centered on.

They had fair skin and dashing appearances, reminiscent of a typical gigolo. Their appearance was so beautiful that one wouldn't harbor any doubt even if they claimed to be women.

The only reason Chu Feng and the others could tell that they were men was due to their tall height and unclothed bodies.

"Milord, please let us go. I have two old parents at home to look after. I'm begging you, please let us go!"

The two men began pleading hard as soon as they were brought into the palace. Their cries sounded even more tragic than the women from before.

Some of the women appeared to know what the two men were going to be put through, such that they looked at them with eyes filled with pity.

"Don't cry. It's your fortune to be able to serve that young master. As long as you can make it out alive, you'll be entitled to a lifetime of glory and wealth!" the guards consoled them with a smile.

It was just that his smile looked sinister, and his words sounded off. It suggested that there was a chance that the two men might lose their lives.

That brought a frown to Chu Feng's face.

These two men are going to serve the young master? What kind of eccentricity is this?

The slight bit of goodwill he felt toward the mysterious young master dissipated in an instant.

The two men were brought deeper into the palace, and Chu Feng followed them as well. They passed through a long corridor before finally arriving at a sleeping chamber.

At first glance, there appeared to be nothing special about the sleeping chamber, but it was in fact suffusing with spirit power. In fact, the interiors of the sleeping chamber appeared to be a formation space.

While Chu Feng already had some idea about what to expect, he was still shocked the moment the doors to the sleeping chamber were opened. There were thirteen men inside the sleeping chamber, all unclothed.

Of them, twelve were lying lifelessly on the ground amidst puddles of blood.

The remaining one was completely unharmed. In his hand was a thorned whip, which had blood trickling down its length.

Chu Feng could tell with a glance that the man was none other than the young master of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect, Jiang Kongping.

## **Martial God Asura #Chapter 5030: A Prodigious World Spiritist - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 5030: A Prodigious World Spiritist**

### **Chapter 5030: A Prodigious World Spiritist**

“Milord, please let us go!”

The two men began pleading for mercy while struggling furiously to break free. They could already foresee their fate when they saw those corpses littered around the sleeping chamber, so how could they not be afraid?

Their cries caught Jiang Kongping’s attention. He began to examine the two of them intently.

“Oh hoh. The two of you look not too bad. Come here and have fun with me!”

With a sinister smile, Jiang Kongping pulled them into his sleeping chamber with a powerful suction force, and the doors immediately closed shut right after.

Chu Feng managed to sneak in before the doors closed.

“Hm? It looks like a rat has snuck in with you.”

The moment Chu Feng stepped into the room, Jiang Kongping directed his gaze in his direction, which was weird considering that Chu Feng had already concealed his presence using his spirit power.

However, Chu Feng wasn’t surprised by that. He had already noticed that the sleeping chamber was a formation space, so it wouldn’t be surprising that Jiang Kongping would be able to detect his presence here.

He decided not to beat around the bush and reveal himself.

“You’re Jiang Kongping, right?” Chu Feng asked.

“You know me? Seems like you aren’t from the Eastern Region. Do you have any business with me?” Jiang Kongping asked.

“You should know who Sima Xiangtu is, right?” Chu Feng asked.

“You’re his subordinate?” Jiang Kongping asked.

“I have some friends who are in his hands. I need you to come along with him so as to get him to free them,” Chu Feng said.

“Interesting! In other words, you wish to kidnap me in order to force Sima Xiangtu to release your friends?” Jiang Kongping asked.

“You can say so.”

Chu Feng shrugged nonchalantly.

“I never thought that a day would come where someone would dare to threaten me. The question is... are you qualified?”

Killing intent flashed across Jiang Kongping’s eyes.

The next moment, Chu Feng sensed spirit power gushing out from Jiang Kongping’s body, harnessing might comparable to a rank seven Martial Exalted level cultivator. It morphed into a sharp sword that sought to lop off Chu Feng’s head.

Jiang Kongping was a rank eight Dragon Transformation Sensation world spiritist.

While Chu Feng was currently at rank seven Dragon Transformation Sensation, he was able to raise his spirit power up to a level comparable to a rank seven Martial Exalted level cultivator through his Nine Dragons Saint Cloak and his world spiritist bloodline.

Thus, he chose not to resort to his martial power but his spirit power instead.

He quickly formed a layer of barrier in front of him, which resulted in Jiang Kongping’s spirit power sword slashing down on the barrier instead.

Bam! Crack!

Jiang Kongping's spirit power sword shattered into pieces, but Chu Feng's eyes also turned severe as well.

He discovered a sharp sword cut on his barrier.

It made him realize that he had underestimated Jiang Kongping. The latter was not just any ordinary rank eight Dragon Transformation Sensation world spiritist; in terms of prowess, he wasn't lacking in any way compared to Chu Feng at all.

"Oh? You're a rank eight Dragon Transformation Sensation world spiritist too? It looks like I've underestimated you. Interesting, interesting. Since that's the case, I'll have some fun with you."

Jiang Kongping formed a series of hand seals before pointing a finger at Chu Feng.

Whoosh!

A furious roar echoed.

A ferocious golden tiger manifested from Jiang Kongping and began charging at Chu Feng. It started out small, but its size continuously increased as it picked up speed. In the blink of an eye, it had already expanded to over fifty meters in length. The might it emanated was also terrifying.

"He was able to set up such a powerful offensive formation in moments?"

The formation was formidable, but the way Jiang Kongping controlled it was also masterful.

Not daring to make light of his enemy, Chu Feng quickly formed a series of hand seals and released an offensive formation of his own too.

He thrust his palm forward and formed a world spiritist gate.

Shoosh shoosh shoosh!

Countless arrows shot forth from the world spiritist gate, hurtling straight toward the ferocious tiger.

Grar!

The ferocious tiger let out a roar. It had chosen to face the arrows face-on instead of dodging them.

The arrows swiftly piled up on the tiger, causing its body to tear. Nevertheless, the tiger still continued charging forward with extreme tenacity.

Whoosh!

Seeing that things weren't to his advantage, Chu Feng quickly set up a formation on his feet to hasten his speed. He leaped into the sky and dodged the tiger's attack.

However, that wasn't enough to shake the tiger off his back. As soon as the tiger missed its attack, it turned around and pounced into the air to chase after Chu Feng, baring its fangs at him.

To make things worse, its speed was even faster than before.

Shoosh!

With a sudden flash of light, the tiger was severed into two before dissipating amidst a whiff of spirit power.

It turned out that there was a hundred-meter-long formation sword in Chu Feng's hands.

He had summoned the arrows beforehand to weaken the tiger's attack before slicing it apart with his sword, or else he would have been overpowered by the tiger instead. In fact, cracks had started appearing on his sword, making it no longer usable.

That was how powerful the formation tiger was.

"It looks like you're an expert. You were able to set up two offensive formations within such a short period of time. Not bad at all," Jiang Kongping said.

Chu Feng looked at Jiang Kongping once more and saw that he had put on his clothes. Amazingly, the Pill Dao Immortal Sect's robe made him look like a dignified gentleman.



They had barely clashed with each other earlier on, but Chu Feng realized that Jiang Kongping was not to be made light of. In fact, the latter was the strongest junior world spiritist he had encountered thus far.

Jiang Kongping's formation wielded superior prowess to Chu Feng in terms of might, which was only to be expected considering that he was from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect, a power renowned throughout the entire world of cultivation.

A prodigy that came from such a sect was bound to be outstanding.

What left Chu Feng even more surprised was that the tiger formation should have been incredibly hard to control, but Jiang Kongping was able to do it with ease.

The other party was indeed a true prodigy.

Knowing that he had encountered a powerful enemy, Chu Feng's interest was piqued. He decided to have a showdown with Jiang Kongping using spirit power.

While Chu Feng was assessing Jiang Kongping, the latter was also assessing him as well. There was admiration in his eyes, just that there was a tinge of something else mixed in it that left Chu Feng feeling incredibly uncomfortable.

### **Chapter 5031: You Have Underestimated Me Too**

"In view that you're a prodigy too, I'll give you a chance. As long as you serve me well, I'll turn a blind eye to your transgression. What do you think?" Jiang Kongping said.

There was a lecherous smile as he said those words, and he even grabbed his crotch. His intention was made very clear here.

"What is wrong with you?" Chu Feng berated.

"Well, this is what I enjoy," Jiang Kongping replied as he gestured to the dead men lying on the ground.

Chu Feng took a second glance and realized that there were lacerations on those men's nether regions too.

“I’ve seen a lot of beasts, but you’re the first one that left me feeling utterly repulsed,” Chu Feng replied.

“You sure have the guts to say that to me. Now I’m more determined than ever to make you submit to me. I’ll show you what a true man is like!”

Once again, Jiang Kongping formed a series of hand seals before pointing his finger at Chu Feng.

Whoosh!

Ferocious roars echoed from his body, but three tigers were manifested this time around. They swiftly spread out and encircled Chu Feng.

All of them moved at a much faster speed than before, and the strength they harnessed was much greater too.

“Despicable. You were setting up this formation while you were talking to me!”

Chu Feng could tell that this formation wasn’t completed on a whim. Jiang Kongping must have been secretly constructing this formation while chatting with him, or else he wouldn’t have been able to manifest three tigers at once.

He quickly constructed the same speed enhancement formation on his feet and leaped into the sky, attempting to dodge the aggression of the three tigers.

However, those three tigers had already sealed off all of his escape routes. One of them was even charging straight at him,

Chu Feng quickly manifested another spirit power sword and hacked it down on the approaching tiger.

Klang!

A jarring metallic sound echoed, and the spirit power sword was split into two. In contrast, the tiger remained completely unharmed.

The tiger opened its mouth wide and bit down on Chu Feng.

Pu!

Fresh blood splattered all over the ground.

Chu Feng was trapped in the tiger's mouth, unable to move at all. His body had been crushed by the tiger's jaws, causing blood to continuously flow from his wounds.

"Your spirit power is formidable, but it looks like your mind is lacking. The prowess of your spirit power sword is much weaker than before. But even if it's as strong as before, all it'll do is make my tigers shed a bit of fur. You should be able to tell that my Wrathful Tiger Formation is much stronger now," Jiang Kongping scoffed.

"Heh..."

However, Chu Feng let out a cold sneer and turned to look at Jiang Kongping.

"Why are you acting so arrogant when you haven't even won yet?" Chu Feng asked.

"I haven't won yet? It looks like you aren't going to admit defeat until you're at your deathbed. Very well, let's see how you'll deal with this then!"

Viciousness flickered across Jiang Kongping's eyes as he flicked his finger. In response, the tiger clamped its jaws even tighter around Chu Feng.

Pu!

Under the immense force, Chu Feng exploded into a puddle of blood.

Jiang Kongping was astonished to see that. He had controlled the force exerted by the tiger to ensure that it wasn't enough to take Chu Feng's life.

"That is...?"

To his astonishment, Chu Feng's flesh and blood were still moving despite having exploded into bits. They turned into spirit power and converged in mid-air.

It turned out that it wasn't Chu Feng's real body!

"Damn it!"

Jiang Kongping realized that he had been tricked.

Pu!

The next moment, he felt a searing sensation in his chest. He lowered his head and saw that a spirit power sword had plunged into his chest. The culprit was none other than Chu Feng.

Chu Feng was completely unscathed.

“You made use of the opportunity while we were chatting to construct a substitution formation and sneak behind me?” Jiang Kongping asked.

He had already guessed the truth, but he still wanted to verify his guess.

“What’s the point of asking when you have already figured it out?” Chu Feng replied with mocking laughter.

“Despicable fellow. You resorted to underhanded means because you dare not to confront me head-on!” Jiang Kongping roared angrily.

He was certain that Chu Feng wasn’t a match for him. He felt that he had lost not because he was weaker but that he had gotten careless.

“I admit that your formation is formidable, but a battle between world spiritists isn’t just about whose formation is stronger. It’s about utilizing each formation to its best. Surely you should understand that since you’re a world spiritist yourself?” Chu Feng asked.

“If you wish to put it that way, I’ll have no choice but to agree with you. Your control over formations is lacking in comparison to mine, but you do know how to put them to good use. You’re indeed a formidable talent.

“Unfortunately, you still lost to me today. You should start preparing yourself to serve me!”

As he said those words, a gleeful smile broke out on Jiang Kongping’s face.

Sensing that something was amiss, Chu Feng quickly withdrew his spirit power sword and backed away, but as soon as he started moving, he felt a tremendous pressure that caused his speed to slow.

It was then that he realized that he was surrounded by Jiang Kongping’s spirit power. This spirit power was denser than what was inside the Wrathful Tiger Formation.

Chu Feng quickly looked at his surroundings before widening his eyes in realization.

The sleeping chamber he was in turned out to be a formation itself. It was an imprisonment and slaughter formation. The powerful spirit power that was slowing his movement had come from it.

“You constructed this formation in advance?” Chu Feng asked.

He could sense that the formidable might behind the formation, but such a formation couldn’t have been set up in a short span of time.

“You have discerning eyes. Indeed, it took me seven days in order to construct it. I acknowledge your means. If I have not prepared this hand in advance, I might have really lost to you due to my earlier carelessness.

“Unfortunately, you stepped into my territory, so you’ll have to play by my rules. There’s no way you could stand a chance against me inside my formation. You got careless and underestimated me. Did you think that I was trash that only knows how to frolic around? Think again!

“Now, I shall teach you what a true man feels like! This is the price you’ll have to pay for underestimating me.”

Jiang Kongping licked his lips and began taking off his clothes.

“Haa...”

Chu Feng knew what he was going to do next, but he wasn’t intimidated at all. On the contrary, he let out a laugh.

“I did underestimate you, but it seems like it goes both ways,” Chu Feng said.

### **Chapter 5032: Powerful Enemy**

“Oh? Do you have a hand prepared? Give up, the formation I have here is known as the Nine Tigers Immortal Encirclement Formation. Even a prodigy like me requires seven days to construct it. You should know how formidable it is from that.

“Unless you’re a rank nine Dragon Transformation Sensation world spiritist, there’s no way you can break out of this formation,” Jiang Kongping said confidently.

“I’ll admit as much that your formation is formidable. Indeed, it would be difficult for me to overcome it with my current level of spirit power. However, I have never said that I only have my spirit power to fall back on,” Chu Feng said.

“Oh? Are you carrying treasures on you? Take it out then. I don’t believe that you would have any treasures that can overcome my Nine Tigers Immortal Encirclement Formation,” Jiang Kongping replied.

“I don’t have any treasures on me,” Chu Feng replied.

“Then what are you yapping about?” Jiang Kongping snapped.

“I’m saying that other than being a world spiritist, I’m a cultivator as well,” Chu Feng replied.

“Hahaha…”

Unexpectedly, Jiang Kongping burst into laughter after hearing Chu Feng’s words.

“I was still wondering what kind of incredible means you wield that can overcome my Nine Tigers Immortal Encirclement Formation, but it turns out that you’re merely putting on a brave front. Of course I know that you’re a cultivator! I even know your cultivation level at that.

“From the moment you stepped in here, I was able to sense your cultivation level through my Nine Tigers Immortal Encirclement Formation. You’re just a mere rank four Martial Exalted level cultivator. How do you expect to overcome my formation with that?” Jiang Kongping said.

“My cultivation is indeed at rank four Martial Exalted level, but you’ll be sorely mistaken if you think that’s my limit.”

Right after Chu Feng said those words, lightning began crackling around him. The Lightning Mark appeared on his forehead, and a glorious Lightning Armor manifested around his body. Following that, his Divine Power also revealed its prowess.

The avatars of the Azure Dragon, White Tiger, Vermilion Bird, and Black Tortoise began circling around Chu Feng.

That very instant, Chu Feng's cultivation rose all the way to rank seven Martial Exalted level.

"Woah, the Divine Punishment Mysterious Technique and Divine Power. You actually grasped both of them at once? You're more talented than I thought!"

Jiang Kongping was surprised by Chu Feng's massive power-up, but he soon narrowed his eyes sharply.

"But this should be your limit, isn't it? You're impressive to have been able to raise your cultivation level by three ranks, but what's the difference between a rank seven Martial Exalted level cultivator and a rank eight Dragon Transformation Sensation world spiritist? You still won't be able to break my Nine Tigers Immortal Encirclement Formation," Jiang Kongping said.

"Is that what you think? Allow me to open your eyes today then."

As Chu Feng spoke, he took out his Immemorial Hero's Sword.

Tzzz!

A deafening crackling noise echoed within the room, and a powerful aura rippled forth from Chu Feng. It was so powerful that Jiang Kongping hurriedly retreated several steps.

"What the hell is that?"

For the first time, fear surfaced in Jiang Kongping's eyes.

Tzzz!

Chu Feng raised the Immemorial Hero's Sword up high and swung it down, unleashing the lightning crackling on its surface.

Boom!

A lightning arc surged forth, destroying everything in its path. Within moments, the Nine Tigers Immortal Encirclement Formation, which had taken Jiang Kongping seven days to construct, was utterly destroyed.

At the same time, Jiang Kongping sustained severe injuries. He collapsed to the ground, unable to move at all.

Chu Feng's lightning arc wasn't directed toward Jiang Kongping, but the shockwave was more than enough to inflict grievous harm upon him.

After all, this was no ordinary lightning arc. The power it harnessed was more than enough to overcome the difference of a single cultivation rank. It was one of the strongest means that Chu Feng wielded at the moment, the First Slash of the Heavenly Lightning Nine Levels Slashes.

First Slash, Heavenly Lightning Appearance!

Chu Feng didn't capture Jiang Kongping right after defeating the latter. Even though he was still standing upright, looking unfazed, he was suffering a horrible backlash that rendered him utterly powerless.

To make things worse, the backlash he was suffering at the moment was worse than before. It was to the extent that he dared not move in the least, fearing that it would worsen his condition.

It took a while before he was able to suppress the pain with his sheer willpower. The first thing he did was to hurriedly retrieve a huge bunch of pills from his Cosmos Sack.

These pills were potent and couldn't be eaten simultaneously, or else they could inflict irrecoverable damage to a cultivator's power. However, Chu Feng swallowed all of them at once.

He had no other choice, This was the only way for him to curb the backlash.

He let out a long sigh of relief after swallowing the pills, but even so, his face remained pale and his whole body was drenched in sweat.

"Executing that move appears to have taken a huge toll on you," a familiar voice suddenly echoed.

Chu Feng's eyes widened in shock upon hearing that voice, for the voice didn't come from Jiang Kongping. He quickly turned around and saw another person standing by the doorway.

It was someone he had met before. It was the black-robed man who saved the woman on the street earlier.

"It's you?"



Chu Feng wasn't too surprised to see the black-robed man meddling in this matter. He had deduced earlier on that the black-robed man was a member of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect. Given so, it was understandable why the latter was stepping in to help Jiang Kongping.

"Chu Feng, you can't take that man with you. You'll have to stay here as well," the black-robed man said.

"You recognize me? Who are you?" Chu Feng asked.

The black-robed man's words made him doubt his own guess as he didn't think that the members of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect would know who he was.

"It doesn't matter who I am. I don't wish to hurt you, so I hope that you can surrender without fighting back."

The black-robed man slowly raised his hand before abruptly opening up his right hand.

Shoosh.

A black net shot out from his palm.

It was a martial skill, but it was no ordinary martial skill. There was a sinister feeling to it that felt surprisingly familiar to Chu Feng, but he was unable to figure out right away where this feeling of familiarity was coming from.

What shocked Chu Feng the most was that even though the black-robed man was only at rank five Martial Exalted level, the black net harnessed energy comparable to that of a rank seven Martial Exalted level. 000ε)ℓℓ)1n

In other words, the black-robed man had a Heaven-defying battle power of two cultivation levels! He was much stronger than Chu Feng had expected.

### **Chapter 5033: Forced to a Corner**

"First Slash, Heavenly Lightning Appearance!"

Knowing that he was in a bad position, Chu Feng quickly executed the First Slash of the Heavenly Lightning Nine Levels Slashes once more.

He could tell that the black-robed man was no easy opponent, and he was severely weakened by the backlash he was going through. Given so, he wanted to avoid dragging the battle out and end it in a single strike.

Tzzz!

Lightning crackled on the Immemorial Hero's Sword once more. It was weaker than before, but the might it harnessed still reached a level comparable to that of a rank eight Martial Exalted level cultivator.

Chu Feng swung down his sword and released a lightning arc toward the black-robed man.

In response, the black-robed man raised his arm and black aura began gushing out from his palm.

Shoosh!

The black aura soon collided with the lightning arc, causing martial power to ripple into the surroundings. It was an intense clash.

The lightning arc mercilessly destroyed the black aura, but there was an endless flood of black aura standing in its way. It was gradually pushing its way closer to the black-robed man, but it was unable to break free of the restraints of the black aura.

In this clash, the lightning arc clearly held the advantage, but the black aura was not to be made light of. In fact, the prowess emanated by the black aura had reached rank eight Martial Exalted level as well.

“He has a Heaven-defying battle power of three cultivation ranks?”

Chu Feng was deeply conflicted to see that. He had encountered countless talented juniors in his many years, but never had he seen anyone who could rival cultivators three ranks stronger like him without relying on any treasures or external means.

Furthermore, the black-robed man wasn't relying on any special means to raise his cultivation, unlike Chu Feng. Somehow, his means simply granted his fighting prowess comparable to that of a rank eight Martial Exalted level cultivator.

This was probably the toughest opponent Chu Feng had ever encountered amongst the juniors.

His overexertion from executing the First Slash of the Heavenly Lightning Nine Levels Slashes a second time had caused him to bleed from his seven apertures, and huge mouthfuls of blood were spilling out of his mouth. He felt like his organs were rupturing, and the slightest movements would cause his bones to shatter inward.

This was the price he had to pay for executing such a powerful move consecutively. Anyone else in Chu Feng's position would have fainted from the sheer pain, but Chu Feng gritted his teeth and held on with his powerful willpower.

"I never thought that a rank five Martial Exalted level cultivator would be able to force me this far," Chu Feng said with a smirk.

It looked oddly out of place on his bloodstained face, but it reflected his tenacity. He was determined to fight to the end even at the risk of his life.

Thus, Chu Feng lifted the Immemorial Hero's Sword once more and exerted even greater pressure. Lightning crackled on his sword with greater fervor than before, illuminating the surroundings with its blinding light.

"Second Slash, Heavenly Lightning Transformation!"

Tzzzz!

Chu Feng pointed his sword at the black-robed man, and numerous bolts of lightning began surging toward him. Everything that stood in the path of the lightning bolts were utterly decimated. Even the black aura was mercilessly torn apart without putting up much of a resistance. n-(Overl&1n

This was the Second Slash of the Heavenly Lightning Nine Levels Slashes, bestowing upon its user the ability to rival enemies two cultivation ranks stronger. Given that Chu Feng's current cultivation level was at rank seven Martial Exalted level, his Heavenly Lightning Transformation harnessed might comparable to that of rank nine Martial Exalted level cultivators.

"This!"

The black-robed man widened his eyes in horror at the incoming lightning bolts.

Boom!

There was a series of loud explosions.

The black-robed man vanished from sight, leaving just a trace of his aura lingering in the surroundings.

The victor of the battle was Chu Feng!

However, Chu Feng dared not to linger in the area. He quickly grabbed Jiang Kongping and bound him with his formation before hurriedly leaving the area.

Everything had been normal outside Lush Immortal City, but a large number of cultivators suddenly started rushing out of the city gates. This anomaly swiftly caught the attention of those from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect.

“Milord, bad news!”

After enquiring about the situation, the crowd from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect started to panic.

It turned out that Chu Feng’s fight with Jiang Kongping and the black-robed man had alarmed the entire city. The juniors had never seen a fight of such caliber before, so they naturally panicked.

They had no idea what was going on and which experts were crossing blows, but they decisively chose to make their escape so as to avoid getting implicated.

This was a cause of alarm for those from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect as Jiang Kongping was currently inside the city. Considering that this was a fight that could alarm all of the juniors inside Lush Immortal City, there was a good chance that it had something to do with Jiang Kongping.

“Send our men in to comb the city. No matter what, we have to find young master Kongping!” the white-haired elder of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect ordered.

He had no idea whether Jiang Kongping was in danger or not, but he could only pray hard for that not to be the case. Otherwise, he would be in huge trouble.

Little did he know that it was already too late.

Chu Feng had already left Lush Immortal City with Jiang Kongping. Knowing that there was a massive formation around the city that scanned anyone entering or leaving the city, he made sure to take countermeasures against that when he left.

Due to that, those from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect failed to detect Chu Feng or Jiang Kongping when they left the city.

The operation was a success, but Chu Feng's situation wasn't optimistic at all. He was using a speed enhancement formation to travel as fast as he could, but his eyes had already grown lifeless.

He had already lost consciousness.

The severe backlash he had sustained had pushed his body to its breaking point, such that it was no longer possible for him to remain conscious.

It was based on sheer willpower and determination that his body was instinctively escaping from Lush Immortal City, but it went without saying that he wouldn't be able to get too far away with his body in tatters.

While he was flying past a sea, he finally succumbed to his injuries and plopped into the water, sinking into its cold depths.

Just like that, Chu Feng passed out for three whole days.

### **Chapter 5034: Who Is This Boy?**

For three whole days, Chu Feng's body remained submerged in the bottom of the sea.

All of a sudden, there was a stir in the seawater. A massive shadow was approaching Chu Feng. It was a 3000 meters long sea behemoth.

Before it, Chu Feng looked nothing more than a speck of dust.

It first took a moment to assess Chu Feng before opening its mouth wide, intending to gobble him whole. However, fear swiftly surfaced in its eyes. It quickly turned tail and disappeared in the darkness of the sea.

Over the past three days, there had been countless sea beasts who had tried to approach Chu Feng in hopes of getting a quick snack, but as soon as they attempted to attack him, Chu Feng's body would automatically emanate a powerful aura that sent them scrambling in fear.

He might be unconscious, but his body was still instinctively protecting him.

Of course, his body was incapable of attacking at the moment, but his aura was more than sufficient to intimidate these sea beasts.

After all, he was a rank four Martial Exalted level cultivator and a rank seven Dragon Transformation Sensation world spiritist!

The only problem was that he was showing no signs of awakening from his deep slumber. To make things worse, his body had been steadily weakening over the last three days. At this rate, it was only a matter of time before he breathed his last.

Someone had been watching as all of this unfolded. n/.O1e1B1n

This person was also in the sea, but he was watching from the shadows with his presence concealed. He was keeping a distance away from Chu Feng, though he could still clearly perceive every single one of the latter's movements.

He was none other than the Netherworld General of the Netherworld Sect.

That day, after the Netherworld Envoy took his leave, Chu Feng dived into the black lake in hopes of finding the Netherworld General. He wasn't able to find anyone, but his actions caught the Netherworld General's attention.

Ever since then, the Netherworld General had been observing Chu Feng from the dark.

He was with Chu Feng when the latter went to the Nine Souls Sacred Clan. In fact, he even secretly left a formation imprint on Chu Feng's body.

This was also the reason why the Netherworld General was able to swiftly find Chu Feng even though the latter had disguised himself when he escaped from Lush Immortal City.

He scanned the surroundings with sharp eyes that were capable of peering through the darkness of the sea. It was a formidable discernment skill. However, the result of his scanning left him confused.

“Is no one going to save this boy when he’s already in this state? Am I mistaken? Is there really no one protecting him from the shadows? If so... what exactly is the relationship between him and that man?” the Netherworld General mumbled under his breath.

He thought that the man with an axe was secretly protecting Chu Feng from the dark, but it would appear that his guess was wrong.

If someone was truly protecting Chu Feng, there was no way they would leave him in such a state.

“There’s really no one protecting a prodigious junior like him? What the hell are they thinking?”

The Netherworld General felt sorry for Chu Feng.

He wasn’t planning to interfere with Chu Feng’s affairs, but seeing that the latter was already on the verge of death, he decided to make an exception this once.

He took out a black pill that harnessed mysterious energy that caused the surrounding space to quiver. With the pill in hand, he began making his way toward Chu Feng.

“Hm?”

But all of a sudden, his footsteps screeched to a halt. Shock could be seen reflected in his eyes, and it was deepening by the moment.

“Am I seeing things? Surely this can’t be...” the Netherworld General mumbled in astonishment.

Something was happening to Chu Feng’s body. An aura that could be described as an amalgamation of black and red started seeping out from him.

As soon as the aura appeared, every living being in the vicinity of where Chu Feng fled away in a fluster.

It was none other than the black and red aura that had left the powerful Netherworld General so shocked. He knew deep well that the black and red aura was the aura of the Netherworld Embryo.

The Netherworld Embryo was using its aura to treat Chu Feng's wounds.

But such a thing had never happened before! Despite his many years in the Netherworld Sect, the Netherworld General had never seen or heard of anything like this before.

"The Netherworld Embryo should be in a dormant state. Why would it treat him on its own accord? Is there something special about that boy?" the Netherworld General muttered.

Watching as Chu Feng's weakened aura swiftly recovered with the help of the Netherworld Embryo, the Netherworld General's hands began to tremble ever so slightly.

"Just who could this boy be?"

The Netherworld General had known all along that Chu Feng was a prodigy, but this event had completely shattered his expectations. He realized that he had still been underestimating him.

Wu!

A short moment later, Chu Feng finally regained consciousness.

He stood up and nervously scanned his surroundings. Upon confirming that there was no danger, he quickly reached into his robe and took out a formation.

It was a confinement formation, and the one trapped inside it was none other than Jiang Kongping. He heaved a sigh of relief upon seeing that everything was still in order.

Following that, he released his spirit power to scan his surroundings. He had no idea where he was since he had lost consciousness in the midst of



escaping, so the first thing he had to do after waking up was to ascertain his whereabouts and his own condition.

“Oh? I healed up better than I thought. How surprising.”

Chu Feng tried moving his body a little and checking his internal condition. He found that his body wasn't fully recovered yet, but it was doing much better than before. It shouldn't take long before he makes a full recovery.

This was surprising because he knew how severe the backlash was, especially after he executed the Second Slash of the Heavenly Lightning Nine Levels Slashes. He even wondered if the backlash would take his life.

He thought that even if he survived, he would take a long time to recuperate, and even so, he might sustain some irrecoverable traumas that might plague him for life.

The outcome was much better than he had expected.

Chu Feng was unaware of how close he had come to death as a result of the backlash, and it was only due to the Netherworld Embryo inside him that he was able to recover so well.

### **Chapter 5035: The Obstinate Jiang Kongping**

After confirming that there was nothing wrong with his body, Chu Feng turned to the confinement formation to look at Jiang Kongping.

“Is this pervert thinking of escaping? Thank god I woke up fast, or else you might have just made a getaway,” Chu Feng sneered.

He realized that even though Jiang Kongping was trapped all this while, he had been working hard to break the formation. In fact, he had already discovered the way to do so and would have succeeded if Chu Feng didn't wake up on time.

If Jiang Kongping had really broken free, Chu Feng would have been the one to suffer.

So, he decided to crush the confinement formation and toss Jiang Kongping onto the ground.

“Friend, we can talk things out. Please don’t beat me up. Have you ever considered that it might just be a misunderstanding? It might sound unbelievable to you, but those people whom I killed aren’t good people. They have all committed grievous crimes, and I only captured them to punish them.

“I admit that I do have peculiar interests, but I am using my own ways to uphold justice in the world!” Jiang Kongping quickly exclaimed with a polite attitude after being flung out of the confinement formation.

His earlier arrogance had vanished without a trace.

However, this was perfectly understandable.

While Jiang Kongping was a rank eight Dragon Transformation Sensation world spiritist, he couldn’t hope to put up a fight against Chu Feng when he was severely injured and bound.

“Take a good look at my face. Do I look like a fool to you?” Chu Feng asked.

“Friend, I’m choosing to come clean to you because I can tell that you’re a wise man who wouldn’t be deceived by appearances!” Jiang Kongping said with a fawning chuckle.

“Is that so?” Chu Feng sneered.

He gathered his spirit power and manifested a thorned whip in his hand.

“I don’t care about those who have died, but do you think that I’d be oblivious that you have been trying to break out of my formation?”

Chu Feng flung his wrist and whipped Jiang Kongping without any hesitation.

Pah pah pah!

His strikes weren’t weak at all. Each whiplash left a glaring laceration on Jiang Kongping’s body. Before long, Jiang Kongping was already bleeding all over.

“Friend, I was wrong. I won’t try to escape anymore. Please, spare me,” Jiang Kongping cried pitifully.

Upon hearing that, Chu Feng decided to give it a rest.

“Jiang Kongping, I’ll put it out here clearly for you. If you don’t want to suffer, you better obediently answer anything I ask you,” Chu Feng said.

“Alright alright! We can talk things through as long as you don’t hit me. I’ll tell you everything I know!” Jiang Kongping said pitifully.

He looked completely different from before.

“Who is that black-robed man?” Chu Feng asked.

He was curious about the black-robed man because the latter possessed the shocking ability to rival opponents three cultivation levels stronger than him, but it didn’t seem like he was from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect. Thus, he was intrigued about the other party’s background.

“The black-robed man? Friend, would you believe me if I said that I don’t know him?” Jiang Kongping said.

“You’re not going to speak the truth?”

Chu Feng flicked his wrist and mercilessly struck Jiang Kongping with his whip.

“Stop hitting me! I really don’t know anything at all. May my entire family drop dead if I speak a single word of falsehood here!” Jiang Kongping exclaimed through gritted teeth.

Desperate to convince Chu Feng of his innocence, he even went to the extent of swearing at his family. It looked like Jiang Kongping really didn’t know anything at all, so Chu Feng retracted his whip.

“My good friend, you have already killed him. Why are you still so concerned about him? Why don’t you ask me about something else? I’ll tell you everything as long as it’s something I know,” Jiang Kongping said.

“Who the hell is your good friend? You damned pervert.”

Chu Feng flicked his wrist and rained two whips down upon Jiang Kongping before carrying on with his interrogation, “Tell me what Sima Xiangtu’s goal is. Why is your Pill Dao Immortal Sect helping him?”

“That... You promise not to hit me if I tell the truth?” Jiang Kongping asked nervously.

“Go on,” Chu Feng said.

“To be honest, I don’t know either,” Jiang Kongping replied weakly.

“Screw you!”

Chu Feng flicked his wrist and whipped Jiang Kongping another two more times.

“You promised not to hit me! Why are you still whipping me?” Jiang Kongping cried indignantly.

“It looks like you aren’t going to say anything until you suffer a little. Why don’t you know anything at all?” Chu Feng roared.

“But... I really don’t know much! I mean, look at me. Do I look like someone who’s involved in such stuff? If so, I wouldn’t be frolicking around in the Lush Immortal Sect and be at the Nine Souls Sacred Clan right now!” Jiang Kongping exclaimed.

Those words made sense to Chu Feng, so he decided not to ask about Sima Xiangtu anymore. Instead, he posed questions about the Pill Dao Immortal Sect.

Yet, Jiang Kongping’s answer to all his questions was ‘I don’t know’.

Chu Feng initially thought that Jiang Kongping really didn’t know anything at all, but he swiftly realized that the latter was intentionally withholding information. There was no way he wouldn’t know anything about the Pill Dao Immortal Sect.

“You’re really asking for a beating.”

Chu Feng retracted his whip, but that didn’t mean that he was intending to let things go. Instead, he resorted to even more extreme means to torture Jiang Kongping.

However, the result only gave Chu Feng a higher opinion of Jiang Kongping.

Chu Feng was confident in his torture methods. Ordinary people wouldn’t be able to hold on for long. He did manage to make Jiang Kongping scream throughout the entire process, to the point that he sounded like a pig in a slaughterhouse.

Yet, despite repeatedly begging for mercy, Jiang Kongping didn't drop a single tear at all.

Furthermore, he continued to insist that he didn't know the answers to Chu Feng's question. That went to show just how tight-lipped he was.

Jiang Kongping swiftly weakened under the torture, to the point where he might lose his life if Chu Feng continued with the torture. Left with no choice, he could only let Jiang Kongping off the hook for the time being and begin making his way back to the Nine Souls Sacred Clan.

Along the way, he treated Jiang Kongping's injuries. By the time they arrived at the Nine Souls Sacred Clan, half of his injuries were already healed up.

However, when Chu Feng released Jiang Kongping from the confinement formation once more, the latter panicked.

"Friend, what... are you planning to do to me this time?"

As he said those words, Jiang Kongping began to back away. He saw a completed formation in front of him, and as a world spiritist himself, he could tell just how dangerous it was.

### **Chapter 5036: Life Chain Formation**

"Don't worry, this formation is intended to protect you," Chu Feng said.

"Protect me? Friend, do you take me for a fool?"

Jiang Kongping didn't believe Chu Feng's words at all.

"Activate!"

Instead of wasting time on words, Chu Feng began forming a series of hand seals to activate the formation. Light began emanating from the formation, and two surges of aura rushed out from the formation. These two surges of aura swiftly morphed into two worms.

These worms didn't have any eyes, but they had a large mouth filled with horrifyingly sharp teeth. They looked like something that had manifested from a nightmare.

Shoosh!

One of the worms rushed toward Jiang Kongping, leaving the latter shuddering in fright. He tried to escape, but he couldn't dodge at all with his body bound by Chu Feng. He could only watch helplessly as the worm dived into his body and entered his soul.

But to his surprise, the worm didn't inflict any harm on him. There was no pain whatsoever throughout the process. Instead, the worm dissipated into innumerable imprints that covered his soul.

Following that, the other worm also began wriggling. It dived straight for Chu Feng's body and entered his soul.

"Aren't you being too serious here? There's no need to go this far."

Jiang Kongping finally realized the use of the formation and let out a deep sigh. The formation that was just cast on the two of them was a linking formation that connected both of their fates.

Chu Feng had to do this because he knew just how powerful his enemies were. He would have to prepare sufficient trump cards beforehand if he wished to escape alive from a confrontation with such enemies.

And his greatest trump card at the moment was none other than Jiang Kongping's life.

"Since you know the use of this formation, you should pray hard that those from the Dao Pill Immortal Sect truly value your life. Otherwise, the two of us will be dying together," Chu Feng said.

Following that, they resumed their journey and soon arrived at the Nine Souls Sacred Clan.

There were much more people gathered in the Nine Souls Sacred Clan as compared to when Chu Feng visited this place a few days ago. It was only to be expected since this was the first time that the Nine Souls Sacred Clan was giving out cultivation pills for free to all cultivators.

Most people wouldn't want to miss this rare opportunity.

There were even some who had sustained severe injuries and were too weak to walk who were carried into the Nine Souls Sacred Clan. No one wanted to miss this rare opportunity.

Most of them had joyous looks on their faces.

In truth, there was already a group of people who had collected the pills and swallowed them, and the results were as good as the rumors put them out to be. This had built up anticipation amongst those who had yet to receive it.

novE/lB(In

Chu Feng was interested to know what Sima Xiangtu and the Pill Dao Immortal Sect were up to, so he secretly captured three cultivators who had ingested the pill for examination. The three of them did manage to advance their cultivation significantly as a result of the pill, but at the same time, their souls had been opened up and couldn't be closed in the short run.

That wouldn't pose a problem to cultivators, but if one were to look at them not as cultivators but as ingredients for concocting pills, there would be a huge issue here.

The first step to concocting a pill was to first refine the ingredients. The purpose was so as to allow the ingredients to better mix with each other and release their medicinal properties.

The process of that was uncannily similar to the cultivators who had ingested the cultivation pill.

"There's indeed a huge scheme behind this."

Sensing that something was amiss, Chu Feng immediately brought Jiang Kongping out.

"Friend, friend, my good friend, just let me off, will you? Besides, you'll also suffer the same pain if you injure me right now. If you want to save your friends, you can use my name all you want. Sima Xiangtu wouldn't dare to go against you with me in your grasp!" Jiang Kongping uttered fearfully.

"Don't worry and do as I've said. I won't hurt you."

Chu Feng issued some instructions to Jiang Kongping

"I see. No problem, friend. You can count it on me. I'll get it done!"

Jiang Kongping rose into the sky afterward.

They were currently in the territory of the Nine Souls Sacred Clan. While practically everyone here was a cultivator, they consciously chose to steer clear of the sky as a sign of respect for the Nine Souls Sacred Clan.

In other words, Jiang Kongping was the only one standing in mid-air.

“Ahem!”

Looking at the crowd below, Jiang Kongping cleared his throat before speaking.

“Trash of the Nine Souls Sacred Clan, do turn your lowly eyes over here for a moment!”

All of those who heard his voice immediately turned their gazes over.

Jiang Kongping’s jarring words were one thing, but the fact that he dared to occupy the sky despite not being a member of the Nine Souls Sacred Clan was an act of blatant disrespect for the Nine Souls Sacred Clan.

“Who’s that? Is he tired of living?”

Jiang Kongping’s white robe was embroidered with the words ‘Dao Pill Immortal Sect’, but most cultivators in the Nine Souls Sacred Clan hadn’t heard of the Dao Pill Immortal Sect before. It was an existence too far away from them. Thus, they began hurling curses at him.

“Pill Dao Immortal Sect? It can’t be that Pill Dao Immortal Sect that I’m thinking of, right? Is that guy trying to impersonate as a member of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect?”

Meanwhile, those who had heard of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect looked at Jiang Kongping with eyes filled with skepticism.

Even those who knew about the Pill Dao Immortal Sect had only heard rumors about it. They couldn’t ascertain whether the person in front of him was really a member of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect or not.

“Who dares to cause trouble in our Nine Souls Sacred Clan?”

Needless to say, those from the Nine Souls Sacred Clan wouldn’t turn a blind eye to Jiang Kongping’s provocation. They drew their swords and released



their oppressive might, intending to capture Jiang Kongping and punish him for his insolence.

“Hold it right there!”

But before the guards of the Nine Souls Sacred Clan could make a move, a furious bellow suddenly echoed from afar. Following that, a large group of people swiftly flitted over from afar.

Most of them were elders and elites of the Nine Souls Sacred Clan, but the one standing at the forefront wasn't a member of the Nine Souls Sacred Clan but Sima Xiangtu.

### **Chapter 5037: Coerced**

Sima Xiangtu stood with an air of majesty, as if he was the patriarch of the Nine Souls Sacred Clan. At his command, the troops who had drawn their swords quickly sheathed their blades.

From their terrified expression, it was clear that Sima Xiangtu had obtained actual authority over the Nine Souls Sacred Clan.

“Young master Kongping, what brings you here?”

Sima Xiangtu stepped forward and spoke with a respectful attitude.

This made the crowd realize that Jiang Kongping wasn't an impersonator. He was truly a young master from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect, or else Master Yin Ren wouldn't have treated him so courteously.

A huge commotion broke out amidst the crowd.

News spread quickly. Even those who had never heard of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect swiftly learned about the behemoth through the discussions of those around them. **VE**(In

But why would a young master of the lofty Pill Dao Immortal Sect suddenly appear in the Nine Souls Sacred Clan?

“Sima Xiangtu, do you still remember me?” Jiang Kongping asked.

“Who is Sima Xiangtu? Did he get the wrong person?”

The crowd was confused as to how Jiang Kongping was addressing Master Yin Ren. After all, they were still unaware of Master Yin Ren's true identity.

Sima Xiangtu ignored the crowd and replied with a courteous smile, "What are you saying, young master Kongping? How could I possibly not remember you?"

That made the crowd realize that Jiang Kongping was indeed speaking to Master Yin Ren, but they weren't too surprised by that. It was just a name, after all. Sima Xiangtu could simply be an alias that Master Yin Ren used elsewhere.

Since Master Yin Ren had acknowledged it, there was no need for them to think too deeply into it.

"Not bad. It looks like you still know your place. Stand there for a moment and wait for me. There are some things I need to tell this bunch of trash."

With that, Jiang Kongping cast his gaze toward the cultivators of the Nine Souls Galaxy who had traveled from far and wide to obtain Master Yin Ren's pill.

Sima Xiangtu's eyes narrowed. He sensed that Jiang Kongping was going to do something inappropriate, but he chose not to stop him. In his eyes, the cultivators of the Nine Souls Galaxy were of little importance as compared to Jiang Kongping.

If Jiang Kongping wanted to kick up a fuss, so be it.

Jiang Kongping had no intention of holding back. Before everyone's eyes, he cleared his throat once more, pointed a finger at Sima Xiangtu, and said, "Trash of the Nine Souls Galaxy, listen well. Sima Xiangtu is a despicable scum!"

"This... What is he saying?"

Everyone was shocked to hear those words. Even Sima Xiangtu's complexion darkened as well. He couldn't understand why Jiang Kongping was suddenly turning against him.

"Young master Kongping, what do you mean by this?" Sima Xiangtu asked.

However, Jiang Kongping berated him coldly, “Shut your mouth. Did I allow you to speak?”

He then turned his gaze back to the crowd and continued, “Did you think that he’s feeding all of you pills to help you raise your cultivation? I can tell you frankly that he’s going to use you as ingredients for his pill concoction after you consume what he gave you. He’s treating you as nothing more than a cultivation resource!”

“He’s using us as ingredients for pill concoction? What a joke. We’re cultivators! How could we possibly be used as ingredients for pill concoction?”

“Why is that young master talking nonsense?”

Despite Jiang Kongping’s shocking revelation, there was hardly anyone who believed his words. Instead, most people thought that he was uttering nonsense.

After all, they were cultivators of the Nine Souls Galaxy. It was hard to believe that their overseers, the Nine Souls Sacred Clan, would use them as ingredients for pill concoction. Such a thing had never happened before.

“I’ve already said everything I want to. It’s up to you whether you want to believe my words or not.

“As for those from the Nine Souls Sacred Clan, I want you to listen well. I don’t know what Sima Xiangtu did to make all of you listen to him like loyal dogs, but your clan chief has become Sima Xiangtu’s prisoner and is currently being held in that prison over there.

“Sima Xiangtu has imprisoned your clan chief, but you still chose to serve him as lackeys and aid him in harming the cultivators of the Nine Souls Galaxy. Touch your own conscience and ask yourself if you’re worthy of being members of the Nine Souls Sacred Clan!” Jiang Kongping spat.

“Is he... out of his mind? How dare he utter such atrocities?”

A huge commotion broke out amidst the crowd upon hearing those words.

However, the members of the Nine Souls Sacred Clan looked at one another with complicated looks on their faces. Jiang Kongping’s words had sparked some thoughts in their minds.

In the first place, Sima Xiangtu was only able to command them due to an order from the Nine Souls Sacred Clan's Clan Chief. The latter had entrusted his Clan Chief Token to Sima Xiangtu, ordering everyone in the Nine Souls Sacred Clan to heed Sima Xiangtu's orders.

Most of them thought that it was ridiculous and didn't want to submit to Sima Xiangtu. Not to mention, Sima Xiangtu's deferential attitude toward a youngster who had put down their Nine Souls Galaxy further stirred their displeasure.

It was just that they didn't want to go against their clan chief's orders.

However, one had to remember that Jiang Kongping was a young master of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect. There was no reason for him to utter such words without reason, no matter how illogical they sounded. Could there be some veracity behind them?

Such a thought surfaced in the minds of many members of the Nine Souls Sacred Clan.

Even Chu Feng was surprised by Jiang Kongping's performance.

He was the one who instructed Jiang Kongping to say those words as he thought that it would be better for the latter to make an appearance, but he was almost certain that the latter would pull some tricks to go against his order.

Yet, Jiang Kongping actually obediently did as he was told.

Furthermore, Jiang Kongping's attitude was much more arrogant than Chu Feng had expected. Sima Xiangtu appeared to be nothing more than a servant before him.

"Why did Jiang Kongping obediently say whatever you told him to? This is weird."

Even the reticent Yu Sha was surprised by the happenings.

"He isn't the kind to obediently listen to others' orders. He's probably up to something. However, it doesn't matter. The formation linking the two of us is extremely stable. I'll make him pay the price if he dares to pull anything off," Chu Feng said.

“Young master Kongping, I have no grudge with you. Why must you sully my innocence with such false accusations,” Sima Xiangtu asked.

“Sima Xiangtu, shouldn’t you know better than anyone else whether what I’m saying is true or not? To be honest, I can’t care less about what you’re doing, but someone coerced me into it,” Jiang Kongping said.

### **Chapter 5038: Scheme Exposed**

“You were coerced into it?” Sima Xiangtu asked in astonishment.

“You know Chu Feng, right? I was forced by Chu Feng to do this. He requests that you release his master and his friends, or else he’ll take my life. If anything happens to me... you’ll be the next,” Jiang Kongping said.

“I see. I understand the situation now. Young master Kongping, you need not worry. Chu Feng won’t be able to harm you as long as I’m around.”

Everything finally made sense to Sima Xiangtu. Right after he said those words, he immediately enveloped the area in his oppressive might.

“This aura... To think that Master Yin Ren was this strong!”

The crowd was shocked by Sima Xiangtu’s oppressive might. It revealed that he was a rank nine Martial Exalted level cultivator, which easily made him one of the strongest individuals in the Nine Souls Galaxy.

How in the world was Master Yin Ren this strong?

Putting aside the outsiders, even those from the Nine Souls Sacred Clan hadn’t expected Master Yin Ren to be this strong.

In truth, Sima Xiangtu had released his spirit power along with his martial power in hopes of finding Chu Feng’s whereabouts.

“Don’t bother searching. I’m here,” Chu Feng said before rising into the sky.

He had chosen to reveal himself.

“You scoundrel. How dare you threaten young master Kongping?”

As soon as Chu Feng made an appearance, Sima Xiangtu bound Chu Feng in mid-air with his oppressive might. Other than his mouth, he wasn't able to move any other parts of his body at all.

However, Chu Feng wasn't worried at all.

"Sima Xiangtu, are you asking to be killed? How dare you bind me?" Jiang Kongping roared at Sima Xiangtu.

"Young master Kongping, I didn't bind you."

Sima Xiangtu looked at Jiang Kongping in confusion. Even though he had enveloped the surroundings in his martial power, the only person he had bound was Chu Feng.

Pu!

A dull thud suddenly echoed from Chu Feng's body, and a huge gorge appeared in his right chest. Blood immediately started spurting out of it as though it were a fountain.

What was weird about the gorge was caused by an internal force rather than an external one. In other words, Chu Feng was the one inflicting harm on himself.

Even though Chu Feng had his body bound, he had set up formations within his body that allowed him to injure himself. In fact, he had made sure that no one would be able to stop him from injuring himself.

The moment the gorge appeared on Chu Feng's chest, Jiang Kongping let out a scream of agony. A gorge had appeared on Jiang Kongping's chest too in the exact same location.

The crowd was confused by the situation, but Sima Xiangtu immediately figured out what was going on. He finally knew why Jiang Kongping was berating him even though he hadn't bound his body.

"Stop it, Chu Feng!" Sima Xiangtu roared at Chu Feng.

He knew that Chu Feng must have set up a soul-linking formation on Jiang Kong. That was the only way that two identical injuries could simultaneously appear on two different people.

If the formation was sturdy enough, Chu Feng's death would spell Jiang Kongping's death as well.

"Chu Feng, we can talk things out. Do not harm young master Kongping."

To express his sincerity, Sima Xiangtu even retracted his oppressive might and set Chu Feng free.

"Sima Xiangtu, do you need me to repeat myself?" Chu Feng asked.

"It looks like I've really underestimated you, Chu Feng. To think that you would be able to construct such a formation."

Sima Xiangtu glared at Chu Feng with clenched jaws.

"Let's go, we'll talk elsewhere."

Sima Xiangtu turned around, and Chu Feng began moving along with him. He was intending to take Chu Feng elsewhere.

Gah!

But barely after they moved an inch, Jiang Kongping let out yet another scream of agony. Sima Xiangtu quickly turned to Jiang Kongping, and he panicked upon seeing the state the latter was in.

Several more gorges had appeared on Jiang Kongping's body, causing blood to spurt all over his body.

Of course, the same injuries had appeared on Chu Feng's body too since he was the one inflicting them.

"Don't even think of undoing my formation. Jiang Kongping's life is now in my grasp. None of you will be able to save him. Stop playing tricks and release them right now," Chu Feng spat menacingly.

"Sima Xiangtu, you old fool! Hurry up and let them go! Just try hesitating for a second longer, and I'll get my father to kill you!" Jiang Kongping roared at Sima Xiangtu.

His attitude was much more arrogant as compared to Chu Feng.

Those who didn't know better might have even thought that the one who had a grudge with Sima Xiangtu wasn't Chu Feng but Jiang Kongping.

Sima Xiangtu was put in a dilemma, but he quickly made up his mind. Before everyone's eyes, he plucked out his eyeball and crushed it, revealing the confinement formation.

"Isn't that the Godwish Grandmother?"

"The Lady of Dao Sea and the Sagacious Grandmaster!"

"Why are they captured there?"

An uproar broke out amidst the crowd when they saw the confinement formation. In their eyes, the Godwish Grandmother, the Sagacious Grandmaster, and the Lady of Dao Sea were lofty figures who stood at the very peak of the Nine Souls Galaxy, yet all of them actually became Sima Xiangtu's prisoners!

What in the world was going on here?

The crowd couldn't understand the situation at all.

Meanwhile, those from the Nine Souls Sacred Clan noticed that Princess Xiaoxiao was inside the confinement formation too and flew into a rage.

"You bastard, Yin Ren! Why do you have Princess Xiaoxiao inside the confinement formation too?"

Numerous elders of the Nine Souls Sacred Clan questioned Sima Xiangtu with chilling voices. Some of them even drew their Exalted Armaments and released their oppressive might, seeking to take down Sima Xiangtu for his audacity.

"Shut up."

Sima Xiangtu waved his sleeves coldly in response to their questions.

Shoosh shoosh shoosh!

Multiple blades manifested out of martial power shot toward the elders of the Nine Souls Sacred Clan. None of these elders wielded sufficient strength to



stand against Sima Xiangtu's attacks, such that they ended up collapsing in droves and dying amidst puddles of blood.

### Chapter 5039: Indignant

"Ssss!"

Many people gasped at the sight. It came as a huge shock to the crowd, be it the cultivators of the Nine Souls Galaxy or the members of the Nine Souls Sacred Clan.

They realized how serious the problem was, prompting them to reconsider what Jiang Kongping had just said. Even a fool could tell that something was clearly amiss here.

Meanwhile, Sima Xiangtu ignored the crowd and waved his sleeves once more.

The gates to the confinement formation opened, and Shengguang Baimei, Daoist Niantian, the Godwish Grandmother, the Lady of Dao Sea, Princess Xiaoxiao, and the others were pushed out of the formation over to his side.

"Good job, Chu Feng!"

"As expected of young hero Chu Feng." n.-σ-)v-.e.-ℓ-.ℓ((1-)n

The Lady of Dao Sea, Shengguang Baimei, and the others couldn't help but compliment Chu Feng for his deed. Even though they were trapped inside the confinement formation, they could see what was going on outside due to the unique nature of the formation.

They thought that they were doomed after being captured by Sima Xiangtu, but who could have thought that Chu Feng would come to their rescue? It filled them with relief.

However, Chu Feng wasn't done here yet. Most of his friends had been released, but there was one person whom Sima Xiangtu was still holding onto, and he was none other than the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

"Sima Xiangtu, release my master," Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, don’t go too far. You should be glad that I have released these people.”

Sima Xiangtu made it clear that he had no intention of releasing the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

Chu Feng’s eyes turned cold upon hearing those words. He began activating another formation in his body, and the next moment, innumerable lightning snakes began tunneling around his body.

Tzzzz!

Gah!

Jiang Kongping let out a heart-wrenching cry.

There were no lightning snakes in his body, but he could feel the very same pain Chu Feng was feeling. On top of that, the same injuries that were being inflicted on Chu Feng were appearing on his body too.

“Sima Xiangtu, hurry up and release his master or whatever! Do you really want to die?” Jiang Kongping bellowed.

However, Sima Xiangtu ignored Jiang Kongping this time around and kept his eyes firmly on Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, I’ll have you know that there’s no one from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect here at the moment. You should understand what I mean. It’s on young master Kongping’s account that I allowed you to take those people away with you. However, if you wish to push your luck, I have no intention of letting you get your way.”

Chu Feng’s heart clenched upon hearing those words.

The meaning behind Sima Xiangtu’s words was apparent. Since there was no one from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect around, even if Jiang Kongping were to die here, Sima Xiangtu could simply massacre everyone and seal off the news.

By then, no one would know that he had left Jiang Kongping to the lurch.

In other words, Sima Xiangtu wasn’t afraid of Jiang Kongping dying.

If things really got to that extent, Chu Feng and everyone else would lose their lives here.

“My good disciple, Chu Feng, listen to me. Don’t bother about me. He’s holding onto me because he needs me for something. I won’t be in danger for the time being. You should leave with your friends first.

“Also, you did well today. You didn’t let me down.”

Chu Feng received a voice transmission from the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

Chu Feng looked at the Ox-nosed Old Daoist and saw that the latter was looking back at him. Despite being nailed to a wooden board, there was a heartened and proud smile on his face.

It left Chu Feng feeling bitter inside. It pained him that he couldn’t do anything to save the Ox-nosed Old Daoist when the latter was right in front of him, but he knew that there was no way around it.

He couldn’t actually kill Jiang Kongping for that would spell his death too.

By then, everyone else whom he had saved would lose their lives too. That was a price too heavy to pay.

Putong!

Chu Feng suddenly kneeled down to the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Master, forgive me for my weakness. I swear that I’ll grow strong enough to save you one day!”

After saying those words, Chu Feng rose to his feet and shot a vicious glare at Sima Xiangtu. Without saying a word, he turned around, opened a spirit formation gate, and left together with the Godwish Grandmother and the others.

The spirit formation gate automatically closed once the last of them passed through it.

Shortly after Chu Feng left, Sima Xiangtu tossed an object into the sky.

Weng!

The object emanated a brilliant light that sealed off the surroundings. It was a sealing formation, one so powerful that it was impossible to construct within a short period of time. Clearly, Sima Xiangtu had prepared it in advance.

“Since all of you are already here, have a good rest and wait for the pill to refine your body,” Sima Xiangtu said before disappearing into thin air.

He took Jiang Kongping away with him.

As soon as the two of them disappeared, the crowd began howling sorrowfully. With such a powerful sealing formation cast around them, it was clear that they had become Sima Xiangtu’s prisoners.

Without a doubt, Sima Xiangtu was up to no good. Perhaps, the young master from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect might have even been speaking the truth. They might just become ingredients in Sima Xiangtu’s pill concoction.

Those from the Nine Souls Sacred Clan also swiftly realized that they were in a bad position.

Putting aside Sima Xiangtu’s powerful cultivation, just his collusion with the powerful Pill Dao Immortal Sect was enough to render them powerless. Without a doubt, this was a calamity.

...

Meanwhile, Sima Xiangtu actually hadn’t gone too far away. He took Jiang Kongping into a palace.

This palace wasn’t constructed by the Nine Souls Sacred Clan, but its resilience was beyond imagination. It was floating above the Nine Souls Sacred Clan, just that it was concealed from view. From its position, one could get a bird’s eye view of what was happening below.

It wasn’t just Sima Xiangtu and Jiang Kongping who were inside the palace at the moment. In fact, there were several hundred people in here, and none of them could be made light of.

From their attire, one could tell that they were all from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect.

Many experts of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect had taken out their treasures, using them as mediums to construct formations in order to dispel the soul-linking formation between Jiang Kongping and Chu Feng.

However, some of them were also eyeing Sima Xiangtu with eyes filled with fury and even killing intent. They were infuriated as Jiang Kongping was put in a perilous position earlier on due to him being unwilling to release the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Sima Xiangtu, you better give me a reasonable explanation as to why you refused to release that man. If you can’t give me a satisfactory answer, I’ll take your life right now!” an infuriated voice bellowed.

It was from Lord Taibai, the man who defeated the Netherworld Envoy the other day.

It turned out that they had witnessed everything that had happened from the start to the end!

## **Martial God Asura #Chapter 5040: Soul Fog - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 5040: Soul Fog**

### **Chapter 5040: Soul Fog**

Putong!

Sima Xiangtu fell to his knees and kowtowed hard onto the floor ten times before he began his explanation.

“Lord Taibai, I’ve secretly examined the soul-linking formation Chu Feng has planted in young master Kongping earlier and I realized that it’s not to be made light of. It has already taken root in young master Kongping’s soul, such that it’ll be impossible to quickly dispel it.

“Chu Feng is a cunning person, so I couldn’t let him think that he has managed to grab hold of my weakness. Otherwise, he’ll surely make other demands after I do his bidding. So, I wanted to scare him into backing down. If he had used his life to force me to comply, I would have surely given in.

“Putting aside releasing his master, I would have even offered my life to him if it was necessary. I would have never dared to use young master Kongping’s life to gamble!”

Sima Xiangtu didn't even dare to raise his head as he explained his stance. From that, it could be seen just how much he feared those from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect.

"Bullshit! You turned a blind eye as I was suffering earlier on, and you still dare to spout such nonsense! Jiang Taibai, don't waste your breath with him and kill this old thing!"

"No, that won't do. I'll be letting him off too easily if I kill him outright. Let's torture him to death instead!" Jiang Kongping sat up and gave Sima Xiangtu a tongue-lashing.

"Calm down, young master Kongping. Let's dispel the formation first."

The others from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect quickly placated Jiang Kongping. As long as this formation remained on him and Chu Feng wasn't too far away, his life would remain under Chu Feng's control.

There was no way the Pill Dao Immortal Sect would tolerate something like that.

If anything were to happen to Jiang Kongping, all of them would be in deep trouble.

"Sima Xiangtu, you should know very well who young master Kongping is. I can turn a blind eye to your transgression, but we'll still have to wait for Lord Jingyu's verdict to determine your outcome.

"For now, you're dismissed. Go and deal with the Nine Souls Sacred Clan first," Lord Taibai said with a wave of his hand.

Sima Xiangtu quickly bowed deeply before taking his leave.

"Jiang Taibai, why are you setting him free just like that? Didn't you see how he left me to the lurch earlier on?" Jiang Kongping sat up once more and exclaimed.

He had no hesitation talking back even to Lord Taibai.

"Young master Kongping, you should be aware that we're here under your father's orders. Sima Xiangtu plays a crucial role in our plans. If he dies, our

efforts will be in vain. Even your father, Lord Jingyu, wouldn't allow you to eliminate him at this juncture.

"Besides, if you truly harbor a grudge toward him, you just have to give the word after this mission is over, and you'll be able to do whatever you want to Sima Xiangtu," Lord Taibai replied.

"That's nothing but a legend. Even my father wasn't able to find it. Do you think that he'll really be able to do it? Taking a step back, do you think that his cultivation would only be at this level if he really has the ability to do so? He even has to count on us for help! In my view, we should just hurry up and leave this godforsaken land. That legend is nothing but a lie," Jiang Kongping scoffed in disdain.

"Young master Kongping, do you recognize this?"

Lord Taibai reached into his robes and retrieved an item. It was initially the size of a palm, but as soon as it was thrown out, it swiftly expanded to over a hundred meters tall.

It was a platform made out of a beautiful transparent jade. However, this was not just any ordinary jade but an extremely precious material, evident from the mysterious energy that was visibly flowing within it.

"Isn't that the talent assessing rock of our Pill Dao Immortal Sect? How could I possibly not recognize it? I was just about to ask you if you have forgotten how I shocked the entire Pill Dao Immortal Sect when I stood on top of the talent assessing rock back then," Jiang Kongping said gleefully.

"Of course I do. The result of young master Kongping's talent assessment is rank eight Immortal Overglow. Thus far, there are no more than twenty people since the founding of our Pill Dao Immortal Sect who have managed to induce a rank eight Immortal Overglow," Lord Taibai said.

"It's good that you remember," Jiang Kongping replied with a gleeful smile.

"Young master Kongping, do you know why your father, Lord Jingyu, chose to trust Sima Xiangtu?" Lord Taibai asked.

"Tell me," Jiang Kongping replied.

“Lord Jingyu has used this talent assessing rock on Sima Xiangtu without him knowing. The result is rank nine Immortal Overflow,” Lord Taibai replied.

“Rank nine Immortal Overflow?! That’s impossible! Ever since the founding of our Pill Dao Immortal Sect, no one has managed to induce a rank nine Immortal Overflow other than our sect founder. He’s still a Martial Exalted level cultivator despite his age, so how could he possibly induce a rank nine Immortal Overflow?” Jiang Kongping exclaimed in disbelief.

He knew very well what a rank nine Immortal Overflow meant.

“Young master Kongping, I wouldn’t have believed it either if I hadn’t seen it with my own eyes. I was present that day too, and it was indeed a rank nine Immortal Overflow. There’s no mistake about it,” Lord Taibai said.

“Impossible. He must be at least several thousand years old, no? How could someone with such great talent possibly be so weak?” Jiang Kongping asked.

“Lord Jingyu and I couldn’t figure that out either, but Sima Xiangtu does possess capabilities that we don’t have,” Lord Taibai said.

“Capabilities? What capabilities does he possess? He’s just a scheming old rascal,” Jiang Kongping sneered in disdain.

He looked down on Sima Xiangtu from the bottom of his heart, having seen many people like that.

“Young master Kongping, why don’t you have a look at this?”

Lord Taibai took out a gourd that Sima Xiangtu had given him previously. The moment he uncorked the gourd, a whiff of green aura began drifting out.

The palace began to tremble as soon as the green aura flowed out. Lord Taibai had to exert his martial power before the palace finally calmed down.

But even so, everyone was still able to sense what kind of power the green aura possessed.

“This can’t possibly be the legendary Soul Fog that’s hidden in the Nine Souls Galaxy, is it?” Jiang Kongping asked excitedly.

“Indeed, this is the legendary Soul Fog. And Sima Xiangtu was the one who found it,” Lord Taibai said.



“He really found it? But... isn't it just a legend?”

Jiang Kongping was shocked.

“We have already talked it through with him. We'll lend him the Immortal Cauldron, and he'll supply a never-ending supply of Soul Fog for us. If he fails to fulfill his end of the bet, we will take his life,” Lord Taibai said.

“But what if he succeeds?” Jiang Kongping asked.

“He still won't be able to escape death. That's Lord Jingyu's will,” Lord Taibai replied.

Jiang Kongping's lips curled into a smile upon hearing those words. He placed his hands behind his head and laid back down before murmuring, “That sounds more like my father.”

A short moment later, he added with a frown, “Looks like I've underestimated Sima Xiangtu.”

### **Chapter 5041: Sima Xiangtu's Ambitions**

“Speaking of which, young master Kongping, how did you get captured by Chu Feng?” Lord Taibai asked.

“What do you mean, how did I get captured? He captured me in Lush Immortal City,” Jiang Kongping replied.

Lord Taibai frowned upon hearing those words, but he didn't harp on the issue. Instead, he changed the topic and said, “Young master Kongping, you can't play around anymore after you recover from your injuries. You'll have to go into closed-door training and focus on your cultivation.”

“Why should I? It's not as if you don't know that I hate cultivating,” Jiang Kongping protested in displeasure.

“I just received news that young master Yuantai is on his way here. Do you still remember young master Yuantai telling you that he'll teach you a lesson if your spirit power hasn't reached rank nine Dragon Transformation Sensation by the time he arrives?” Lord Taibai said.

“Are you for real? Aren't my older brother and my father busy dealing with that matter in the Seven Realms Galaxy? Why is he coming here all of a sudden?”

Jiang Kongping immediately sat upright out of nervousness. From his expression, it was apparent that he was fearful of his older brother.

“I wouldn’t dare to lie to you. Here, have a look at it yourself.”

Lord Taibai took out a spirit power letter and passed it to Jiang Kongping.

“Holy shit! He’s really coming here!”

Jiang Kongping shuddered out of fright upon seeing the letter. He quickly laid back down and shouted at those around him, “Hurry up and dispel this darned formation from me! I’m going into closed-door training!!!”

This was the first time Jiang Kongping was urging them to dispel the formation on him throughout the entire conversation. It showed just how desperate he was.

Those from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect dared not to dawdle and quickly helped him undo the formation.

“The formation constructed by Chu Feng is really hard to undo. It looks like there are prodigies in the Eastern Region too.”

Lord Taibai’s eyes narrowed upon seeing the crowd’s anxious looks too. He could tell that the formation was a tough nut to crack.

The key difficulty was that any missteps could potentially threaten Jiang Kongping’s life, so they had to proceed carefully. Nevertheless, it was rare to see a junior being able to construct such a troublesome formation.

Just then, ten figures suddenly entered the palace and fell to their knees. They were members of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect too.

“Lord Taibai, we were inept. We failed to intercept the teleportation formation Chu Feng used when escaping from the area.”

It turned out that Lord Taibai had dispatched these ten people to corner Chu Feng. There was no way they would let Chu Feng off the hook when he had dared to lay his hands on Jiang Kongping.

However, it was clear that they had failed.

“You couldn’t even intercept a teleportation formation constructed by a junior? Useless!” Lord Taibai berated.

Despite this, he didn’t pursue the matter. He knew that it was not that these ten people were truly useless but that he had underestimated Chu Feng. The soul-linking formation on Jiang Kongping was the best evidence of that.

“I’ll give you a chance to make up for your failure. Investigate this matter.”

Lord Taibai passed a letter to those ten people.

When they took a look at the letter, their faces immediately paled. They finally understood why Lord Taibai didn’t directly instruct them to do anything but instead passed them a spirit power letter.

The content of the letter was: There must have been a spy who gave away young master Kongping’s whereabouts. Root out that person!

Sima Xiangtu was unaware of the conversation that had transpired amongst those from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect. He had obediently left the palace for the Nine Souls Sacred Clan to settle the matter.

That being said, all he had to do was to force them into submission. There was nothing more effective than that.

After dealing with the Nine Souls Sacred Clan, he returned to his own quarters. He crossed his legs and sat down, intending to cultivate, but something caught his attention.

“Hm?”

Sima Xiangtu first touched his own eyes to seal off the confinement formation imprisoning the Ox-nosed Old Daoist before forming a series of hand seals and pointing it in front of him.

Weng!

A spirit formation gate surfaced.

Moments later, a person walked through the spirit formation gate. It was the black-robed man whom Chu Feng had met at Lush Immortal City!

It was just that he was in a terrible state, and black aura was continuously puffing out of his body.

“Master, I was useless!”

The black-robed man immediately kneeled down in front of Sima Xiangtu. It turned out that he was Sima Xiangtu’s disciple.

“How did you suffer such severe injuries? I left a formation on you. Even if you aren’t a match for Chu Feng, you shouldn’t have lost so badly.”

Sima Xiangtu hurriedly walked over and supported the black-robed man up. He constructed a recovery formation and began treating him. It was just that there was something peculiar about the recovery formation he was using.

A hint of worry appeared on Sima Xiangtu’s face as he treated the black-robed man.

“Master, Chu Feng possesses extremely powerful means. His martial skill allows him to rival enemies two cultivation ranks stronger than him. I wasn’t a match for him. If not for the defensive formation you left on me, I’d have lost my life,” the black-robed man said.

“I’ve underestimated Chu Feng. Jiang Kongping is safe right now, so you don’t need to worry too much about it. It’s just that you aren’t in a condition to stay here for too long. You should return first and recuperate from your injuries,” Sima Xiangtu said.

“Master, I am already about to acclimatize myself. I shouldn’t be long before I can accomplish what you have asked of me,” the black-robed man said confidently.

“I have other arrangements. You need not worry about that,” Sima Xiangtu said.

The black-robed man panicked upon hearing those words. He quickly added, “Master, please give me some time. I won’t let you down a second time. I beg you not to abandon me!”

It was an intense reaction that fully displayed his fear.

Sima Xiangtu chuckled softly before patting the black-robed man's shoulder, saying, "My silly disciple. That matter isn't as important as your safety is to me. Besides, I have found another solution to resolve that matter. You just have to focus on your recuperation for the time being. I'll return you your freedom soon enough. n./0V**El**ln

"By then, I'll take you out of that damned place, and we'll leave our mark in the vast world of cultivation. By then, be it the Pill Dao Immortal Sect, the Seven Realms Sacred Mansion, or the Totem Dragon Clan, they will all be trampled beneath our feet!" Sima Xiangtu said.

"Master, I'm grateful for your favor. I swear that I'll never let you down again," the black-robed man said.

"Go back. The Pill Dao Immortal Sect has eyes on me, so you can't stay here for too long," Sima Xiangtu said.

"Master, I'll be taking my leave now."

The black-robed man bowed deeply before returning into the spirit formation gate. Shortly after he left, Sima Xiangtu quickly formed a series of hand seals and closed the spirit formation gate.

Even though the spirit formation gate had closed, Sima Xiangtu continued to look at the spirit formation gate with a smile.

"Zhuge Yuankong, your disciple might be powerful, but he's nothing compared to me. You have lost to me, and it's only a matter of time before my disciple tramples your disciple as well!"

Those words were directed toward himself, for he knew that Zhuge Yuanking could no longer hear those words.

## **Chapter 5042: His Goal**

Chu Feng and the others had left the Nine Souls Sacred Clan and were currently aboard a warship, traveling through an ancient teleportation formation. It was the escape route that Chu Feng had designed in advance.

His opponents were simply too strong that he had to ensure that they were able to leave the vicinity of the Nine Souls Sacred Clan as soon as possible.

On the warship, Princess Xiaoxiao was currently kneeling in front of him with a tear-stained face.

“Chu Feng, I’m begging you. Please save my father and my family! I know that I’ve done you wrong, and I’m willing to do anything to make amends as long as you help me. You can take my life if you want to!”

Princess Xiaoxiao had witnessed with her own eyes how Sima Xiangtu defeated her father and imprisoned him. She knew deep well that the Nine Souls Sacred Clan was in peril, and her clan members would be massacred at this rate. n-)0VellBIn

However, she was powerless to reverse the situation.

Sima Xiangtu’s tremendous strength was already difficult to deal with, but that Pill Dao Immortal Sect was like an insurmountable mountain crushing over the Nine Souls Galaxy, not allowing them to catch a breather at all.

With even the Godwish Grandmother and the Sagacious Grandmaster falling in defeat, it was possible that there was no one else in the Nine Souls Galaxy who could curb Sima Xiangtu anymore.

Of everyone she knew, the only one who might just be able to pull it off was Chu Feng.

Chu Feng had the backing of many experts, such as the Godwish Grandmother and the Holy Light Clan.

However, before Chu Feng could answer her, Shengguang Baimai had already lashed out.

“You wench, do you have no sense of shame? How dare you ask young hero Chu Feng for a favor? In the first place, your Nine Souls Sacred Clan was the one who trapped young hero Chu Feng’s friend inside your soul! Why in the world should he help you?”

“In my view, your Nine Souls Sacred Clan deserves to die. The calamity you’re facing right now might just be divine retribution!” Shengguang Baimei spat.

“Elder Baimei, that’s enough.”

Chu Feng stopped Shengguang Baimei with a wave of his hand. He then stepped forward and personally helped Princess Xiaoxiao up.

“I have an irreconcilable grudge with Sima Xiangtu. No matter what it takes, I’ll kill him with my own hands. As for you, I only hope that you’ll fully cooperate with me if I’m able to find a way to save Miaomiao. I’ll also find a way to cure your illness,” Chu Feng said.

Princess Xiaoxiao was stunned. She couldn’t believe what she was hearing.

Chu Feng was telling her that he would turn a blind eye to her previous betrayal.

“Chu Feng, I…”

Princess Xiaoxiao began sobbing even harder than before with guilt written all over her face.

“Now is not the time to cry. Crying won’t solve anything,” Chu Feng said.

He had already taken another look at Princess Xiaoxiao’s soul. While Xian Miaomiao was still unconscious inside Princess Xiaoxiao’s soul, she wasn’t in any danger for the time being.

He could also understand why Princess Xiaoxiao didn’t help him to suppress Sima Xiangtu back then. She didn’t know Sima Xiangtu’s true face back then, and she could tell that he was prioritizing Xian Miaomiao’s survival over hers. It was only natural for her to side with Sima Xiangtu for her own survival.

“Princess Xiaoxiao, you have been by Sima Xiangtu’s side for a while now. Do you know what he’s scheming?” Chu Feng asked.

“I really didn’t know that Yin Ren was plotting something like this. However, your master did tell me some things,” Princess Xiaoxiao said.

“My master?” Chu Feng asked.

“Even though Yin Ren has captured your master, he intentionally allowed your master to see what he has been doing all this while. Due to that, your master has some clues as to what Yin Ren is up to,” Princess Xiaoxiao said.

She began sharing what the Ox-nosed Old Daoist had told her.

Sima Xiangtu's goal didn't come as a surprise to the crowd. In fact, it was the same as what Chu Feng had previously guessed.

Sima Xiangtu was hoping to use the cultivators of the Nine Souls Galaxy to concoct something, just that it was no easy feat to pull it off. That was why he had to collude with the Pill Dao Immortal Sect and borrow their treasure, the Immortal Cauldron.

In exchange for that, Sima Xiangtu promised the Pill Dao Immortal Sect to supply them with a type of energy known as Soul Fog.

"Are the people from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect fools? Soul Fog is a legendary item! The Nine Souls Sacred Clan wasn't able to find it for so many years, so how could Sima Xiangtu possibly secure it for them?" the Godwish Grandmother exclaimed in disbelief.

"What is Soul Fog?" Chu Feng asked.

"It's legendary energy that exists in the Nine Souls Galaxy. Back then, when countless powers were fighting over supremacy over this galaxy, the Nine Souls Sacred Clan was able to rise to the top thanks to the power of Soul Fog.

"It's just that Soul Fog is hidden in an obscure location in the galaxy, making it extremely difficult to acquire. In fact, even the current Nine Souls Sacred Clan has no way of finding and acquiring Soul Fog anymore.

"Too many years have passed since the era of Nine Souls Sacred Clan's founder, such that Soul Fog has become nothing more than a legend. No one knows for sure whether it has truly existed before or not," the Lady of Dao Sea explained.

"Isn't there a member of the Nine Souls Sacred Clan here? She should know better than anyone whether Soul Fog really exists or not!" Shengguang Baimei said as he turned to look at Princess Xiaoxiao.

The others did the same too.

"Based on the historical records of our Nine Souls Sacred Clan, Soul Fog did exist for a period of time. It's a green aura that's hidden in the midst of our Nine Souls Galaxy, and it harnesses incredible power. All beings will tremble in its presence," Princess Xiaoxiao said.



“Does it still exist now?” Chu Feng asked.

“Our Nine Souls Sacred Clan does have a recorded method to find Soul Fog, but it doesn’t work anymore. In fact, the inability to acquire Soul Fog is one of the key reasons why our Nine Souls Sacred Clan has gradually fallen into decline.

“In order to revitalize our Nine Souls Sacred Clan, our ancestors have tried all sorts of ways to find Soul Fog, but it was in vain. Eventually, the conclusion we came to was that Soul Fog did exist for a period of time, but our ancestors might have already depleted it dry,” Princess Xiaoxiao said.

“About what Sima Xiangtu is concocting using the cultivators of the Nine Souls Galaxy, did my master say what will happen if he succeeds?” Chu Feng asked.

“Your master said that if Yin Ren succeeds, his cultivation will advance by leaps and bounds. It’s possible that even those from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect won’t be able to curb him anymore,” Princess Xiaoxiao said.

The crowd could hardly stay calm after hearing those words.

To reach an extent where even the powerful Pill Dao Immortal Sect wouldn’t be able to curb, just how powerful would Sima Xiangtu be?

### **Chapter 5043: Hope Amidst Despair**

“Even the Pill Dao Immortal Sect won’t be able to curb him? I find that hard to believe.”

The first reaction of Shengguang Baimei, the Godwish Grandmother, and the others was disbelief.

That was only to be expected. Even if Sima Xiangtu succeeded and advanced his cultivation considerably, he should only reach early Half-God level at the very most.

In contrast, how powerful is the Pill Dao Immortal Sect?

Putting all things aside, just those who had appeared before them thus far were already much stronger than just rank one Half-God level.

It was hard to imagine that Sima Xiangtu would reach a level that was beyond the Pill Dao Immortal Sect's control.

"I don't think that my master would say such words carelessly. He must have his reasons for coming to this conclusion. It looks like we'll have to stop Sima Xiangtu, or else it'll lead to a great deal of trouble in the future."

In contrast, Chu Feng believed in the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's words.

"Junior Chu Feng, let's ask my master for help," the Lady of Dao Sea said.

She wanted to bring the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect's sectmaster into this.

"While the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect usually steers clear of secular affairs, Lord Sectmaster does have eyes all around. It's likely that she's already aware of Sima Xiangtu's schemes. She would have already interfered if she wanted to."

Chu Feng's words made it clear that it was unlikely that they could rely on the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect's sectmaster.

"It looks like we can only engage Lord Holy Monarch's help. Lord Baimei, what do you think?" Daoist Niantian said.

Daoist Niantian was only an honorary elder, so the one who had the greatest say on this matter was still Shengguang Baimei.

"Sima Xiangtu is a man of wild ambitions, not to mention that he harbors hostility toward our Holy Light Galaxy. We shouldn't interrupt Lord Holy Monarch from his closed-door training unless we're faced with desperate circumstances, but it looks like it's time to do it," Shengguang Baimei said.

He was loyal to both the Holy Valley and the Holy Monarch. If there was another choice, he would have never interrupted the Holy Monarch from his closed-door training. The fact that he was saying such words meant that he thought that the situation was severe enough to warrant such actions.

It was one thing if this was just a matter of the Nine Souls Galaxy, but Sima Xiangtu's malicious intention wasn't just limited to the Nine Souls Galaxy. Even if the Holy Light Galaxy chose to turn a blind eye to it now, it was only a matter of time before Sima Xiangtu came knocking on their door.

“Speaking of which, elder, do you have any way of opening this Cosmos Sack?” Chu Feng suddenly took out a Cosmos Sack and asked.

The eyes of Daoist Niantian, the Godwish Grandmother, and the others lit up upon seeing the Cosmos Sack. They sensed something unusual from it.

“This is a Cosmos Sack of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect. Is it from that young master?” the Godwish Grandmother asked.

“Yes, it belongs to Jiang Kongping,” Chu Feng replied.

He had snatched this Cosmos Sack over from Jiang Kongping, but he wasn’t able to open it due to a special seal being placed on top of it. He had tried getting Jiang Kongping to open it himself, but that fellow actually said that he didn’t know how to open it.

Needless to say, Chu Feng wouldn’t believe that nonsense. He gave Jiang Kongping a beating right afterward, but the latter’s lips were tightly sealed despite all of his screamings.

In the end, he could only let things rest.

“What a formidable formation!”

After examining the Cosmos Sack, the Godwish Grandmother, Daoist Niantian, and the others frowned.

“Elder, are you unable to open it?” Chu Feng asked.

“This formation looks almost impossible to decipher. I don’t think that the young master of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect could have set up such a powerful formation by himself. In fact, I’m guessing that it might have been from one of the ancestors of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect.

“I’m afraid that I’m helpless before this,” the Godwish Grandmother said.

“My apologies, young friend Chu Feng. I’m also unable to help you on this,” Daoist Niantian said.

The Lady of Dao Sea also shook her head.

“It looks like the Pill Dao immortal Sect does possess quite some means.”

Left with no choice, Chu Feng could only stow the Cosmos Sack away for the time being.

A worried look appeared on his face. It was not because he was unable to open the Cosmos Sack but because he had no idea how to deal with Sima Xiangtu. All of a sudden, a thought came to his mind.

“Princess Xiaoxiao, I’ve actually met your father before,” Chu Feng said.

“How is my father doing?” Princess Xiaoxiao asked anxiously.

“You need not worry. He’s not in danger for the time being. However, your father told me that he knows of a person who could save the Nine Souls Galaxy, just that he fainted before he could finish his words. I’d like to ask you if you have any idea whom he might be talking about,” Chu Feng asked.

“I-I’m afraid I’ve never heard anything of that sort from my father.”

Princess Xiaoxiao shook her head.

“You don’t know?”

While Chu Feng had known that there was a chance that Princess Xiaoxiao might not know about it, he was still disappointed to hear her answer. After all, that was the greatest clue out of the quandary they were in right now.

“A person who could save the Nine Souls Galaxy... Do we have a person like that?”

The Godwish Grandmother and the Lady of Dao Sea fell into deep thoughts after hearing those words. They wanted to help Chu Feng to figure it out. However, they couldn’t think of anyone who fitted the profile.

Such a person didn’t exist in their mind.

“Now that I think about it, there was an elder who saved me from the prison that day. It was that elder who told me where Jiang Kongping was. It’s just that I don’t know whether that elder is the person whom the Nine Souls Sacred Clan’s Clan Chief was talking about,” Chu Feng said.

“Junior Chu Feng, what does the elder you have met look like?” the Godwish Grandmother asked.

Chu Feng quickly explained the physical traits of that elder to the Godwish Grandmother.

“This... is a little hard to guess.”

The Godwish Grandmother and the Lady of Dao Sea soon shook their heads, expressing that they couldn't think of anyone like that.

That was only to be expected. Chu Feng hadn't really given them much to work with.

“I have a suggestion. When we leave this teleportation formation, Elder Baimei and Elder Niantian should return to the Holy Light Galaxy first and see if we can invite the Holy Valley's Holy Monarch here to resolve this matter. Meanwhile, I'd like to return to the Nine Souls Sacred Clan,” Chu Feng said.

“Junior Chu Feng, you're hoping to find the Nine Souls Sacred Clan's Clan Chief and ask him who that person is?” the Godwish Grandmother asked.

“That's right,” Chu Feng replied with a nod.

“Young hero Chu Feng, you mustn't do that! The Nine Souls Sacred Clan is bound to be tightly guarded after all that has happened. You shouldn't take such a risk! You should follow us back to the Holy Valley instead,” Shengguang Baimei persuaded.

“Elder Baimei, I'm not doubting the Holy Valley's capability, but are you certain that the Holy Monarch would interfere in this matter?” Chu Feng asked.

“This...”

Shengguang Baimei couldn't answer that question since he couldn't speak in the Holy Monarch's stead.

“Since I was able to successfully infiltrate the prison once, I should be able to do it a second time. Trust me, I'll be able to return safe and sound,” Chu Feng said.

“Junior Chu Feng, we'll accompany you,” the Godwish Grandmother and the Lady of Dao Sea said.

They offered to head there with him instead of persuading Chu Feng not to go because they knew that the Nine Souls Galaxy was in a desperate position.

Chu Feng's plan did offer them a ray of hope, such that they had to attempt it even if it came with huge risks.

Above that, they had promised the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect's sectmaster that they would protect Chu Feng.

"I'm coming along too," Princess Xiaoxiao said.

Chu Feng didn't turn them down because he knew that it would be hard to persuade them otherwise. Besides, the chances of success would be much higher with the Godwish Grandmother's help.

Soon, they exited the teleportation formation and split into two teams.

Shengguang Baimei and Daoist Niantian would be returning to the Holy Valley to engage the Holy Monarch's help. Meanwhile, Chu Feng and the others prepared to return to the Nine Souls Sacred Clan to find out who that person who could save the Nine Souls Galaxy was.

Shengguang Baimei and Daoist Niantian first took their leave whereas Chu Feng and the others first planned out their route. After they were done with their planning, they headed toward the ancient teleportation formation, only to be stopped by a sudden voice behind them.

"You're thinking of returning to the Nine Souls Sacred Clan? Don't you know how dangerous that place is?"

Chu Feng and the others quickly turned their heads around upon hearing that voice.

"Elder, it's you!" Chu Feng exclaimed in delight.

### **Chapter 5044: Only Chance**

Chu Feng's eyes lit up in excitement upon seeing who had appeared behind him. It was the mysterious elder who had saved his life back at the Nine Souls Sacred Clan's prison and advised him to capture Jiang Kongping.

Judging from the means displayed by the mysterious elder thus far, he was fairly certain that the latter was the person whom the Nine Souls Sacred Clan's Clan Chief believed to be able to save the Nine Souls Galaxy.

In fact, the reason why Chu Feng wanted to return to the Nine Souls Sacred Clan despite the risks was to gather some information about this mysterious elder, but the latter appeared right before his eyes at a timely moment.

This was indubitably good news.

“Luckily, I left a tracking mark on you, or else I wouldn’t have been able to find you. Chu Feng, why are you so reckless? You’ll only be leaping to your death if you were to head to the Nine Souls Sacred Clan right now,” the mysterious elder said.

Those words explained why the mysterious elder was able to find Chu Feng here.

“Elder, there isn’t any need for us to head to the Nine Souls Sacred Clan anymore now that you’re here.”

Chu Feng chuckled softly before carrying on.

“Elder, Sima Xiangtu’s ambition will cause many cultivators of the Nine Souls Galaxy to lose their lives. We have to stop him. Do you have any plan as to how we can do that?”

Chu Feng dove straight into the point.

“I do know a way out, but it won’t be easy to pull it off. In fact, whether the Nine Souls Galaxy can be saved or not depends on you now,” the mysterious elder said.

“Depends on me?”

Chu Feng was surprised to hear that since he wasn’t even a match for Sima Xiangtu, let alone the Pill Dao Immortal Sect.

“There’s a way you can deal with him, but the feasibility of it is low. You might even be put in danger. It’s not something that anyone can do, and you’re the only one I know who can shoulder this responsibility. That’s why, Chu Feng, I need to ask you if you’re willing to put your life on the line for the people of the Nine Souls Galaxy,” the mysterious elder said.

“Elder, what’s the way you’re speaking of?” Chu Feng asked.

The Godwish Grandmother and the Lady of Dao Sea also stared intently at the mysterious elder, curious to know what could possibly allow them to deal with an enemy as powerful as the Pill Dao Immortal Sect. n--Ovel

The mysterious elder didn't answer Chu Feng's question directly. Instead, she took off her robe and revealed her appearance. Just as Chu Feng had suspected, she was indeed a woman, just that her appearance was more masculine than feminine.

Her skin was rough, her eyebrows and lips were thick, and her nose was large. She had huge eyes too, which looked oddly out of place on her despite being usually associated with good looks.

As for her physique, it could be easily summarized with one word: brawny.

Most importantly of all, she wasn't a human but a monstrous beast.

She had sharp ears and milky white skin unlike any other human. Many of her features were green in color, such as her irises, her hair, and even her fingernails. On top of that, she had a green slender tail that was reminiscent of a vine.

Chu Feng noticed that the Godwish Grandmother and the Lady of Dao Sea had much stronger reactions upon seeing the true appearance of the mysterious elder. They appeared to recognize the mysterious elder, just that they were unable to believe their eyes.

"You... Are you from the Monstrous Spirit Clan?" the Godwish Grandmother asked with an uncertain tone.

The elder chuckled and replied, "I am indeed from the Monstrous Spirit Clan. My name is Yao Cheng."

Even though the elder had a masculine appearance, her voice was incredibly soothing. From the courteous tone she took toward the Godwish Grandmother, it could be seen that she was an amicable person."

"The Monstrous Spirit Clan actually exists! If that's the case, you must be the savior whom the Nine Souls Sacred Clan's Clan Chief was talking about?" the Godwish Grandmother asked with a hint of excitement.



She wasn't the only one who was overjoyed by the current turn of affairs. The Lady of Dao Sea also had an expectant look in her eyes. Seeing that, Yao Cheng shook her head.

"I might be a member of the Monstrous Spirit Clan, but I don't have the ability to save the Nine Souls Galaxy. However, if Chu Feng is willing, he could become that person."

Yao Cheng turned to look at Chu Feng after saying those words.

"Elder, I'm willing to give it a try if there's anything I can do to save the Nine Souls Galaxy. May I know what's the way you're referring to?" Chu Feng asked.

"I'll get straight to the point. We might still be able to deal with Sima Xiangtu, but we wouldn't stand a chance against the Pill Dao Immortal Sect behind him. At least on the surface, there's not a single power in our Nine Souls Galaxy that could oppose the Pill Dao Immortal Sect. However, our Monstrous Spirit Clan has a tool that might just be able to curb Sima Xiangtu and the Pill Dao Immortal Sect.

"Our clan has been sealed off from the rest of the world all this while, allowing only clan members to enter our territory. Over the years, the seal has weakened considerably, making it possible for juniors from other clans to enter the premises too. It's just that it's easier said than done, and there's a chance that you might lose your life if you fail," Yao Cheng said.

"Elder, will I be able to obtain the tool you're talking about as long as I'm able to enter the Monstrous Spirit Clan?" Chu Feng asked.

"That's hard to say. It depends on your capability. Also, I ought to inform you that our clan members view outside cultivators with hostility, so even entering our clan will pose a problem for you. The process will be both hard and dangerous.

"If you wish to give it a try, I can bring you there. Otherwise, we can simply part ways here and treat it as if this meeting has never happened before," Yao Cheng said.

A mere instant after she said those words, Chu Feng unhesitatingly gave his answer, "Elder, I'm willing to give it a try."

There was no way he would let this opportunity slip past his fingers.

### **Chapter 5045: About the Monstrous Spirit Clan**

Having come to a decision, the group quickly set off.

Through secret conversations he had with the Godwish Grandmother and the Lady of Dao Sea via voice transmission, Chu Feng learned that Yao Cheng hadn't reached Half-God level yet, though she was likely to be at pinnacle Martial Exalted level at the very least.

But rather than Yao Cheng's cultivation, Chu Feng was much more curious about Yao Cheng's clan. Based on the Godwish Grandmother and Lady of Dao Sea's reactions, he could tell that the Monstrous Spirit Clan was a powerful clan.

He was just going to inquire about it, but someone else beat him to it.

"Elders, can you tell me more about the Monstrous Spirit Clan?" Princess Xiaoxiao sent a voice transmission to Chu Feng, the Godwish Grandmother, and the Lady of Dao Sea simultaneously.

Chu Feng looked at Princess Xiaoxiao in astonishment.

It was one thing for an outsider of the Nine Souls Galaxy like him to have not heard about the Monstrous Spirit Clan, but Princess Xiaoxiao was a member of the Nine Souls Sacred Clan. It was surprising for her to have not heard about them too.

"Princess Xiaoxiao, you have never heard of the Monstrous Spirit Clan?" the Lady of Dao Sea asked via voice transmission.

"Yes, I've never heard of them before," Princess Xiaoxiao replied.

"I've heard that the Nine Souls Sacred Clan has sealed off information about the Monstrous Spirit Clan, but I didn't think that they would withhold that information to their own clan members too," the Godwish Grandmother remarked mockingly.

Her words brought a change to Chu Feng and Princess Xiaoxiao's expression. The two of them immediately understood the implied meaning

behind those words—there was a history between the Nine Souls Sacred Clan and the Monstrous Spirit Clan.

“Actually, the two of us only learned about the Monstrous Spirit Clan’s existence by coincidence. That’s why we weren’t certain about whether they really exist or not.”

With that, the Godwish Grandmother began sharing the background of the Monstrous Spirit Clan.

The Monstrous Spirit Clan were descendants of a race from the Ancient Era, and they could be said to be one of the indigenous clans of the Nine Souls Galaxy. Despite their old lineage, their strength had always been so-so.

During the warring era, the Monstrous Spirit Clan was able to survive only because they chose to maintain a neutral position. They had no wish to rule the world, so no one viewed them as a threat. By the time the Nine Souls Sacred Clan united the Nine Souls Galaxy, the Monstrous Spirit Clan had already partially faded into the background.

But all of a sudden, the Monstrous Spirit Clan abruptly grew stronger.

According to the rumors, the Monstrous Spirit Clan had obtained a unique power along with a special energy. It was said that the power and the energy would grant great strength to its wielder if one was able to control them, possibly even to the extent of threatening the Nine Souls Sacred Clan’s rule.

Those rumors were unfounded at that juncture, but the Nine Souls Sacred Clan wasn’t about to take a risk. Thus, they began making a move to eradicate the Monstrous Spirit Clan.

The Nine Souls Sacred Clan was still at its peak back then, such that the Monstrous Spirit Clan didn’t stand a chance at all. The battle resulted in huge losses for the Monstrous Spirit Clan, but quite a few members of the Monstrous Spirit Clan still managed to get away. The Nine Souls Sacred Clan tried pursuing them but to no avail.

Ever since then, no one had seen the Monstrous Spirit Clan anymore. It was as if they had vanished from the face of the world.

In any case, the Nine Souls Sacred Clan had achieved their goal.

It was also around that period of time that the Nine Souls Sacred Clan started sealing off all news surrounding the Monstrous Spirit Clan, such that those three words became taboo in the Nine Souls Galaxy.

As time went by, the Monstrous Spirit Clan was forgotten by the world. Even in the historical records, their name was nowhere to be found.

“Such a thing actually happened?” Princess Xiaoxiao exclaimed with a deep frown.

She had a feeling that this wasn't just a fabricated story. For that reason, she felt deeply ashamed for what her ancestors had done. It was simply tyrannical of them to massacre a clan just to reinforce their rule.

“To be frank, I'm still not very certain whether Yao Cheng is really a member of the Monstrous Spirit Clan. Based on what we have heard, there are no men in the Monstrous Spirit Clan. They reproduce through a rather peculiar method.

“Other than that, the members of the Monstrous Spirit Clan were known to be great beauties, but while Yao Cheng's physical traits do correspond to that of the Monstrous Spirit Clan, it seems a little far-fetched to claim that she's beautiful,” the Godwish Grandmother said.

“She might have disguised her appearance,” Chu Feng suggested.

“I see no reason for her to disguise her appearance when she's retaining all of her physical traits as a monstrous spirit,” the Lady of Dao Sea replied.

Chu Feng agreed with those words too.

However, this was not a matter of great importance. Considering how long the Monstrous Spirit Clan had vanished from the world, it wouldn't be surprising if there were some deviations from the records.

Along the way, Chu Feng and the others tried to ask Yao Cheng about the Monstrous Spirit Clan, but the latter appeared reluctant to talk about her clan. Due to that, they weren't able to learn anything more about the Monstrous Spirit Clan.

They swiftly traversed through a teleportation formation and continued rushing ahead till they finally arrived at a beautiful floating mountain range.

“Elder, are we here now?” the Lady of Dao Sea asked.

“Yes, we’re here,” Yao Cheng replied with a nod.

“It’s actually this place?”

There was a peculiar look on the Lady of Dao Sea’s face as she spoke.

Meanwhile, Yao Cheng began forming a series of hand seals to open the gate leading into the Monstrous Spirit Clan.

Boom boom boom!

Out of the blue, the sky and earth started to rattle. Snowflakes soon started falling from the sky. It wouldn’t have been as surprising if not for the fact that the sky was clear. The snowflakes quickly accumulated, and it didn’t take long for their surroundings to be covered in snow.

These snowflakes were emanating a faint light that dissipated upon touch. They weren’t real snowflakes but manifestations of a phenomenon.

“It’s coming from that direction.”

Chu Feng activated the Heaven’s Eye and quickly pointed southwest. That was where the phenomenon was originating from.

“That’s where Lele is cultivating! Did she succeed?” the Lady of Dao Sea exclaimed in excitement.

“Lele? What is she doing here?” Chu Feng asked in bewilderment.

He knew that the Lady of Dao Sea was referring to Wang Yuxian. After parting ways that day, Wang Yuxian left together with her seniors from the Dao Sea... but they were nowhere near the Dao Sea right now.

“Junior Chu Feng, this is the place where I often bring Lele and the others to cultivate. We have been using this place for quite a few years now, which is why I’m surprised that the Monstrous Spirit Clan was located here too,” the Lady of Dao Sea explained.

That made it clear why the Lady of Dao Sea was clearly surprised when she saw Yao Cheng stopping here.

## Chapter 5046: Awakening Bloodline

It turned out that this was the Lady of Dao Sea's secret training spot. She had occupied this land for quite a few years now, but never in her wildest imagination had she thought that she would have such a powerful neighbor in this peaceful land.

And of all people, it would actually be the legendary Monstrous Spirit Clan.

"Elder, you mentioned that this phenomenon has something to do with Lele?" Chu Feng asked worriedly.

As beautiful as the phenomenon looked, its power was not to be understated. A person who could trigger such an incredible phenomenon had to be someone formidable. If Wang Yuxian was really behind this, it was a call for celebration.

"It should be. I've seen this phenomenon before, just that it looks grander than ever today. Lele might have just successfully awakened her bloodline. Let's go and take a look," the Lady of Dao Sea said as she began flying in the direction of the phenomenon.

Chu Feng and the others quickly rushed over too.

Upon arriving at the mountain peak, the Lady of Dao Sea took out a spirit formation key and activated it. A spirit formation gate quickly manifested. Upon passing through the spirit formation gate, the crowd found themselves entering a spirit formation space.

The spirit formation space was vast, comparable to that of a small realm. It was also snowing inside the spirit formation space, but it looked far more impressive than it did outside.

The Lady of Dao Sea led the way forward, and they soon arrived at a city.

There was a tower at the center of the city. A formation was churning inside the tower, shrouding it with spirit power. This was also where the phenomenon was coming from.

Gathered outside the tower were the disciples of the Dao Sea. All of them had excited looks on their faces. They were so engrossed with watching the tower that none of them noticed the arrival of Chu Feng and the others.

It was only when the Lady of Dao Sea spoke up that they were finally alerted to their presence.

“Master, you’re back!”

“Look! Doesn’t it look like our junior has succeeded in her breakthrough?”

The disciples of the Dao Sea quickly gathered around the Lady of Dao Sea’s side.

“From the looks of it, she should have successfully awakened her bloodline. Let’s wait for Lele to come out,” the Lady of Dao Sea spoke with inconcealable excitement.

“Elder, what kind of bloodline does Lele have?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“I’m not too sure either, but I know that Lele’s potential will be unrivaled if she successfully awakens her bloodline. Let me put it this way. Junior Chu Feng, I know that you possess tremendous talent, and it’s only a matter of time before you surpass us. However, if Lele awakens her bloodline, she might just be able to keep pace with your footsteps,” the Lady of Dao Sea replied proudly.

She began to share her first meeting with Wang Yuxian.

It happened due to this very phenomenon. The snow had guided the Lady of Dao Sea to Wang Yuxian. Even at first sight, the Lady of Dao Sea could tell that the phenomenon wasn’t caused by a Divine Power but an incredible amount of energy lying latent inside Wang Yuxian’s body.

That was why she started devoting resources to grooming Wang Yuxian.

Wang Yuxian didn’t let her down either. She grew at an incredible pace, even becoming the strongest junior of the Nine Souls Galaxy.

What excited the Lady of Dao Sea more was that the current talent displayed by Wang Yuxian wasn’t her full potential yet. According to Wang Yuxian, she had only managed to grasp 30% of her bloodline ability thus far. If she could take full control of it, her strength would likely grow by leaps and bounds.

Wang Yuxian had been working hard toward that over the years. She had managed to build up a strong foundation thus far, and all she was lacking now was an impetus for a breakthrough.

The phenomenon occurring right now was even grander than what the Lady of Dao Sea saw when she first met Wang Yuxian. That was how she was able to deduce that Wang Yuxian had managed to awaken her bloodline ability.

“Little sister, you never told me that your disciple had such a powerful bloodline. You have surely kept this secret well hidden from me!”

The Godwish Grandmother expressed her envy upon hearing how formidable Wang Yuxian’s bloodline was.

“Big sister, I have told you before that my disciple isn’t to be underestimated. It’s not without reason that I’ve gone so far to nurture her talents. You’re finally starting to see how formidable our Lele is, right?” the Lady of Dao Sea replied gleefully.

“I also didn’t know that Lele has such a formidable bloodline.”

Chu Feng could feel how impressive the phenomenon was, which was why he could tell that the Lady of Dao Sea wasn’t just bragging here. Wang Yuxian’s bloodline was indeed a formidable one.

“Are you really unaware just what kind of bloodline is this?” Yu Sha suddenly spoke up.

“Yu Sha, could it be that you recognize Lele’s bloodline?” Chu Feng asked.

“I have heard my elders mentioning it in passing once. In your world of cultivation, there are a few impressive bloodlines aside from the Heavenly Bloodline. Of them, there’s one that induces a snowstorm. I have never seen it in person, but what we’re seeing here resembles what my elders described back then,” Yu Sha said.

“Is there a name for that bloodline?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“There is. It’s called Saintsnow Immortal Pulse,” Yu Sha said.

“Saintsnow Immortal Pulse? Do you know the abilities of this bloodline?” Chu Feng asked.

“I’m afraid not. I only know that the Saintsnow Immortal Pulse isn’t hereditary. Similar to Divine Powers, it’s bestowed by heaven, just that it’s much rarer,” Yu Sha said.



“Is that so?”

Chu Feng was delighted to hear that. He was happy that a good friend of his had obtained such a rare and powerful bloodline.

“The snow is starting to dissipate?”

All of a sudden, the snow around them began to disappear at an increasing rate. At the same time, the formation inside the tower had also stopped churning.

The crowd quickly turned their eyes to the entrance of the tower as they waited for Wang Yuxian to make an appearance.

Creak!

The tower doors finally opened, and Wang Yuxian stepped out from within.

“Waaa!!!”

The eyes of the crowd lit up upon seeing Wang Yuxian.

Her appearance had undergone a significant change. Her hair and eyebrows had turned snowy white, and there was a rune resembling a snowflake imprinted on her forehead. On top of that, she was shrouded in a white glow with snowflakes in it.

Wang Yuxian had previously given off an air of impeccable purity, but now, it was enhanced with an additional layer of sanctitude. She resembled a goddess who had descended from heaven.

Other than the changes in her appearance, her cultivation had also grown significantly. She hadn't concealed her cultivation, so the crowd was able to tell that she was currently at rank six Martial Exalted level.

“Master, Chu Feng?”

Upon seeing the Lady of Dao Sea and Chu Feng, Wang Yuxian immediately sprinted over to their side. The white glow around her and the runic imprint on her forehead faded, and her cultivation started to fall from rank six Martial Exalted level to rank four.

From this, it could be seen that Wang Yuxian was actually at the same cultivation level as Chu Feng, just that her bloodline ability had raised her cultivation by two ranks.

“Lele, you have awakened your bloodline?” the Lady of Dao Sea asked.

“I haven’t fully grasped it, but I’m already 60% there,” Wang Yuxian replied.

“Not bad, not bad. You have already reached such a level despite only awakening 60% of your bloodline. As expected of my disciple. You really didn’t let me down!”

The Lady of Dao Sea was overjoyed to hear Wang Yuxian’s words.

“This lady over here has impressive talents. Are you willing to accompany Chu Feng into our Monstrous Spirit Clan?” Yao Cheng suddenly spoke up at this juncture.

“Is my disciple allowed to enter the Monstrous Spirit Clan too?” the Lady of Dao Sea anxiously asked.

The eager look on her face had already betrayed her thoughts.

### **Chapter 5047: The Prophecy is Coming True**

“Of course, there’s no way I would turn her away after she has displayed such impressive talents. However, I have to confirm whether she’s willing to come with us to the Monstrous Spirit Clan or not since it’ll be dangerous,” Yao Cheng said before turning to Wang Yuxian.

However, the Lady of Dao Sea answered before Wang Yuxian could say a word at all, “She’s willing! My disciple is willing to go with you!”

“Master, what does this elder mean?” Wang Yuxian asked out of curiosity.

“Lele, a calamity is about to befall our Nine Souls Galaxy, and you’ll have a chance to stop it from happening.”

The Lady of Dao Sea looked at Wang Yuxian expectantly as she explained the circumstances to the latter.

“I never thought that something like this would happen. Elder, master, I’m willing to accompany Chu Feng to the Monstrous Spirit Clan.”

Wang Yuxian accepted the offer without any hesitation. She turned to look at Chu Feng with a smile, seemingly looking forward to fighting alongside him.

“Let’s set off then,” Yao Cheng said.

Soon, they returned to where Yao Cheng had previously brought them to. Yao Cheng took out a spirit formation key.

“This key...” Chu Feng murmured with a contemplative gleam in his eyes.

“What’s wrong, Chu Feng?” Yu Sha asked, having overheard what Chu Feng had said.

“It’s nothing.”

Chu Feng shook his head.

He had felt a sense of familiarity from the spirit formation key, but he couldn’t tell where this sense of familiarity was coming from. However, if there was one thing he was sure of, this spirit formation key didn’t belong to the Monstrous Spirit Clan. There wasn’t the slightest monstrous spirit aura on it at all.

Even so, Yao Cheng was still able to fuse her aura into the spirit formation key without any problem.

Weng!

The spirit formation gate released a blinding light, and a thousand meters tall spirit formation gate began to form.

The Lady of Dao Sea and the Godwish Grandmother frowned at the sight of the spirit formation gate. They could sense just how resilient the spirit formation gate was, such that it was impossible for them to pass through it.

It was one thing if it was just resilient, but the spirit formation gate had a defensive mechanism to it too. Anyone who wasn’t a member of the Monstrous Spirit Clan who attempted to barge through the spirit formation gate would be halted by it and even face danger.

“Elder, will they really be able to pass through that?”

The Lady of Dao Sea looked at Yao Cheng with worry in her eyes. She could tell that the spirit formation gate was guarded against all outsiders, including

juniors. It was unlike the ancient remnants, where one could enter freely as long as one was a junior.

Yao Cheng rose into the sky and headed over to the top of the spirit formation gate.

“This spirit formation gate is restricted to only members of our Monstrous Spirit Clan. No one from other races is allowed to pass through it, be it elders or juniors. However, the barrier has been steadily weakening over time, such that juniors are now able to enter from this area,” Yao Cheng said as she pointed to a small area of the hulking spirit formation gate.

Upon hearing her words, Chu Feng and the others rose into the sky and scrutinized the spirit formation gate. They soon concluded that what Yao Cheng had said was true.

Upon careful examination, there was indeed a part of the spirit formation gate that was much weaker. It would still be hard for those from the older generation to pass through it, but it might just be feasible for the juniors.

The only problem was that this spirit formation gate didn't just consist of the entrance. It was likely that there was a passageway beyond it, which would make the journey quite perilous.

“You are all world spiritists, so you should understand the risks here even if I don't explain them to you. I'll be frank with you. I have no idea what you'll encounter on the other side of the spirit formation gate either, so you should think your decision through,” Yao Cheng said.

“Elder, is there no way for the two of them to enter the Monstrous Spirit Clan safely? I mean, this is the territory of your Monstrous Spirit Clan. If you wish it so, surely you should be able to allow outsiders to enter? Also, I'd like to ask what's the way to save the Nine Souls Galaxy, that you mentioned earlier,” the Lady of Dao Sea asked.

Chu Feng and Wang Yuxian's lives were at stake here. She wanted to first clarify the situation and see if there were any other safer alternatives.

“I'm afraid that our Monstrous Spirit Clan is unable to remove the restriction on the spirit formation gate. As for what the way is, I'll tell these two young friends here if they are able to enter our Monstrous Spirit Clan. Otherwise, it'll be futile even if I tell them now,” Yao Cheng said.

She then turned to Chu Feng and Wang Yuxian,

“I’ll be waiting for you inside. I’ll give you an hour. If I don’t see you within an hour, I’ll be closing this spirit formation gate.”

With those words, she entered the spirit formation gate and passed through with ease.

“Junior Chu Feng, you need not feel responsible for the affairs of the Nine Souls Galaxy. You don’t have to take this risk if you don’t want to,” the Godwish Grandmother advised Chu Feng.

“To be honest with you, I have no interest in the affairs of the Nine Souls Galaxy. However, my master is still in the hands of Sima Xiangtu. That leaves me with no choice but to meddle in this. Lele, why don’t you wait for me here? I can enter by myself,” Chu Feng said.

“Are you looking down on me? I know that you’re formidable, but I was the one who caused that incredible phenomenon earlier. I was still wondering why I would suddenly make a breakthrough at this juncture, but I get it now. It might all be for this moment,” Wang Yuxian told Chu Feng with a smile.

Despite her pure appearance, she was like a mischievous and adorable little girl. It was just that she only showed this side of hers to two people in this world, the Lady of Dao Sea and Chu Feng.

“Master, please forgive me for being unfilial, but I wish to enter the Monstrous Spirit Clan together with Chu Feng.”

Wang Yuxian turned to the Lady of Dao Sea to seek her permission.

“Lele, if you have truly thought things through, you may go ahead with it. I’ll respect your decision today,” the Lady of Dao Sea said.

“Thank you, master.”

Wang Yuxian was delighted to receive the permission of her master.

“Let’s go then.”

Chu Feng made his way toward the area pointed out by Yao Cheng earlier and entered the spirit formation gate. Indeed, he was able to pass through it without any problems.

“Master, Senior Aunt, I’ll be heading in too.”

Wang Yuxian bowed to the Lady of Dao Sea and the Godwish Grandmother before hurriedly following suit.

“Little sister, you’re acting a little weird. I know just how fond you are of Wang Yuxian, but why are you so eager to have her shoulder this risk together with Junior Chu Feng?”

The Godwish Grandmother noticed that the Lady of Dao Sea had an expectant look on her face even though it was tinged with worry too. It was as if Wang Yuxian’s choice was the one she had hoped for too. This was different from how the Lady of Dao Sea usually was.

“Big sister, do you still remember the prophecy I told you about? Even though who would stop the Nine Souls Galaxy’s calamity was eventually changed to Junior Chu Feng, the one who first showed up was still none other than my Lele.

“I didn’t understand back then why Lele would show up when Junior Chu Feng was the one who would stop the calamity, but I think I finally get it now. Our Lele has the ability to stop the calamity too.

“Just wait and see. They’ll surely succeed. I’m confident that they’ll be able to safely enter the Monstrous Spirit Clan and stop the Nine Souls Galaxy’s calamity. This is heaven’s will, something that had been predestined right from the start!” the Lady of Dao Sea said.

“Is the Spirit Rock of Prophecies really that accurate?”

The Godwish Grandmother fell into deep thoughts upon hearing those words.

She was reluctant to believe in prophecies, thinking that they were just superstitions. She thought that cultivators should prioritize strength, for the world of cultivation only respected the strong.

But when she looked down on the chain of events, she couldn’t help but feel that everything had been leading up to the prophecy. It felt too much of a coincidence to call it as such. It made her wonder if the prophecy was truly real or not.

At least at this very moment, she hoped for it to be the case so that Chu Feng and Wang Yuxian could return safely from the Monstrous Spirit Clan.

### **Chapter 5048: The Way to Save the Galaxy**

Meanwhile, Chu Feng and Wang Yuxian had already entered the passageway beyond the spirit formation gate. The structure of the passageway was quite simple, and it wasn't very long either, but the two of them were having trouble passing through it.

Every step they took was incredibly arduous, resulting in a slow speed of progression.

Waves of spirit power were battering down on them ceaselessly from all directions, leaving them feeling as if needles were stabbing into their bodies. The aggression was exceptionally intense from the front as if it was trying to deter them from advancing any further.

Chu Feng moved his arm swiftly to form a barrier whereas Wang Yuxian took shelter by his side. Despite the two of them traveling together, Chu Feng was single-handedly blocking the attacks coming from the formation.

There were two reasons for that.

One, it was impossible to block off the spirit power battering down on them. Chu Feng and Wang Yuxian had tried using spirit power, martial power, treasures, and weapons to protect themselves, but nothing could stop the aggression of the spirit power.

In other words, they had to suffer the battering of the spirit power. There was no way to circumvent that.

Two, while the spirit power would deal damage to both Chu Feng and Wang Yuxian, Chu Feng fared relatively better than Wang Yuxian in taking the damage. That was why Wang Yuxian's complexion looked worse even though she was being shielded here.

If Wang Yuxian had to take the full brunt of the spirit power over an extended period of time, she would have died without a sliver of doubt.

“Chu Feng, I'm sorry. I came here wanting to help you, but I ended up becoming a burden.”

Hiding behind Chu Feng's arm, Wang Yuxian could only watch helplessly as Chu Feng frantically flung his arms around to shield her from the spirit power. It made her feel guilt-ridden.

"Don't say such foolish words. Since we came in together, we should leave this place together too," Chu Feng replied with a smile.

Despite bearing the full brunt of the spirit power, he wasn't fazed by the pain at all. Any other people would have probably found it intolerable, but it only felt like a prickling pain to him. It was still bearable to him.

This was the greatest strength that Chu Feng possessed from undergoing countless trials—willpower. It allowed him to persevere in times of hardship and suffering.

On top of that, for some reason, this spirit power was also less damaging to him than Wang Yuxian. It would have been fatal to Wang Yuxian if she tried to forcefully endure it.

Chu Feng had no idea what had resulted in this difference, but he wasn't in the mood to ponder about it. He knew that he had to leave this place as soon as possible. That was the only way for them to ensure their safety.

Fortunately, the only ordeal he had to face here was this prickling spirit power. There were no other defensive mechanisms along the way. While it took them a while, they were able to get out of the passageway safely.

On the other side of the spirit formation gate was a brand new world.

It resembled nature's paradise, filled with fragrant flowers, lush trees, and chirping birds. There were uniquely-designed buildings amidst the trees.

Yao Cheng was standing right beside the spirit formation gate, waiting for the two of them. From the smile on her face, it looked like they had succeeded.

"You actually managed to do it. It has been eight hundred years since anyone outside of our Monstrous Spirit Clan has passed through the spirit formation gate and entered this place."

Yao Cheng looked at Chu Feng and Wang Yuxian with eyes brimming with tears as if this was something huge.



“Elder, why do you say that it has been eight hundred years? Hasn’t the Monstrous Spirit Clan already gone into seclusion for tens of thousands of years?” Chu Feng asked curiously.

“Chu Feng and Miss Wang, the two of you wish to know the way to saving the Nine Souls Galaxy, right? I’ll tell you what it is right now.

“The rumors are true. Our Monstrous Spirit Clan obtained powerful energy from an esteemed lord, which allowed us to become much stronger in a short period of time. The Nine Souls Sacred Clan learned about it and thought that we were a threat to them, so they sought to destroy us. Fortunately, our clan chief was prepared for that. She ordered our clan members to move the energy to this place.

“It’s just a pity that we were still too late. The Nine Souls Sacred Clan has already made its move before our Monstrous Spirit Clan can migrate over to this place. Only the clan members responsible for moving the energy survived by chance.

“To be frank, the ones who survived are all the weaker ones. We have no idea how to control the energy, and we didn’t dare to leave this place and exact vengeance on the Nine Souls Sacred Clan either.

“But eight hundred years ago, a highly talented man visited our Monstrous Spirit Clan. He learned how to control the energy within a short period of time. Combining the energy together with the bloodline of our Monstrous Spirit Clan, he created an army of puppets for us before taking his leave. This army of puppets is the key to saving the Nine Souls Galaxy,” Yao Cheng said.

“Elder, how strong are these puppets?” Chu Feng asked.

The cultivators from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect were extremely powerful, such that even the Netherworld Envoy wasn’t a match for them. He wasn’t certain if the puppet army was really a match for them.

“There are 9832 puppets in total. 4000 of them are at rank seven Martial Exalted level, 3000 are at rank eight Martial Exalted level, 2000 are at rank nine Martial Exalted level, and the remaining ones are at Half-God level,” Yao Cheng replied.

Chu Feng and Wang Yuxian were shocked to hear that. Wouldn’t that mean that 832 of the puppets are at Half-God level?

## Chapter 5049: The Only Solution

“Elder, are the remaining puppets all at rank one Half-God level?” Chu Feng continued asking.

It wouldn't be enough to deal with the Pill Dao Immortal Sect if all of them were only at rank one Half-God level.

“500 are at rank one Half-God level, 200 are at rank two Half-God level, and 100 are at rank three Half-God level. I'm not too sure how powerful are the remaining 32, but I do know that they are at Half-God level at the very minimum,” Yao Cheng replied.

“The puppets are that powerful?”

Chu Feng was overjoyed to hear that. He finally understood why Yao Cheng said that the puppet army could save the Nine Souls Galaxy. With such fighting prowess, they would surely be able to deal with Sima Xiangtu and the Pill Dao Immortal Sect.

However, that brought up other questions in Chu Feng's mind.

“Elder, is your Monstrous Spirit Clan unable to control the puppet army?”

Based on what Yao Cheng had told him thus far, the Monstrous Spirit Clan ought to harbor deep hatred toward the Nine Souls Sacred Clan. It didn't make sense for them not to exact vengeance on the Nine Souls Sacred Clan when they had such a powerful puppet army in their possession.

He could only think of two possibilities for this.

One, the Monstrous Spirit Clan had given up on exacting vengeance.

Two, the Monstrous Spirit Clan wasn't able to control the puppet army at all.

“The man who created the puppet army left a formation behind when he departed. He said that anyone who is able to clear the formation will be granted control over the puppet army, but the formation can only be challenged by juniors.

“Many of our juniors have challenged the formation in the past eight hundred years, but no one had been able to clear it thus far. Due to that, we aren't able to tap into the power of the puppet army,” Yao Cheng replied.

It was the same as what Chu Feng had guessed.

“Elder, will the Monstrous Spirit Clan agree to grant us control over the puppet army if we clear the formation? Or are you doing this behind the back of the Monstrous Spirit Clan?” Chu Feng asked.

It was understandable why he had such concerns.

Putting aside the grudge between the Monstrous Spirit Clan and the Nine Souls Sacred Clan, the Monstrous Spirit Clan could have easily replaced the Nine Souls Sacred Clan as the rulers of the Nine Souls Galaxy with such a powerful puppet army under their command.

Who would possibly be willing to lend out such a force to an outsider? Even bringing outsiders in to clear the formation was a huge risk.

The Zhuge Clan was one example. They were willing to go to the extent of resorting to underhanded means and offending many people at once just to prevent Chu Feng from attempting the formation.

“Your concerns are understandable. The man who created the puppet army eight hundred years ago said that any junior who cleared the formation will be able to gain control over the puppet army, even if they aren’t from the Monstrous Spirit Clan.

“This is an opportunity for our Monstrous Spirit Clan to overcome our limits. The only problem is that the members of our Monstrous Spirit Clan are generally hostile toward outsiders. There’s a chance that they might take your life if they were to find you,” Yao Cheng said.

“What should we do then?” Wang Yuxian asked.

“While our Monstrous Spirit Clan is hostile toward outsiders, we respect the strong. Your cultivation levels are high compared to the juniors of our Monstrous Spirit Clan, but that isn’t enough. You have to prove that your talent is far above that of our juniors.

“Our Monstrous Spirit Clan has a talent assessment formation left behind by the lord who brought that energy to us tens of thousands of years ago. The talent assessment formation appears once in a while and can only be used by juniors.

“Luckily, the talent assessment formation has shown signs of activating recently. Our Monstrous Spirit Clan will be bringing a group of juniors there to have their talent assessed when it fully activates. You can use that opportunity to prove your talent too. As long as you’re able to achieve good results there, the members of our Monstrous Spirit Clan will acknowledge you.

“However, I ought to remind you that the consequences of failure will be dire. You’d be lucky to be evicted out of the clan, but in the worst-case scenario, the elders might even sentence you to death. I’ll try my best to protect you since I was the one who brought you in, but I can’t guarantee your safety.

“The Monstrous Spirit Clan’s Clan Chief is currently at the same cultivation level as me, rank nine Martial Exalted level, but the Monstrous Spirit Clan has a defensive formation to deal with invaders. I won’t be a match for her if she activates that formation.

“If you wish to back down right now, it’s still not too late to leave. The two of you should have noticed while you were passing through the spirit formation gate that you won’t face any obstructions when leaving this place,” Yao Cheng said.

“Is that the only way? Is there any chance for us to challenge the puppet army formation straight away?” Wang Yuxian asked.

She would prefer not to take this risk if possible, especially since Yao Cheng had made it clear that the members of Monstrous Spirit Clan weren’t welcoming of strangers. She was worried that even if they achieved good results in the talent assessment formation, the members of the Monstrous Spirit Clan might still be unwilling to let them off.

That could very well cost them their life.

In response to Wang Yuxian’s question, Yao Cheng shook her head and replied, “The puppet army formation is sealed off by a barrier, and the key to the barrier is in the hands of our clan chief. You won’t be able to enter it without her permission, so it’s necessary for you to win her acknowledgment through the talent assessment formation.

“What I’m thinking is for the two of you to enter the talent assessment formation after our juniors leave. If you’re able to receive a good result, I’ll call my clan members over to take a look. Otherwise, the two of you should quickly escape from this place before anyone notices you.

“There’s just one problem. The talent assessment formation doesn’t remain activated for very long. It’ll automatically deactivate if there’s no one standing on it for an extended period of time. You might be able to attempt it secretly if my clan members clear the area right after using the formation, or else you might have to take a risk,” Yao Cheng said.

“Elder, I’m willing to give it a try,” Chu Feng said.

“I’m willing to give it a try too,” Wang Yuxian expressed her stance.

“Good. It’ll likely take some time for the talent assessment formation to fully activate, so let’s first find a place for the two of you to rest,” Yao Cheng said.

With that, she settled them into a cabin inside the forest.

## **Martial God Asura #Chapter 5050: Odd Yao Cheng - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 5050: Odd Yao Cheng**

### **Chapter 5050: Odd Yao Cheng**

According to Yao Cheng, the members of the Monstrous Spirit Clan usually wouldn’t come to the area where Chu Feng and Wang Yuxian were residing at. As long as they didn’t wander around the area, it was unlikely that anyone would notice them.

Yao Cheng didn’t just leave them be after settling them in the cabin. She would occasionally visit with local specialties from the Monstrous Spirit Clan, making sure to take good care of them as if she was an elder of their family.

During this period of time, Chu Feng also voiced one of the doubts in his head: Why is the Monstrous Spirit Clan unable to control the puppet army formation?

Yao Cheng was unable to answer that question. She only knew that the puppet army formation appeared eight hundred years ago, shortly after the man created the puppet army.

Some members of the Monstrous Spirit Clan had asked that man whether the puppet army formation was his doing, but that man said that the formation had nothing to do with him. He had no idea why the puppet army formation appeared either.

As a result, the puppet army formation remained a mystery to the Monstrous Spirit Clan. However, they thought that it might be related to the power that was used to construct the puppet army.

Chu Feng also asked about the man who had appeared eight hundred years ago. He figured that the man was no ordinary cultivator since he was able to swiftly control the power that the Monstrous Spirit Clan was unable to harness for tens of thousands of years.

Unfortunately, Yao Cheng knew nothing about that man at all, not even his name. He was an elusive figure.

...

The third day after Chu Feng and Wang Yuxian arrived at the Monstrous Spirit Clan, the talent assessment formation was finally fully activated.

Yao Cheng immediately brought the two of them to a square where the talent assessment formation was located. It was in a square located in the midst of the jungle. Chu Feng and Wang Yuxian decided to keep a distance away so as to avoid detection.

There were three thousand women gathered in the square. They were all members of the Monstrous Spirit Clan, but unlike Yao Cheng, they were all gorgeous beauties. Even the grannies were divas amongst their peers.

For a moment, Chu Feng and Wang Yuxian thought that they had entered a country of beauties. This was very different from what they had expected.

The first person they had encountered that was from the Monstrous Spirit Clan was Yao Cheng, who was more masculine than she was feminine. Her appearance was off-putting even if one were to look at her as a man. Due to that, the two of them assumed that the others from the Monstrous Spirit Clan would look the same too.

However, it turned out that Yao Cheng was the odd one out. The Monstrous Spirit Clan was indeed full of ravishing beauties, just as what was depicted in the legends. Every single one of them would easily attract long queues of suitors outside.

There were 23 juniors amongst them. They were presumably the ones who would have their talent assessed later on.

The talent assessment formation was in the form of a circular platform. It looked no different from any other talent assessment formations on the surface, but Chu Feng felt a jolt in his heart the moment he laid his eyes on it.

Similar to the spirit formation key that Yao Cheng had previously used, he felt a sense of familiarity with the talent assessment formation too. However, he still couldn't recall where this feeling of familiarity was coming from.

Yao Cheng had explained how the talent assessment formation worked to them beforehand.

There were three stone tablets on the talent assessment formation, each of them with an ancient character inscribed on them. They were ancient inscriptions, but their meanings were easily deciphered.

The characters on each of the three stone tablets were 'Lower', 'Middle', and 'Upper', similar to how starfields were categorized.

A junior of the Monstrous Spirit Clan stepped onto the stage, and she soon induced a pillar of light from the stone tablet that had the 'Lower' character inscribed on it. The pillar of light rushed into the sky, such that it was visible even from a distance away.

The result was self-explanatory. Her talent was of lower rank.

Despite this, the junior of the Monstrous Spirit Clan didn't look disappointed at all. On the contrary, she began celebrating joyfully.

The other juniors who were waiting for their turn on the talent assessment formation also revealed looks of envy. They saw triggering the 'Lower' character stone tablet as an honor.

Soon, the second junior stepped onto the platform of the talent assessment formation. Spirit power swiftly enveloped the junior before seeping back into the formation.

This time around, there was no reaction from any of the stone tablets. The second junior lowered her head in disappointment before stepping down from the platform.

"Juniors who are able to light up the 'Lower' character stone tablet are considered to be prodigies in our clan. For the 'Middle' character stone tablet,

it's considered to be a sign of a top-notch prodigy. Only ten people in our clan have been able to achieve that over the years. As for the 'Upper' character stone tablet, no one has been able to light it up thus far.

"As long as one of you can light up the 'Middle' character stone, you should be able to win our clan chief's acknowledgment. She might just grant you the permission to challenge the puppet army formation," Yao Cheng explained.

Chu Feng finally understood why the first junior was so happy to have been able to light up the 'Lower' character stone tablet. She probably thought that it was impossible for her to light up the 'Middle' and 'Upper' character stone tablets, so she was content with just the 'Lower' character stone tablet.

"Chu Feng should be able to make the 'Upper' character stone tablet light up," Wang Yuxian said.

"The 'Upper' character stone tablet? Are you serious about it?" Yao Cheng asked in disbelief.

It was not that she was looking down on the two of them, but such a thing sounded improbable to her.

"Elder, you must be unaware of how formidable Chu Feng's talent is. You'll know in a while," Wang Yuxian replied confidently.

"Lele, you're flattering me. Wouldn't it be awkward if I can't even make the 'Lower' character stone tablet light up later on?" Chu Feng asked.

"Stop humblebragging. Do you think that I wouldn't know what you're capable of?"

Wang Yuxian shot Chu Feng a look of disdain.

### **Chapter 5051: Affairs From Tens of Thousands of Years Ago**

"If you're able to light up the 'Upper' character stone tablet, I guarantee you that our clan chief will grant you the opportunity to challenge the puppet army formation," Yao Cheng said.

"Really? Why?" Wang Yuxian asked in surprise.

"Our clan regards the results of the talent assessment formation highly because it was from the lord who gifted the powerful energy to our clan tens of



thousands of years ago. If you're able to light up the 'Upper' character stone tablet, our clan will welcome you as an esteemed guest," Yao Cheng said.

"To think that there's such a thing. It looks like our mission has gotten much simpler!"

Wang Yuxian smacked Chu Feng's shoulder and chuckled.

"Did you hear that, Chu Feng? We're counting on you here!"

"I'll try my best," Chu Feng replied with a faint smile that exuded confidence.

He had always been able to obtain outstanding results in anything related to talent assessment, so he didn't think that it would be any different this time around.

"It would be wonderful if you're able to light up the 'Upper' character stone tablet. For the time being, let's wait here till the others are done with the talent assessment," Yao Cheng said.

Chu Feng and Wang Yuxian nodded in agreement. That was what they had agreed on earlier.

If the members of the Monstrous Spirit Clan cleared the area right away, they could attempt the talent assessment formation in secret. Otherwise, they would have no choice but to risk it and attempt the talent assessment formation in front of them.

While waiting, Chu Feng couldn't help but notice a statue in the middle of the square. It was a statue depicting an ordinary-looking man wearing normal clothes. What was weird about the statue was how it had a house constructed around it to shelter it from rain and wind.

There were also fresh food and natural oddities placed in front of the statue as offerings.

"Elder, may I ask who is the person depicted in the statue over there?" Chu Feng asked out of curiosity.

It was not uncommon for cultivators to worship their ancestors, the Buddha, or deities, but the man depicted in the statue looked like an ordinary person.

“He is the lord who bestowed the great energy upon our Monstrous Spirit Clan tens of thousands of years ago,” Yao Cheng replied respectfully.

“Did the Monstrous Spirit Clan create this sculpture to thank him?” Chu Feng asked.

“The statue wasn’t created by us. In fact, the statue is the lord himself. He transformed into the statue,” Yao Cheng replied.

“Ah? He turned into a statue?”

Chu Feng and Wang Yuxian were bewildered. They couldn’t understand how a man could turn into a statue. On top of that, they couldn’t sense any signs of life coming from the statue. There should at least be a whiff of aura from the statue even if the man had died many years ago, but there was nothing of that sort.

“It’s true. The statue is indeed the lord himself. It’s a long story. Our Monstrous Spirit Clan has done a huge injustice to him.”

Yao Cheng bowed apologetically to the statue even though she was quite some distance away.

“Elder, could you tell us more about it?”

Chu Feng and Wang Yuxian couldn’t help but wonder about the history between the Monstrous Spirit Clan and the man who had bestowed energy to them.

“I can tell you, but you mustn’t let it slip to outsiders, or else it might sully the reputation of our Monstrous Spirit Clan. Our Monstrous Spirit Clan has done something terrible to the lord. If there is an afterlife, I hope that he can forgive us for our sins,” Yao Cheng spoke with a deep sigh.

“Elder, don’t worry. My lips are sealed,” Chu Feng promised.

“Same here too.”

Wang Yuxian raised her right hand as if making a vow to heaven.

Yao Cheng chuckled at that sight.

“I chose the two of you not just because of your talent but your trustworthy character too.”

Yao Cheng began sharing the tales passed down within their Monstrous Spirit Clan depicting what had happened back then.

Tens of thousands of years ago, the ambitious Nine Souls Sacred Clan had just united the Nine Souls Galaxy and was seeking to reinforce their rule. To avoid getting involved in the fighting, the Monstrous Spirit Clan chose to go into seclusion.

It was around that period of time that a man visited the Monstrous Spirit Clan and requested to live with them. The problem was that the Monstrous Spirit Clan was a place filled with women. They relied on their unique bloodline ability for reproduction, so they had no need for a man.

In fact, the rules of the Monstrous Spirit Clan stated that clan members were not to get involved in any men, be it physically or emotionally, or else they would be executed.

There was no way the Monstrous Spirit Clan would agree to have a man to live amongst them.

Just as the Monstrous Spirit Clan was about to drive that man away, he suddenly brought out a powerful energy. He claimed that the energy would help them to become strong and that he could mix the energy together with the Monstrous Spirit Clan’s bloodline to create a puppet army that would guarantee their peace.

Any normal person would have thought that he was bragging, but the members of the Monstrous Spirit Clan could sense the great power harnessed inside the energy. They couldn’t tell if that energy was as incredible as that man put it out to be, but they chose to let him have a try at it out of curiosity.

A grand elder promised the man a place in the Monstrous Spirit Clan if he could pull off what he had promised.

The results were shocking.

The man was really able to raise the cultivation and fighting prowess of the Monstrous Spirit Clan’s clan members using that energy. He also managed to

create a puppet army that could only be controlled by members of the Monstrous Spirit Clan.

That puppet army was extremely powerful, far surpassing the one built by another man eight hundred years ago. It was almost like a transcendent existence in the Nine Souls Galaxy tens of thousands of years ago, second to only the Nine Souls Sacred Clan.

One had to know that the Nine Souls Sacred Clan was still at its peak then. To be said to be second only to the Nine Souls Sacred Clan would have been a huge glory.

This demonstrated the unfathomable means of that man.

With the energy enhancing the strength of the clan members and the puppet army to ensure their safety, it looked like the Monstrous Spirit Clan was on its way to greatness.

However, one of the grand elders began to worry about what the man was capable of after witnessing his means and the greatness of that energy. The man's capability could be used to help the Monstrous Spirit Clan, but similarly, it could also be used to destroy it. She feared that it would be impossible for them to curb that man if he ever went out of control.

As much as the man was a benefactor to the Monstrous Spirit Clan, he was also a threat.

Thus, the grand elder began hatching an evil scheme.

### **Chapter 5052: The Powerhouse Who Died Pitifully**

That grand elder was the master of the incumbent Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief back then, as well as the strongest cultivator amongst them. Even though she wasn't the clan chief, she possessed the greatest say within the clan.

She proposed a plan to assassinate that man using a flavorless and scentless poison to the other clan members. Most voiced their disapproval, but a small portion of people who believed in prioritizing their own self-interests over others expressed their approval.

The grand elder was planning to use a flavorless and scentless poison to kill that man.

Out of deference for the grand elder's strength and standing, the clan members had no choice but to go along with her decision despite not agreeing with it.

So, after obtaining the way to use the energy from the man, the grand elder prepared a banquet in the name of thanking him. However, she secretly spiked the alcohol with poison.

Completely unguarded toward the Monstrous Spirit Clan, the man drank the alcohol and swiftly lost his life. However, after his heart stopped beating, his body and clothes suddenly began turning into stone, much to the astonishment of the grand elder.

The grand elder had wanted to obtain more treasures from the man, so she tried to shatter the statue, only to find that it was indestructible despite its humble appearance.

Bizarre things started happening after that.

Not too long after the man died, the Monstrous Spirit Clan suddenly lost control of the puppet army that was given to them. The puppets started slaughtering the members of the Monstrous Spirit Clan, but the casualties consisted of only a few selected individuals.

They were the people who had approved the plan to poison the man. Of course, the grand elder was included in there too.

All of those who initially opposed the plan, including the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief, were left unharmed. However, despite being spared from the slaughter, fear continued to linger amongst the surviving members.

In hopes of putting an end to this matter, the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief kneeled down before the man's statue and begged for his forgiveness. In a bid to placate his anger, she promised him that the future generations of the Monstrous Spirit Clan would worship him.

An apology shouldn't have made any difference at this juncture. The man was already dead, and the idea of him returning as a vengeful spirit was nothing but superstition.

Yet, it somehow worked.

The puppet army dissipated into dust shortly after the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief gave her promise, but the energy brought in by that man remained. Later on, the clan chief ordered for the man's statue to be moved over to this place when they were planning to migrate over.

Tens of thousands of years had passed since then, but the members of the Monstrous Spirit Clan dared not to forget about their ancestors' sins. They still held a deferential attitude toward the man and continued to worship him.

"To think that such a thing had happened back then. That man must have been a powerhouse in the world of cultivation to possess such means and energy. It must have been aggravating to die just like that," Wang Yuxian said.

The Monstrous Spirit Clan had indeed done that man injustice.

"Elder, do you know why that man wanted to reside in the Monstrous Spirit Clan?"

Chu Feng was more curious about that man's goal.

A cultivator that had the means to create such a powerful army wouldn't raise a request for no reason. He must have his own goal for requesting this.

"The lord mentioned that he was waiting for someone in the Monstrous Spirit Clan, and he would leave once that person arrived. However, no one in the Monstrous Spirit Clan believed his words. They thought that it was just an excuse for him to court the ladies of the Monstrous Spirit Clan," Yao Cheng said.

"He was waiting for someone? I guess there's no point trying to figure out who he was waiting for anymore. Tens of thousands of years have already passed since then. The person he was waiting for must have already passed away," Chu Feng said.

While cultivators had longer lifespans, very few were able to live beyond ten thousand years. Tens of thousands of years was usually the cap. Someone from that era couldn't have possibly survived till now.

"It's over now. Are they not planning to leave?"

The last junior was finally done with her talent assessment, but the group showed no signs of leaving. Instead, they began gathering the statue to place more offerings on top of the altar.

“This isn’t good. Today happens to be a day where we pay respects to the lord. How could I have forgotten about that?” Yao Cheng exclaimed in a fluster.

“How long would the ceremony last?” Chu Feng asked.

“Today is a special day. It’ll take at least two hours at the very minimum. The talent assessment formation would have been deactivated by then. I made a huge miscalculation,” Yao Cheng said in a fluster.

“It looks like we’ll have no choice but to risk it. Lele, you should wait here for me.”

Chu Feng began making his move. Keeping his body hidden under a concealment formation, he quietly flitted his way over to the talent assessment formation and leaped onto the circular platform.

“This isn’t good.”

As soon as he landed on the talent assessment formation, his concealment formation began to unravel. Some members of the Monstrous Spirit Clan immediately spotted him.

“Who are you?” a furious bellow echoed.

Everyone on the square immediately turned to Chu Feng with hostility in their eyes.

Boom!

The space suddenly quivered. A powerful gush of martial power rushed in Chu Feng’s direction, harnessing the might of a rank nine Martial Exalted level cultivator!

### **Chapter 5053: The Person Whom That Man Was Waiting For**

Pah!

The powerful oppressive might dispersed before it could get close to Chu Feng. Someone had protected him from the attack.

A silhouette swooped in to stand in between Chu Feng and the others from the Monstrous Spirit Clan. It was none other than Yao Cheng.

“Yao Cheng? You were the one who blocked my oppressive might?” a middle-aged woman asked.

She was the current clan chief of the Monstrous Spirit Clan, as well as the one who had released her oppressive might to attack Chu Feng earlier. Despite having seen Yao Cheng’s interception, she still asked the question out of sheer disbelief.

She didn’t think that Yao Cheng would dare stand in her way. Anyone who opposed the clan chief in the Monstrous Spirit Clan would be deemed a traitor of the clan, and that was a crime that warranted capital punishment!

“Lord Clan Chief, I know that it isn’t right of me to be doing this, but this is all for the sake of the Monstrous Spirit Clan. I hope that you can pardon me for this.”

Out of fear of the clan chief, Yao Cheng quickly kneeled to the floor and asked for forgiveness.

“How dare you, Yao Cheng? Why are you siding with an outsider?”

The crowd berated Yao Cheng upon hearing her confession.

“Yao Cheng, were you the one who brought this man in?” the Monstrous Spirit Clan’s Clan Chief asked.

“Lord Clan Chief, I was indeed the one who brought this young friend in. He’s currently the most talented prodigy of the eastern region, and he entered our Monstrous Spirit Clan with his own ability. I beseech you to allow him to finish the talent assessment. He might just be the person who could change the fate of our Monstrous Spirit Clan,” Yao Cheng said.

“You actually brought an outsider into our Monstrous Spirit Clan... Do you honestly believe that an outsider can change our Monstrous Spirit Clan? Yao Cheng, do you even know what you’re doing? You’re betraying our clan here!”



The crowd from the Monstrous Spirit Clan grew even more infuriated upon hearing her words.

However, the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief didn't say a word. There was a complicated look in her eyes that showed apprehension and anticipation. She was worried that Chu Feng might just succeed here, but at the same time, she also hoped for him to succeed.

It was then that the spirit power that had enveloped Chu Feng returned into the formation, but there was no other reaction after a moment of silence.

"Hahaha..."

Mocking laughter echoed from the members of the Monstrous Spirit Clan. The result of the talent assessment formation would usually show by now, but none of the stone tablets had lit up. This showed that Chu Feng was of mediocre talent.

"Yao Cheng, is this person whom you said could change our Monstrous Spirit Clan? How foolish!" the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief said.

"How could this be?"

Yao Cheng also panicked at that sight. She had seen what Chu Feng was capable of, so she thought that he would have at least been able to trigger the 'Lower' character stone tablet. In fact, she was fairly confident that he would be able to trigger the 'Middle' character stone tablet, and that was the reason why she dared to bring Chu Feng in here.

Yet, the result was completely different from what she had envisioned.

"Yao Cheng, it looks like your plan has fallen empty. You betrayed our clan just to bring in a mediocre talent who doesn't even match up to our own juniors. Since you have chosen to side with an outsider, I'll allow you to die with him. Members of the Monstrous Spirit Clan, activate the formation!" the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief ordered.

The Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief and the other clan members began emanating a peculiar aura that converged on the clan chief. no17E-lb.In

Chu Feng could sense the aura of the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief swiftly strengthening, and he figured that this was the defensive formation that Yao Cheng spoke of.

"Wait a moment," a woman's voice suddenly echoed.

A person descended from the sky and landed beside Chu Feng. It was Wang Yuxian.

"Elder, I have no idea why you view us in hostility, but we bear no ill-will toward the Monstrous Spirit Clan. I plead with you to give me a chance to prove myself through the talent assessment formation," Wang Yuxian said.

"Chu Feng, come down," Yao Cheng said.

The talent assessment formation would only activate when a single person was standing on it. Since Chu Feng's result was less than satisfactory, they could only count on Wang Yuxian here.

Chu Feng understood what Yao Cheng meant, so he quickly leaped down from the talent assessment formation and headed over to Yao Cheng's side.

Weng!

Shortly after Chu Feng stepped away, the talent assessment formation began to trigger. A layer of spirit power shrouded Wang Yuxian before seeping back into the formation.

Weng!

A brilliant pillar of light rushed into the sky.

"That is...!"

The crowd was astonished by what they were seeing, for the pillar of light was coming from the 'Upper' character stone tablet.

"Lord Clan Chief, this..."

The members of the Monstrous Spirit Clan turned to look at their clan chief. Some of them even stopped channeling their auras toward the clan chief, knowing that they couldn't harm Chu Feng and Wang Yuxian anymore.

The Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief found the situation hard to believe, but she also chose to dissipate her aura too and retract her oppressive might.

"I never thought that a junior would possess such great talent. Is this heaven's will?" the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief lamented.

Then, she turned to Wang Yuxian and asked, "This miss over here, what's your name?"

The hostility had already vanished from her eyes, and her words became much gentler.

"I am Wang Yuxian," Wang Yuxian replied.

"Wang Yuxian... are you the lass who has been cultivating outside our Monstrous Spirit Clan?" the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief asked.

She seemed to have heard of Wang Yuxian's name.

"Lord Clan Chief, it's indeed her. She's the talented young lady whom I told you about," Yao Cheng replied.

"Lord Clan Chief, look over there!"

Someone suddenly pointed toward the statue in the middle of the square and exclaimed. The crowd turned their eyes over and lurched in shock.

The man in the statue had turned completely to stone, and this included the possessions on him such as his clothes and his Cosmos Sacktoo. However, a change had occurred to the pearl pendant he wore around his neck. It hadn't garnered much attention back when it was still petrified, but it looked awfully conspicuous now that it had reverted to its original appearance.

The pearl pendant resembled a glass container half filled with some sort of glowing fluid.

"The lord's treasure is reacting to her? Could she be the person whom the lord was waiting for?"

All eyes immediately turned to Wang Yuxian.

## **Chapter 5054: Unqualified**

“Me?”

Wang Yuxian was astonished to see so many gazes on her, especially from the Monstrous Spirit Clan’s Clan Chief. She had heard the story about how the lord worshiped by the Monstrous Spirit Clan was waiting for someone, but how could she possibly be the person he was waiting for?

Tens of thousands of years had passed since then, so there was no way she could have been related to the lord.

“Miss Wang, you don’t need to feel pressured. It’s just that the lord is an important benefactor of our Monstrous Spirit Clan. Back when he first arrived at the Monstrous Spirit Clan, he told our ancestors that he was waiting for someone, just that he never got to meet that person in his lifetime.

“This talent assessment formation was left by him, so we thought that it might have something to do with the person he was waiting for. Countless of our juniors have stepped onto the talent assessment formation over the past tens of thousands of years, but you’re the first one to induce a reaction from the lord’s pendant. n).0V**e**l**b**1n

“We wouldn’t have known that such a reaction was possible if not for you. That’s why we wondered whether you might just be the person whom the lord has been waiting for all this time,” the Monstrous Spirit Clan’s Clan Chief patiently explained the situation to Wang Yuxian.

“Elder, is there anything I would have to do if I was the person whom your lord is waiting for?” Wang Yuxian asked.

“No, you don’t need to do anything at all. To be honest, we have no idea why the lord was waiting for someone. Of course, we aren’t able to confirm whether you’re truly the person whom the lord was waiting for either. It’s just speculation on our part due to the pendant’s reaction,” the Monstrous Spirit Clan’s Clan Chief explained.

She paused for a moment before continuing on, “Miss Wang, you must be here for the power the lord has left with us?”

Instead of answering right away, Wang Yuxian turned to look at Yao Cheng.

“You should answer our clan chief honestly,” Yao Cheng said.

So, Wang Yuxian told the clan chief about the reason why she and Chu Feng had come here. However, the faces of the crowd darkened upon hearing her story, including the clan chief. The atmosphere started turning weird.

This left Wang Yuxian and Chu Feng feeling a little nervous.

They could tell that the Monstrous Spirit Clan was hostile toward outsiders from how the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief had made a move on them without allowing them to explain themselves.

It was unlikely that they would allow them to borrow the puppet army to save the cultivators of the Nine Souls Galaxy.

After a moment of silence, the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief asked, "Miss Wang, are you intending to save the Nine Souls Sacred Clan or the Nine Souls Galaxy?"

"I'm seeking to save the cultivators of the Nine Souls Galaxy. Elder, you're still a part of our Nine Souls Galaxy even though you have gone into seclusion for tens of thousands of years. Surely you wouldn't want to see the people of our Nine Souls Galaxy get slaughtered by the hands of outsiders?"

Wang Yuxian tried to persuade the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief with a gentle voice.

"The Nine Souls Sacred Clan should be thankful that we haven't made a move on them thus far. There's no way we'll help them, or else we'll be letting our dead ancestors down. As for the cultivators of the Nine Souls Galaxy, they have already forgotten about our existence. Their life and death have nothing to do with us," the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief said.

Chu Feng and Wang Yuxian felt their hearts clenching up.

They had known that it was possible that the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief might reject their request for help, but it still put them in a tough position. Without the approval of the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief, they wouldn't even be able to challenge the puppet army formation, let alone control the puppet army.

However, before they could continue persuading her, the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief continued, "But Miss Wang, regardless of whether you're the person whom the lord is waiting for, it's a fact that your talent has lit up the

'Upper' character stone tablet and induced a reaction from the lord's pendant. That means to say that you're a person who has been acknowledged by the lord.

"The energy our clan has is a gift from the lord. While the puppet army was created by the guest from eight hundred years ago, it was done using the lord's energy. Naturally, this means that you can take the puppet army away with you if you wish to."

The Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief took out a spirit formation key and opened a massive spirit formation gate. It looked even more imposing than the spirit formation gate leading into the Monstrous Spirit Clan.

"The puppet army and the formation is in there. Only a person who has cleared the formation will be able to control the puppet army," the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief said.

Wang Yuxian was overjoyed to hear that. She thought that it would have taken a lot more persuasion for her to convince the Monstrous Spirit Clan to help them, but the latter acceded to her request much easier than she had thought.

Yao Cheng was right. As long as they could trigger the 'Upper' character stone tablet, the Monstrous Spirit Clan would regard them as esteemed guests.

"Thank you, elder."

Wang Yuxian first thanked the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief before turning to Chu Feng.

"Chu Feng, let's go."

"Wait a moment!"

Before the two of them could move, the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief suddenly spoke up.

"Miss Wang, you may enter the spirit formation gate, but I'm afraid that he doesn't have the qualification to do so."

“Elder, Chu Feng is a good friend of mine, and his talent is above mine. Would you allow him to accompany me?” Wang Yuxian pleaded.

“Miss Wang, haven’t you seen his result on the talent assessment formation? His talent is beneath that of our juniors. He hasn’t proven himself worthy to enter the spirit formation gate,” the Monstrous Spirit Clan’s Clan Chief said.

“Lord Clan Chief, I can vouch for Miss Wang’s words. Chu Feng’s talent is indeed top-notch. That can be easily seen from his cultivation. Despite his young age, he has already reached rank four Martial Exalted level. In fact, he could even put up a fight against a rank nine Martial Exalted level cultivator,” Yao Cheng quickly spoke up too.

“Yao Cheng, what nonsense are you speaking? There’s no way a rank four Martial Exalted level cultivator could possibly go against a rank nine Martial Exalted level cultivator. You’re uttering nonsense here!”

Yao Cheng’s words were immediately met with jeers from the other members of the Monstrous Spirit Clan.

“Yao Cheng, I’m speaking to Miss Wang here. You should stay out of this.”

The Monstrous Spirit Clan’s Clan Chief directed a cold gaze toward Yao Cheng. She didn’t think well of what Yao Cheng did even though Wang Yuxian had already proven herself in the talent assessment formation.

“Elder, Elder Yao Cheng isn’t lying. Chu Feng is really...” Wang Yuxian quickly spoke up on Chu Feng’s behalf.

She knew that she was the one who currently held the most say amongst them. If anyone could persuade the Monstrous Spirit Clan’s Clan Chief, it was her.

“Miss Wang, please don’t put me in a spot.”

However, the Monstrous Spirit Clan’s Clan Chief held steadfast to her stance. She even directed a polite bow toward Wang Yuxian, making it clear that she didn’t want to discuss this any further.

## **Chapter 5055: Clearing the Formation at the Same Time**

“Lele, forget it,” Chu Feng said.

However, Wang Yuxian's obstinacy seemed to have been triggered by how Chu Feng was being underestimated here. She pouted indignantly and said, "Elder, I'll be frank here. I wouldn't have been here if not for him. I hope that you can make an exception and allow Chu Feng to come with me."

To everyone's shock, she began to lower her knees as if she was going to kowtow to the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief. Seeing that, the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief quickly rushed forward to hold her up.

"Miss Wang, you're really..."

The Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief looked at Wang Yuxian with a conflicted look on her face.

"Haa, forget it. I'll make an exception here and allow him to go with you."

As reluctant as the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief was, she still acquiesced to Wang Yuxian's demand in the end.

"Thank you, elder!"

Chu Feng and Wang Yuxian quickly bowed to express their gratitude to the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief.

While the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief had openly expressed her disdain toward Chu Feng, he thought that it was understandable since his result at the talent assessment formation was less than spectacular. He was earnestly grateful to the clan chief for giving him this leeway.

He wouldn't want to miss an opportunity to see the puppet army and the energy left behind by the benefactor of the Monstrous Spirit Clan.

The two of them rose into the air and readied themselves to enter the spirit formation gate. Just as they were about to step in, Chu Feng suddenly halted his footsteps and turned around to look at the statue in the square.

"What's wrong, Chu Feng?" Wang Yuxian asked.

The others from the Monstrous Spirit Clan also displayed confused looks at his peculiar behavior.

"It's nothing," Chu Feng shook his head and replied.



He was lying.

He had actually felt a gaze coming from the statue, but when he turned around to check on it, the statue stood as still and lifeless as ever, as if it was all his imagination.

Thus, he decided not to make a fuss about it and focus on the spirit formation gate ahead of him.

As soon as they entered the spirit formation gate, Chu Feng and Wang Yuxian found themselves in a vast cavern. It was so huge that it looked like an underground world in itself.

The first thing that came into their sight was the puppet army standing in a neat formation. These puppets were shaped in the form of a human, each of them towering at a height of a hundred meters.

They resembled humans, but there was no way they could have been real humans since they were all made out of wood. In fact, even their armor and weapons were made out of wood too.

These wooden puppets appeared fragile at first glance due to their material, but the aura they emanated would swiftly disprove anyone who thought that they were weak. They were strong to the extent that Chu Feng and Wang Yuxian broke out in delighted smiles.

There were a total of 9832 puppets. The weakest ones were at rank seven Martial Exalted level whereas the strongest ones were at rank three Half-God level.

Of them, there were 32 puppets that Chu Feng was unable to sense their aura. Their powers had been sealed, making it impossible to discern their cultivation. Nevertheless, his intuition told him that they were likely to be incredibly strong too.

Without a doubt, anyone who was in possession of this puppet army could easily become the ruler of the existing Nine Souls Galaxy.

“Can you sense the cultivation of those 32 wooden puppets?” Wang Yuxian turned to Chu Feng and asked.

She had tried looking at the wooden puppets, but she was unable to see through their cultivation. It was out of curiosity that she posed this question to him.

“I’m afraid not,” Chu Feng replied with a shake of his head.

“It doesn’t matter. We’ll know their cultivation once we grasp control of them,” Wang Yuxian said.

There was a huge formation in front of the puppet army emanating an aura that resonated with the puppet army. Clearly, this was the puppet army formation that they had to clear if they wished to control the puppets.

The puppet army formation had to be accessed through a spirit formation gate, but what was intriguing about this was that there were two spirit formation gates in front of them, one white and one black. Both appeared to lead into the puppet army formation.

There should be some sort of meaning as to why there were two different spirit formation gates.

“Chu Feng, can you tell what’s the difference between the two spirit formation gates?” Wang Yuxian asked.

“Both should grant us control over the puppet army if we clear them, but the process as to how we go about doing so might differ,” Chu Feng replied.

“I’ll head out to ask about it. Give me a moment,” Wang Yuxian said before heading out.

Meanwhile, Chu Feng continued scanning the area around him. He was trying to find the energy that the benefactor of the Monstrous Spirit Clan had left behind tens of thousands of years ago.

According to the Monstrous Spirit Clan, the puppet army was constructed using that energy, but Chu Feng was unable to sense the presence of any energy inside the cavern.

Soon, Wang Yuxian reappeared in the cavern.

“What did they say?” Chu Feng asked.

“They said that the trial of the white spirit formation gate is much safer, such that one wouldn’t sustain any injuries even when failing the trial. On the other hand, the trial of the black spirit formation gate is much more dangerous. A moment of carelessness can easily cost one’s life. The juniors of the Monstrous Spirit Clan would usually challenge the white spirit formation gate,” Wang Yuxian said.

“Are there any restrictions on the spirit formation gates? Can a person challenge the trial repeatedly or are they limited to only one attempt?” Chu Feng probed on.

“I asked about that too. The only restriction on the trials is age. Any junior within a hundred years of age will be able to repeatedly challenge any of the two trials,” Wang Yuxian replied.

“Why don’t we split paths then? You can enter via the white spirit formation gate while I take the black spirit formation gate,” Chu Feng proposed.

“Sounds good to me. If the two of us fail, we can do a swap and try again. If that still doesn’t work, we can try cooperating together,” Wang Yuxian replied with a twinkle in her eyes.

She seemed to regard these trials as a game, and she was looking forward to challenging them.

“Sure.”

Chu Feng nodded in agreement.

Having made up their minds, the two of them entered their designated spirit formation gates.

Chu Feng entered the black spirit formation gate and found himself arriving at a pitch-black formation space. He tried activating his Heaven’s Eye, but his visibility still remained severely limited. Nevertheless, he was still able to make out a net of interweaving black threads that resembled a spider’s web in his direct surroundings.

These black threads completely covered the path in front of him. It didn’t seem possible for him to circumvent them if he wanted to advance ahead. These black threads were made out of an incredibly resilient material that was

impossible for him to cut through, and they were incredibly sharp such that even a Half-God level cultivator would be cut upon contact with it.

Fortunately, there were sufficient spaces between the black threads for him to pass through. As long as he journeyed carefully, it should be possible for him to clear this trial without incurring any injuries.

Weng!

A faint glimmer of light suddenly shone above him. It was coming from a huge candle that had abruptly appeared above the pitch-black formation space. The candle was slowly burning down, indicating that there was a time restriction to this trial.

He only had fifteen minutes here. If he couldn't clear this trial within the allotted time, he would be deemed to have failed the trial.

### **Chapter 5056: Another Change**

Despite the increased sense of urgency, Chu Feng didn't blindly rush his way through the black threads. Instead, he carefully observed the black threads carefully while making his way forward.

As a result, he wasn't able to venture too deeply by the time fifteen minutes was up.

A gush of spirit power encircled his body and teleported him back to the entrance of the black spirit formation gate.

In a stroke of coincidence, the space beside Chu Feng started trembling moments after Chu Feng came out. Then, Wang Yuxian appeared beside him, seemingly being transported out of the trial by a gush of spirit power too.

"What a coincidence."

The two of them looked at each other and smiled.

"Do you want to swap?" Chu Feng asked.

Wang Yuxian had mentioned earlier that they could swap spirit formation gates if both of them were to fail their respective trials.

“Not yet. I’ve already gotten some clues. I just need some time to decipher it,” Wang Yuxian replied with a confident smirk.

“Let’s continue on then.”

Chu Feng nodded in agreement before entering the black spirit formation gate once more. He was brought back into the pitch-black formation space filled with black threads, but he swiftly noticed that the layout of the black threads had changed.

He wasn’t too surprised to see that.

The trial would have been far too easy if the layout of the black threads remained the same. One would just have to challenge the trial multiple times and memorize the correct path.

For that reason, such trials tended to have a random element to them.

In fact, Chu Feng wasn’t trying to remember the route when he progressed slowly on his first attempt. Rather, he was acclimatizing himself to the different conditions of the formation space.

This time, he was going to try it seriously.

He activated the Heaven’s Eye and began flitting ahead. The further he went, the more complicated the layout of the black threads became. That left him with no choice but to slow down by a fair bit.

Even so, he was still able to catch sight of the endpoint just as the candle was about to burn out. There was an item floating there—a military seal!

Military seals were often used as a symbol of authority to mobilize an army. The chances were that he would be able to mobilize the puppet army if he could get his hands on the military seal.

Knowing that, Chu Feng immediately charged ahead at full speed.

Right before the candle was about to go out, he passed through all of the obstacles and reached out his hand to grab the military seal.

Weng!

The moment Chu Feng wrapped his right hand around the military seal, the seal transformed into a whiff of smoke that seeped into his palm. At the same time, spirit power began shrouding Chu Feng, teleporting him back to the entrance.

When he was finally pulled out of the trial, the black spirit formation gate was no longer anywhere to be seen. He turned to look at the puppet army, and he found that he now had a connection with it.

Chu Feng raised his right hand and looked at it. There was a black mark shaped like the military seal he had seen earlier imprinted at the center of his palm. It was thanks to this that he now had a connection with the puppet army.

Weng!

All of a sudden, the white spirit formation gate and the entire puppet army formation vanished. Following that, a person appeared beside Chu Feng. It was Wang Yuxian.

“Chu Feng, I’ve succeeded! I managed to lay my hands on the military seal! Look, look! This is the military seal!”

Wang Yuxian excitedly showed the imprint of a military seal on her palm to Chu Feng. It was identical to what he had on his palm, just that his was black whereas hers was white.

“You’ve succeeded too?” Wang Yuxian exclaimed in astonishment.

She finally noticed the black military seal imprinted on Chu Feng’s palm. n.-o- )v-.e.-l-.b((1-n

“It looks like we have both succeeded,” Chu Feng said with a chuckle.

“That’s great! We can control the puppet army together now! Let’s head out and tell Elder Yao Cheng about this piece of good news!” Wang Yuxian cheered in delight.

She began making her way toward the spirit formation gate, and the puppet army obediently followed her with organized footsteps.

Chu Feng could have done the same too, but he chose to let her revel in the moment and quietly followed her instead.

Just as he had expected, Yao Cheng, the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief, and the other clan members gathered on the square revealed baffled looks when they saw the puppet army organizing themselves in a neat formation behind Wang Yuxian. This made it clear to them that Wang Yuxian had managed to grasp control over the puppet army.

Countless juniors of the Monstrous Spirit Clan had challenged the puppet army formation many times over the past eight hundred years in a bid to gain control over the puppet army, but all of them ended in failure.

Yet, it took Wang Yuxian a mere thirty minutes inside the spirit formation gate to gain control over the puppet army. How could they possibly not be astonished?

They did think that it was possible for Wang Yuxian to successfully grasp control over the puppet army after her result in the talent assessment formation, but they found it unbelievable how quickly she had managed to achieve the feat.

"Miss Wang is truly extraordinary. It looks like you're indeed the person whom the lord is waiting for. Otherwise, there's no way you could have grasped control over the puppet army so easily," the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief complimented in awe.

She was more convinced than ever that Wang Yuxian was the person whom the lord was waiting for.

"Elder, if what you said is true, Chu Feng should be the person whom the lord is waiting for instead of me."

Wang Yuxian turned to the puppet army behind her as she spoke.

Shoosh!

At her glance, the puppet army immediately parted from the center to create a passageway, where Chu Feng stood at the very end of it.

"What do you mean by that?"

The members of the Monstrous Spirit Clan didn't understand what Wang Yuxian was driving at.

"Elders, please take a look at this."

Wang Yuxian walked over to Chu Feng's side and lifted his arm, revealing the black military seal on his palm to the crowd.

"You have managed to grasp control of the puppet army too?"

The Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief stepped forward to examine Chu Feng's black military seal, and her eyes couldn't help but widen in astonishment. She could tell that the military seal on Chu Feng's palm was real too.

"The two of us challenged a spirit formation gate each. Chu Feng took the black spirit formation gate while I took the white spirit formation gate. We ended up obtaining the military seal together," Wang Yuxian explained.

"This young hero over here challenged the black spirit formation gate?" the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief asked.

"Yes, the one he challenged was indeed the harder black spirit formation gate," Wang Yuxian nodded affirmatively.

"Young hero, it looks like I've jumped to a hasty conclusion regarding your talent. Do pardon me for my foolishness."

Following that, the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief actually bowed to Chu Feng to express her apology.

"Pardon us for our foolishness!"

The other clan members, including Yao Cheng, quickly followed suit. Their drastic change in attitude wasn't without reason. They knew that the trial in the black spirit formation gate was much harder than that of the white spirit formation gate, but Chu Feng actually succeeded despite the odds.

This was more than enough to prove his talent.

"Elder, it's a fact that I didn't do well in the talent assessment formation. I don't blame you for thinking of me that way," Chu Feng replied with a smile.



“Lord Clan Chief, look!”

All of a sudden, one of the clan members pointed her finger at the statue and exclaimed. Yet another change had occurred to the pendant worn by the statue.

The fluid inside the pendant was initially only at the halfway mark, but for some reason, it was on the verge of being filled to the brim now.

### **Chapter 5057: Chu Feng’s Worry**

“What does these changes mean?”

They thought that the pendant had only reverted to its initial form before it was petrified, but it looked like there was more to it than they thought. They couldn’t understand why these changes were occurring all of a sudden.

“Could this have happened because someone has successfully grasped control of the puppet army? Even though the puppet army was created by the guest who came eight hundred years ago, it’s a fact that it was made out of the lord’s energy. I’m thinking that the pendant might be reacting to that,” a member of the Monstrous Spirit Clan deduced.

“That could be possible.”

Quite a few amongst the Monstrous Spirit Clan expressed their agreement.

Chu Feng also examined the pendant as well, but he couldn’t figure out why such a change was occurring. So, he turned to the Monstrous Spirit Clan’s Clan Chief and asked, “Elder, may I make a request?”

“Young hero, feel free to ask anything of me,” the Monstrous Spirit Clan’s Clan Chief replied.

Her attitude toward Chu Feng had become much more courteous and friendlier, just like how she addressed Wang Yuxian.

“If it’s not presumptuous of me to ask this, I’d like to see the energy that was left behind by the lord. I understand that this request might be inappropriate, and I ask for your pardon if I have offended you in any way,” Chu Feng said.

“Young hero, the energy has been depleted by the guest to create the puppet army. The guest told us that the energy has been fused into the puppet army, awaiting the arrival of a fated person to siphon the energy out of it and put it to better use. Speaking of which, shouldn’t you be able to feel the energy since the puppet army is now under your control?” the Monstrous Spirit Clan’s Clan Chief asked.

“Lele, are you able to sense the energy?” Chu Feng asked Wang Yuxian.

“I don’t think so. I can feel the strength of the puppet army, but it’s only to a superficial level. I can’t even clearly discern the cultivation of those puppets through my link with them, let alone the energy left behind by the lord. If I’m not mistaken, it should be the same for you too, right?”

Wang Yuxian gestured toward the 32 puppets that she was unable to confirm the cultivation levels for as she spoke.

Initially, they thought that they would be able to fully sense the cultivation of the puppets once they grasp control of the puppet army, but to their surprise, they still weren’t able to properly discern the puppets’ cultivation level.

“I can’t sense it either.”

Chu Feng shook his head before turning to the Monstrous Spirit Clan’s Clan Chief.

“Elder, is the guest from eight hundred years ago a trustworthy person?” Chu Feng asked.

“That guest has helped our Monstrous Spirit Clan greatly; we’re indebted to him. However, I can’t say with certainty that he’s a trustworthy person. Young hero, are you suspecting that the guest has taken the energy away?” the Monstrous Spirit Clan’s Clan Chief asked.

“To be honest, that’s indeed what I’m suspecting,” Chu Feng replied.

“This!!!”

The members of the Monstrous Spirit Clan couldn’t remain calm after hearing those words. After all, the energy that was left by the lord was the hope of their clan. They were still hoping for a prodigy to emerge who could grasp

control of the energy to emerge amongst them and bring the Monstrous Spirit Clan back to its previous glory.

If the guest from eight hundred years ago had truly taken the energy away, their Monstrous Spirit Clan would have lost its greatest hope of returning to greatness. This was a huge shock to them!

“Are you certain? Is it possible for the energy to be hidden so deeply in the puppets that you aren’t able to sense it?” the Monstrous Spirit Clan’s Clan Chief asked in agitation.

“I can’t exclude such a possibility. Even though we’re able to move the puppet army now, we still don’t have absolute control over it. It’s possible that the energy is hidden too deeply for us to find.

“Elder, please be assured that we’re only borrowing the puppet army to deal with our enemies. We’ll return the puppets to you once we achieve victory. I’m not too sure whether the guest from eight hundred years ago has really taken away the energy or not, but I promise you that the puppet army will surely return to your hands,” Chu Feng said.

“Young hero, I’m heartened by your words. I wish you the best of luck dealing with the foreign invaders and the traitor of the eastern region.

“If you’re not in a rush, why don’t you stay at our Monstrous Spirit Clan for a few more days? We would be grateful if you could give us an opportunity to make up for our earlier rudeness,” the Monstrous Spirit Clan’s Clan Chief said.

Before Chu Feng could answer the question, Yao Cheng had already sent a voice transmission to Chu Feng.

“Chu Feng, let’s hurry up and look for Sima Xiangtu. The lives of your master and the cultivators of the Nine Souls Galaxy are still in Sima Xiangtu’s grasp.”

Even if not for Yao Cheng’s reminder, Chu Feng wouldn’t have stayed in the Monstrous Spirit Clan either. He couldn’t possibly rest easy when his master’s life was at risk.

The Monstrous Spirit Clan’s Clan Chief also didn’t try to retain them any more than that. She led the clan members to see Chu Feng off.

When the Lady of Dao Sea and the others saw Chu Feng and Wang Yuxian leaving the spirit formation gate with an army of puppets and the members of the Monstrous Spirit Clan, they immediately realized that Chu Feng and Wang Yuxian had succeeded.

Chu Feng and Wang Yuxian filled the others in on what had happened inside the Monstrous Spirit Clan along the way to the Nine Souls Sacred Clan. That brought about a wave of compliments from the Godwish Grandmother, the Lady of Dao Sea, and Princess Xiaoxiao.

This was especially so for the Lady of Dao Sea. She could hardly keep the edges of her mouth from curling upward. It was extremely rare to see such a bright smile on her face.

She was overjoyed because she thought that the prophecy had come true. She was certain that they could overcome the calamity with the overwhelming prowess of the puppet army.

As a result, the initially tense atmosphere relaxed considerably.

In contrast, Chu Feng, who was usually quite talkative, was oddly silent ever since they left the Monstrous Spirit Clan. There was a grave look on his face, and he hardly spoke a word along the way. It looked as if he was worried about something.

### **Chapter 5058: An Affair Concerning the World of Cultivation**

“Chu Feng, you look like you have something on your mind,” Wang Yuxian said concernedly.

Instead of answering the question, Chu Feng posed one of his own, “Lele, you should be able to sense it too, right?”

“Sense what?” Wang Yuxian replied in confusion.

“We don’t have full control over the puppet army. I’m not sure how it is for you, but my level of control over the puppet army is only around 10%,” Chu Feng replied.

“10%? I do sense some difficulty in controlling the puppet army, but I can’t assess what’s my level of control over it. How are you able to tell that your level of control is 10%?” Wang Yuxian asked.

Chu Feng began explaining his deduction.

The puppet army was indeed powerful, but Chu Feng was worried about how he didn't have full control over the puppet army. If they were to lose control over this puppet army, it could very well land them in a bad position.

The fate that befell the Monstrous Spirit Clan tens of thousands of years ago was the perfect example.

While the Monstrous Spirit Clan was the one who had done wrong, the slaughter wouldn't have taken place if they had full control over the puppet army in the first place.

In view of that, Chu Feng had been wondering how he could gain more control over the puppet army. The focus of his thought wasn't on the puppet army itself but the formation he had cleared and the military seal in his palm.

Initially, he was unable to deduce anything from just the military seal itself, but when he thought about his own experiences clearing the formation, he swiftly noticed something amiss.

The trial inside the formation contained a dangerous web of black treads, but upon scrutiny, Chu Feng realized that they came together to form a mysterious formation that was connected to the military seal.

His instincts told him that his control over the military seal would increase as his understanding of the mysterious formation deepened. That would further reinforce his control over the puppet army too.

"The way I cleared the formation was different from yours. Mine is much simpler, so there weren't any clues of that sort. It could also be possible that I simply didn't notice anything at all. But Chu Feng, are you really able to deepen your control over the puppet army?" Wang Yuxian asked.

"I cleared the formation in a rush, but I still have an impression of the mysterious formation in my head. I should be able to do it with sufficient time. I'm just worried whether Sima Xiangtu will grant me the luxury of time. Forget it, I'll just do whatever I can. The greater my control over the puppet army, the safer we will be."

Chu Feng closed his eyes and focused his attention on recalling the mysterious formation made out of black threads, hoping to decipher it.

The crowd understood what Chu Feng was worried about, but they didn't slow their traveling speed through the ancient teleportation formation at all. Time simply wasn't on their side. A massacre would indubitably occur the moment Sima Xiangtu was done with his preparations.

By then, Chu Feng and the others would have to step in to stop Sima Xiangtu regardless of whether they had full control over the puppet army or not.

...

Meanwhile, a group of cultivators from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect were standing outside a palace of the Nine Souls Sacred Clan.

It was an announcement to the world that they were Sima Xiangtu's backing.

They weren't bothering to hide since there was no need for it anymore. They were now the new overlords of the Nine Souls Galaxy, such that even those from the Nine Souls Sacred Clan had to kneel and kowtow to them. Anywhere they stood, the members of the Nine Souls Sacred Clan would have to take a detour around.

All of a sudden, a figure descended from the sky and landed in front of the palace. It was a dark-skinned man with an ordinary appearance, but he gave off an air of loftiness that instilled fear.

The members of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect broke out in smiles upon seeing the man. They quickly kneeled onto the floor and kowtowed deeply.

He was none other than Jiang Kongping's older brother, Jiang Yuantai.

Unlike Jiang Kongping, Jiang Yuantai didn't have a playful streak in him. On the contrary, he was obsessed with cultivation and was proficient in managing sect affairs. For that reason, their father had high hopes for him,

Jiang Yuantai didn't pay the kneeling sect members any heed. Upon landing on the ground, he marched straight ahead and kicked down any doors that stood in his way. Soon, he arrived before a bedroom.

"Goddamnit! Who dares to interrupt my rest?" a furious bellow echoed from the bedroom.

A naked Jiang Kongping suddenly stood up from a huge bed. There were two other naked figures lying together with him on the bed, but they were men from the Nine Souls Sacred Clan.

Jiang Kongping had a preference for men, and the men of the Nine Souls Sacred Clan were right up his alley. In fact, he had been fully indulging himself over the last few days. He hated it when someone interrupted his fun, and killing intent gleamed in his eyes.

However, when he saw Jiang Yutantai standing by the entrance of the bedroom, his anger immediately subsided. Fear took its place.

“Scram! All of you, get lost right now!”

Jiang Kongping quickly kicked the two men from the Nine Souls Sacred Clan out of his bed. Then, he hurriedly put on his robe before walking up to Jiang Yutantai with a fawning smile.

“Big brother, when did you arrive? Is father... coming over too?”

Despite the huge smile on Jiang Kongping’s face, he could hardly conceal his unease and fear. He seemed to be afraid of his older brother.

On the other hand, Jiang Yutantai calmly walked into the bedroom and settled down on a chair. He poured out a cup of tea and began sipping on it.

“Kongping, when are you going to stop fooling around? You possess great talents. You aren’t just letting down father’s expectations; you’re letting your talent go to waste too!” Jiang Yutantai said.

He wasn’t angry, just disappointed.

“Big brother, don’t you know me? I have been working hard on my cultivation too, just that my path differs from yours. I personally believe in the importance of work-life balance. We should work hard and play hard. You mustn’t tell our father about this though!” Jiang Kongping replied.

“Don’t worry, our father isn’t coming. However, I’m here to tell you something important,” Jiang Yutantai said.

“What is it?” Jiang Kongping asked.

“Something huge has happened in the world of cultivation,” Jiang Yuantai said.

“Something huge? What is it?”

Jiang Kongping’s curiosity was piqued.

“Here, use this and look at the Seven Realms Galaxy.”

Jiang Yuantai took out an oval stone and passed it to Jiang Kongping. It appeared to be an ordinary stone at first glance, but there were many delicate formations constructed on it. Interestingly, the oval stone resembled an eye when looking at it together with its formations.

“Waaa, isn’t this the Heavenview Divine Rock? Our father gave this to you?”

Jiang Kongping appeared to be extremely fond of the rock. Born into a powerful clan, he had seen plenty of interesting treasures. Even so, this was the first time he was coming into contact with something as rare as the Heavenview Divine Rock.

“You know how to use it, right?” Jiang Yuantai asked.

“Yeap! I saw our father using it once. He infused his martial power into it, and it revealed a map of the entire world of cultivation. By focusing his attention on the specific place he wanted to look at, he’s able to get a general idea of the happenings in the region even across galaxies,” Jiang Kongping said.

“Then hurry up and use it. Don’t zoom in to any starfield. Focus on the entirety of the Seven Realms Galaxy,” Jiang Yuantai instructed.

“Sure, sure. Hehehe. Let me see if the Heavenview Divine Rock is as amazing as the legends put it out to be.”

With a chuckle, Jiang Kongping began peering at the Seven Realms Galaxy.

“Holy shit! W-what the hell is that?!”

The smile on Jiang Kongping’s face was wiped out in an instant, replaced with a look of shock.

The Seven Realms Galaxy was one of the larger galaxies in the world of cultivation. It was filled with countless realms and stars that it was not easy to



find one's way around. However, the galaxy was currently shrouded by a colossal apparition.

It was translucent, reminiscent of a soul. It appeared to be neither a human nor a beast, but its very presence exerted huge pressure on one's soul. It didn't appear to be alive.

Its size was the reason why Jiang Kongping was so shocked by it. Even ten thousand realms put together might not be able to match up to its size. That was why Jiang Kongping immediately noticed it despite all of the twinkling stars in the massive Seven Realms Galaxy.

It felt like everything else was insignificant compared to it.

### **Chapter 5059: God's Era Has Already Begun**

Jiang Kongping had the shock of his life, but he continued observing the colossal apparition intently, hoping to find something out from it. His tightly knitted eyebrows showed that he could hardly discern anything at all, but even so, he didn't give up on it.

It was only till the energy in the Heavenview Divine Rock dissipated along with the image before him that he finally turned his attention back to Jiang Yuantai.

"Big brother, this is too shocking. What is that?"

Jiang Kongping's face was a little pale from the earlier shock, but his voice showcased his excitement too. He knew that Jiang Yuantai wasn't lying to him. Something huge had indeed happened in the vast world of cultivation.

It filled him with unprecedented excitement.

"Kongping, do you really not know what that signifies?"

Jiang Yuantai looked at Jiang Kongping with a disapproving frown.

"H-how could I possibly know?"

Jiang Kongping's body stiffened up. He tried his best to think about it, but he was unable to figure anything out.

"That's the result of playing around too much. How could you forget about that?" Jiang Yuantai said with a deep sigh.

“Big brother, what’s that thing? Stop beating around the bush and tell me!” Jiang Kongping urged.

“Around thirty thousand years ago, a stone tablet was discovered in an ancient remnant in the Seven Realms Galaxy that dated all the way back to the Immemorial Era. The stone tablet was blank, but everyone could sense boundless power pulsating from it.

“The only problem is that the stone tablet couldn’t be moved. So, the experts in the vast world of cultivation gathered around the stone tablet, hoping to put their strength together to decipher the stone tablet.”

Before Jiang Yuantai could finish his story, Jiang Kongping had already smacked his head in realization.

“Big brother, I remember that! Father told me about that once. The stone tablet is actually not a treasure but a prophetic medium from the Immemorial Era. Words from the Immemorial Era started appearing on the stone tablet later on,” Jiang Kongping excitedly interjected.

“Yes, I’m referring to that prophecy.”

Jiang Yuantai revealed a heartened smile when he saw Jiang Kongping recalling the matter, though it didn’t last for long.

“Wait a moment, big brother. What was written on the stone tablet?” Jiang Kongping asked.

“Didn’t our father tell you?” Jiang Yuantai asked in bewilderment.

“I... I forgot.”

“You...”

Jiang Yuantai suddenly felt a strong urge to give his younger brother a tight slap so that he could wake up to his idea.

“Big brother, I was wrong. It sounded so nonsensical to me that I didn’t bother remembering it back then. Please tell me what’s written on the stone tablet,” Jiang Kongping pleaded.

Jiang Yuantai shot a sharp glare at Jiang Kongping before continuing with the story.

“Four sentences of words written in the Immemorial Era appeared on the prophetic stone tablet. Upon deciphering the words, this was what they meant:

“Countless heroes there are treading the path of cultivation, but few are able to leave their name under the relentless flow of time. Should a day come where a colossal avatar appears amidst countless stars, a prodigy shall rise to godhood within a century.”

After reciting the prophecy, Jiang Yuantai turned to look at Jiang Kongping with a gleam in his eyes. However, the latter frowned contemplatively for a moment before asking, “Big brother, what does that mean?”

“You can’t even understand something as simple as that? Use your brain!” Jiang Yuantai bellowed.

“Big brother, you also know that I’m still decent at cultivation, but I’m bad with anything that requires the use of my brain,” Jiang Kongping replied indignantly.

“You sure are a load of trouble! The prophecy is saying that there have been countless experts in the way of cultivation thus far, but none of them have been able to survive the testament of time. If a day comes where heaven reveals a prophetic symbol, a huge ripple of change will come upon the world of cultivation. Countless prodigies will rise through the ranks, and of them, one will rise to the top and become the strongest existence ever within a century.

“It might just be a short century, but it’ll change the history of our world forever. Some call it God’s Era.” Jiang Yuantai said.

“Big brother, you’re saying that the colossal apparition is the prophetic symbol?” Jiang Kongping asked.

“Yes, the appearance of the colossal avatar heralds the beginning of God’s Era. Kongping, this is also the reason why I came here to look for you. You possess exceptional talent. If you work hard in your cultivation, there’s a chance that you might become the supreme existence,” Jiang Yuantai said.

“Big brother, if we look at the time of appearance of the colossal avatar, there’s no way the prophesied prodigy is me,” Jiang Kongping replied.

“You don’t understand. The prophecy only says that countless prodigies will appear upon the inception of God’s Era, but it didn’t state that only those who

are born after God's Era will be able to become the supreme existence. In fact, it wasn't stated anywhere that this opportunity is only limited to juniors. Even those of the older generation could possibly be that prodigy.

"What I mean is that everyone stands a chance at becoming that supreme existence within the next hundred years.

"However, it's common knowledge that the juniors of our generation possess exceptional talent. None of the juniors from the other generations come close to matching us. There have been guesses that our generation will usher in God's Era, and the appearance of the colossal avatar verifies that. It's very likely that someone of our generation will eventually become the supreme existence.

"That's why, Kongping, I don't want you to miss this opportunity."

Jiang Yuantai patted at Jiang Kongping's shoulder and looked at him with eyes filled with expectations.

"Big brother, let's not talk about the older generation and the generation after us for now. Even within our generation, there are plenty of people who are more powerful than me. I don't think that I'll stand a chance even if I were to work hard. If someone in our generation will become a supreme existence, I think that person is most likely to be Xianhai Shaoyu," Jiang Kongping said.

There was a complicated look in Jiang Kongping's eyes when he heard that name. There was no one from the Totem Galaxy who didn't know of Xianhai Shaoyu.

That young master of the Immortal Sea Fish Clan was known to be one of the most talented prodigies in the current world of cultivation, especially in the Totem Galaxy. *n@VE.LB*.In

In fact, there was a saying that in this era of prodigies, it was possible to classify all cultivators into two categories: Xianhai Shaoyu and everyone else!

## **Martial God Asura #Chapter 5060: Incorrect Prophecy - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 5060: Incorrect Prophecy**

**Chapter 5060: Incorrect Prophecy**

Jiang Yuantai could still remember the tournament that had shaken the entire Totem Galaxy. That was a tournament to determine the greatest prodigy, attracting all of the top-notch prodigies of the Totem Galaxy together to fight it out.

Even someone like Jiang Yuantai could only watch from the spectator stand, unable to step onto the dueling ring himself.

The popular champion pick for that tournament was none other than the young master of the Totem Dragon Clan, Long Chengyu.

Long Chengyu's birth had induced a phenomenon. It was such a powerful phenomenon that it shook the entire Totem Galaxy. It was unprecedented even for the powerful Totem Dragon Clan. The speed of his growth was also amazing, creating numerous legends in the Totem Galaxy.

However, just as Long Chengyu was about to clinch the title of the strongest prodigy, a person suddenly stood in his path. That person arrogantly accused Long Chengyu of infiltrating the Immortal Sea Galaxy and severing his older brother's right arm. He said that he was here to exact vengeance, but out of respect for the Totem Dragon Clan, he would let Long Chengyu off with just severing his right hand.

With those words, that person stepped onto the dueling ring.

The crowd initially thought that the person was just humiliating himself. After all, Long Chengyu had just defeated all of his rivals with an absolute advantage in all of his battles.

Yet, to everyone's astonishment, that person actually defeated Long Chengyu and severed his right arm in public. More importantly, he actually managed to safely make his escape despite having injured the young master of the Totem Dragon Clan in public.

That incident shook the entire Totem Galaxy.

That person was none other than the young master of the Immortal Sea Fish Clan, Xianhai Shaoyu.

Jiang Yuantai had personally witnessed just how formidable Xianhai Shaoyu was back then. Just recalling the sight made his heartbeat hasten, and cold sweat would start dripping from his forehead.

That was the airs of the strongest prodigy of the Northern Region. Everything else seemed to pale in comparison to him.

Thinking about Xianhai Shaoyu's terrifying prowess, he had no choice but to concede that it would be difficult for his younger brother, Jiang Kongping, to catch up with him.

"Kongping, this is God's Era we're talking about. Even if you can't become the supreme existence, you should at least make a name for yourself here. You should also be aware of our father's current plight. We have all been expelled from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect.

"My talent is limited, so it wouldn't mean anything no matter how hard I work. You're the only one who can restore our father's honor," Jiang Yuantai said.

"I know, big brother. I don't think that I stand a chance at becoming the supreme existence you speak of, and honestly, I'm not really interested in making a name for myself in God's Era either. However, I'll make the Pill Dao Immortal Sect understand that they have made a fatal error by expelling us from the sect," Jiang Kongping spoke resolutely.

A heartened smile surfaced on Jiang Kongping's face.

Ling ling ling!

All of a sudden, the ringing of a bell echoed from Jiang Yuantai's right sleeves. Jiang Yuantai quickly rolled up his sleeves, revealing a bangle around his wrist.

The bangle contained a blue gemstone and a rusty copper bell. The bell was moving on its own accord despite the absence of wind, and its ringing was growing louder with each passing moment.

"What's happening?" Jiang Yuantai murmured with an uneasy frown.

"Big brother, what's that?" Jiang Kongping hurriedly asked.

He had never seen such an uneasy expression on Jiang Yuantai's face before. He wondered if the ringing of the bell was an ominous omen.

"This bangle was given to me by one of our father's old friends in the Seven Realms Galaxy, Daoist Starseizer," Jiang Yuantai said.

“Daoist Starseizer? Is that the disciple of the World Spiritist Immortal King?” Jiang Kongping asked.

“Yes, that’s him,” Jiang Yuantai replied with a nod.

“I heard that Daoist Starseizer is proficient in the art of prophecy. Could this be some sort of prophecy medium?” Jiang Kongping eyed the bangle around Jiang Yuantai’s wrist and asked.

“It’s indeed a prophecy medium. Our father couldn’t make it here due to some urgent business, so he asked Daoist Starseizer to make a prophecy and see if we’ll be able to achieve our goals here.

“Daoist Starseizer gave this bangle to me, saying that it would give me a hint when the time is right. If the gemstone lights up, it means that we’ll be able to obtain the legendary Soul Fog without any mishaps. However, if the bell rings instead, it means that we won’t be able to obtain the Soul Fog. Instead, we should leave the Nine Souls Galaxy as soon as possible,” Jiang Yuantai said.

“Surely not? This mission doesn’t look that dangerous to me.”

Jiang Kongping was skeptical about that.

“Daoist Starseizer is known for the accuracy of his prophecies, so there’s some credence to his words. It looks like we’ll have to make a decision soon.”

Jiang Yuantai looked at the furiously ringing bell around his wrist with deepening worry in his eyes.

Kacha!

Cracks suddenly started forming on the copper bell, and before long, it shattered into countless fragments with a loud bam. However, instead of falling to the ground, these fragments started glowing and floating in mid-air. They scattered around to form a mirror that reflected two individuals.

One of them was Jiang Yuantai. He was lying on the ground, severely injured.

The other person had a leg crushing down on Jiang Yuantai’s chest as he pointed a sword toward his neck. That was clearly the pose of a victor.

Jiang Yuantai’s face paled at that sight, but he kept his eyes on the other person reflected in the projection. He wanted to know to whom he had lost.

The appearance of the other person was initially a little blurred, but the image gradually sharpened until it was finally identifiable.

“Chu Feng?” Jiang Kongping blurted out.

“Chu Feng? He’s the person who defeated you?” Jiang Yuantai asked.

“Big brother, you heard about that too?” Jiang Kongping asked with a lowered head.

“Of course I did. I never thought that trash from the Eastern Region would actually be able to defeat you and hold you hostage.”

Jiang Yuantai let out a sigh.

“Chu Feng is indeed a formidable opponent. He possesses incredible means that allow him to easily defeat any rank eight Martial Exalted level cultivator. It would take a rank nine Martial Exalted level cultivator to put up a fight against him.

“But why would such a scene appear from the shattered copper bell? Is it prophesying a battle between you and him? Does this mean that you aren’t able to defeat him too?”

Jiang Kongping looked at Jiang Yuantai worriedly.

He knew how strong Jiang Yuantai was. Under normal circumstances, the latter shouldn’t have lost to Chu Feng.

“Daoist Starseizer told me that if the copper bell shatters, it’ll reveal the person who is going to stand in our way. It’s just that... I didn’t think that person who would pose the biggest threat to us would actually be a mere junior from the Eastern Region.”

The fragments of the shattered bell had already dissipated by now, but Jiang Yuantai’s mind was still filled with the scene that had appeared earlier. He couldn’t help but feel deeply indignant.

“Big brother, should we tell Jiang Taibai about this? Let’s have him decide whether we should stay or leave,” Jiang Kongping said.

“There’s no need for that. It’d be one thing if anyone else appeared on the copper bell, but why should I fear a mere Chu Feng? Putting aside the fact



that Jiang Taibai and the others are here, I should be able to defeat him easily with my strength. Even if Chu Feng doesn't dare to appear before me, I'll still seek him out and exact vengeance for you!"

Jiang Yuantai spoke with great conviction.

Clearly, he felt insulted by the prophecy and wanted to prove himself.

Jiang Kongping burst into laughter upon seeing his older brother's reaction.

"Big brother, you don't believe in the prophecy? Didn't you mention earlier that Daoist Starseizer's prophecy is credible?" Jiang Kongping said with a chuckle.

He personally didn't believe in prophecies, but he knew that Jiang Yuantai believed in them.

"I admit that Daoist Starseizer's prophecies tend to be quite accurate, but there are times when his prophecies are off too. Not to mention, the one that is making a prophecy here is this bangle, not Daoist Starseizer himself. The fact that it took this bangle so long in order to come up with a prophecy shows that it's lacking in power... I think that there are grounds to believe that Daoist Starseizer's prophecy is off this time around," Jiang Yuantai said confidently.

He was oblivious to the fact that Chu Feng, Wang Yuxian, and the others had finally returned to the Nine Souls Sacred Clan through an ancient teleportation formation. Behind them were thousands of towering silhouettes standing in a neat formation as if soldiers.

They were the puppet army that Chu Feng and Wang Yuxian had brought over from the Monstrous Spirit Clan!

### **Chapter 5061: The Great Army Has Arrived!**

Chu Feng and the others confidently stepped onto the soil of the realm where the Nine Souls Sacred Clan was located, knowing that they now had the means to deal with their enemies. They were in a concealed state, such that outsiders wouldn't be able to see the army they had with them.

"Wait here first. I'll go check out the situation. If Sima Xiangtu isn't done with his preparation yet, we should hold our position here so that Chu Feng can have some time to deepen his control over the puppet army. Otherwise, we'll have no choice but to take a risk and strike," Yao Cheng said.

With those words, she began making her way toward the Nine Souls Sacred Clan alone. She possessed special concealment means, which made it much safer for her to infiltrate the Nine Souls Sacred Clan by herself.

This was something they had agreed on earlier.

Yao Cheng soon returned, but there was an awful look on her face.

“Elder, have they already begun making their move?” Chu Feng asked.

He could hardly remain calm after seeing Yao Cheng’s complexion. After all, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s life was at stake here. He could turn a blind eye to everything else, but he couldn’t let anything happen to his master.

“They haven’t started killing any of the cultivators yet, but the Pill Dao Immortal Sect’s Immortal Cauldron is already activated and ready to go. I’m afraid that we can’t wait any longer,” Yao Cheng said.

“Since that’s the case, let’s head there straight away. Given the formidable prowess of the puppet army, our chances of victory are still quite high even if we don’t have full control over it yet,” the Lady of Dao Sea said.

“Chu Feng.”

Wang Yuxian turned to Chu Feng to seek his opinion.

While she had control over the puppet army too, she was more inclined to heed Chu Feng’s judgment on this matter.

“Let’s head into the Nine Souls Sacred Clan. We’ll make a move as soon as Sima Xiangtu attempts something,” Chu Feng replied.

“All right, let’s go with that.”

Having made up their minds, Chu Feng and the others quickly set off. They carefully made their way into the Nine Souls Sacred Clan together with the puppet army, making sure to keep everything hidden.

The Nine Souls Sacred Clan was currently sealed off by a barrier, such that it was impossible for anyone inside to come out. However, the transparent nature of the barrier allowed those outside to see the situation inside.

There were far more cultivators gathered in the Nine Souls Sacred Clan than they previously remembered, but what caught the attention of Chu Feng's group was a massive cauldron spanning a length of over tens of thousands of meters floating in the sky.

A light shimmered around the cauldron, making it obvious at a glance that it was an incredible treasure. Without a doubt, this was the treasure of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect, the Immortal Cauldron.

Right above the cauldron stood Sima Xiangtu. He was planning to turn the cultivators in the Nine Souls Sacred Clan into cultivation resources using this Immortal Cauldron.

Chu Feng felt a rush of anger when his eyes fell upon Sima Xiangtu, but he chose to suppress his emotions. He knew that it wasn't time to make a move yet.

Sima Xiangtu stood on top of the Immortal Cauldron, which made him look no different from a speck of dust due to the difference in sizes. However, his eyes were glowing with ambition.

All of a sudden, another person appeared beside Sima Xiangtu. It was Jiang Taibai.

"Sima Xiangtu, our clan members have helped you activate the Immortal Cauldron, but it'll take a huge amount of power for you to channel it. I've already told you that I won't be helping you on that," Jiang Taibai said.

"Milord, please rest assured. I have my ways," Sima Xiangtu said.

"You have your ways? It has already been two days since the cauldron has been activated. You have less than twenty days left. You won't have an opportunity to use it anymore if you fail to channel it within this period of time. Know that our Pill Dao Immortal Sect has no intention of activating it for you a second time.

"It doesn't matter to us whether you achieve your goals or not; we have already fulfilled our promise to you. You'll have to help us find the Soul Fog by hook or by crook," Jiang Taibai emphasized once more.

Sima Xiangtu revealed a meaningful smile upon hearing those words. n-/o..v- )e.(L.)B)-1--n

“Milord, aren’t you just curious about how I could possibly have the power to channel this Immortal Cauldron?” Sima Xiangtu asked.

“Of course. The Immortal Cauldron is already right in front of you. You should be able to tell the tremendous amount of energy that would be required to channel it. Pardon my frankness, but I don’t think that you possess the means to use it. Otherwise, you wouldn’t have needed the help of our Pill Dao Immortal Sect in the first place,” Jiang Taibai said.

“Milord, I’ll be frank with you too. If you wish to know what I’m capable of, I can show it to you right now,” Sima Xiangtu said.

Jiang Taibai widened his eyes. He noticed that even though Sima Xiangtu was still calling him ‘milord’, his attitude and aura were vastly different from before.

Sima Xiangtu took out the cage where the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was confined and dragged the Ox-nosed Old Daoist out from within. Then, he whipped out a sword and swung it to slice the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s neck.

Boom!

A massive explosion suddenly echoed.

The barrier sealing off the Nine Souls Sacred Clan suddenly shattered. It astonished everyone, and their shock only deepened when they looked in the direction of the commotion.

An army of powerful puppets could be seen there. The terrifying auras they emanated were frightening not just to those from the Nine Souls Galaxy but even those from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect.

Over a thousand of those puppets emanated the auras of a Half-God level cultivator, making them appear no different from heavenly soldiers to the crowd despite their shabby appearances as wooden puppets.

“Sima Xiangtu!”

Chu Feng sharply glared at Sima Xiangtu. He couldn’t hold himself back anymore upon seeing Sima Xiangtu making a move on his master, so he ordered the puppet army to launch an attack.

“Thank you, Chu Feng.”

However, Sima Xiangtu didn't lose his patience upon seeing the puppet army. Instead, he revealed a gleeful smile.

Chu Feng felt a clench in his heart. He had a strong feeling that something was about to go awry, and his prediction was spot-on.

To his horror, he found himself losing control over the puppet army.

“Chu Feng?!”

Wang Yuxian looked at Chu Feng with flustered eyes too. That made it apparent that she had lost control over the puppet army too.

“Chu Feng, you must have heard the story from the Monstrous Spirit Clan by now?” Sima Xiangtu asked.

“What do you mean?”

Chu Feng was finally realizing that something was amiss.

With a smile, Sima Xiangtu raised his palm and revealed a military palm.

Chu Feng and Wang Yuxian were shocked. They knew that the military seal symbolized the power to control the puppet army. To make things worse, the military seal Sima Xiangtu had in his hand was different from that of Chu Feng and Wang Yuxian. The two of them only had imprints of the military seal, but what was in Sima Xiangtu's hand was the real deal.

In other words, they had lost control over the puppet army because Sima Xiangtu had overwritten their control.

“You must be shocked. Why don't you let Yao Cheng tell you who I am?” Sima Xiangtu said with a chuckle.

It was only then Chu Feng realized that Yao Cheng had unknowingly taken her position by Sima Xiangtu's side.

“Chu Feng, Sima Xiangtu is the guest who visited our Monstrous Spirit Clan eight hundred years ago to create this puppet army,” Yao Cheng said.

Chapter 5062: Final Means

“Elder Yao Cheng, you...”

Wang Yuxian could hardly believe what was happening. She couldn't accept such a turn in events.

“Stay close to me.”

Chu Feng was shocked as well, but he immediately sent a voice transmission to Wang Yuxian, the Lady of Dao Sea, and the others. It was already a fact that Yao Cheng had betrayed them, so what was more important was to think of ways to deal with this situation.

The puppet army was still a terrifying force, but it was no longer under their control. It would be hard to wrestle control over it from Sima Xiangtu as he had a firm grasp over them.

They could try other means too, but at this point, the chances of victory were practically null. It looked like their only option here was to escape.

Of course, it was no easy feat to escape from the encirclement of the powerful puppet army, so their only hope here was to seek the help of the Divine Deer.

Unfortunately, Chu Feng wasn't able to receive a response from the Divine Deer.

In order to stall for time, he turned to Yao Cheng and Sima Xiangtu.

“Right from the start, it was all a scheme. You were aware that I infiltrated the Nine Souls Sacred Clan and met the Nine Souls Sacred Clan's Clan Chief. You knocked the Nine Souls Sacred Clan's Clan Chief unconscious and attacked me with the formation. It was all part of your plan.

“Yao Cheng saved me that day and revealed Jiang Kongping's location to me so that she could win my trust. Her real goal was to lead me to the Monstrous Spirit Clan and bring this puppet army over for your use,” Chu Feng said.

“You're right on most parts, but how could I possibly know where young master Kongping is, let alone divulge his whereabouts to you? Chu Feng, are you still thinking that you can rely on those little tricks to sow discord between me and the Pill Dao Immortal Sect? Why don't you ask them whether they believe in your words or not?”

Sima Xiangtu denied divulging Jiang Kongping's location to Chu Feng, which was expected since it would inevitably hurt the ties between him and the Pill Dao Immortal Sect.

"You're really the one who created this puppet army?" Wang Yuxian asked.

She was unwilling to believe this. She had imagined the guest who had visited the Monstrous Spirit Clan eight hundred years ago to be an extremely powerful expert, or else how could he have created such a powerful puppet army?

While Sima Xiangtu was a scheming man, he clearly didn't have the power to create such a powerful puppet army.

"Miss Wang, hasn't Yao Cheng already made things clear for you?"

There was a smile on Sima Xiangtu's lips when he said those words. He seemed to be gleeful about his achievement regarding the puppet army, such that he was unwilling to hear anyone deny them.

"No, you're lying. There's no need for you to go about this in such a roundabout manner if you were the one who created the puppet army. You could have just summoned them instead of having us take them out for you," Wang Yuxian voiced her doubt.

She thought that there were gaps in Sima Xiangtu's story.

"That's because he can't take them out."

Chu Feng had cut right in before Sima Xiangtu could answer.

Upon hearing those words, Wang Yuxian turned to look at Chu Feng in bewilderment. Despite the crisis they were facing, she still wanted to know the truth behind this matter.

"It's probably true that he used the energy of the Monstrous Spirit Clan's benefactor to create the puppet army, but it was sealed off by the benefactor's energy right after they were created. The only way to remove the seal is to clear the formation, but the formation could only be challenged by juniors. Due to that, Sima Xiangtu was unable to release the seal on the puppet army.

“He didn’t want to incur the Monstrous Spirit Clan’s suspicions, so he claimed that he was the one who created the puppet army formation. However, the truth was that it was not from him. It was a formation derived from the benefactor from tens of thousands of years ago.

“The act of creating the puppet army probably triggered the lockdown on the Monstrous Spirit Clan as well. Sima Xiangtu was unaware that he wouldn’t be able to re-enter the Monstrous Spirit Clan once he left the place, resulting in him being deprived of any chances of coming into contact with his puppet army afterward. However, Sima Xiangtu was lucky to have someone in the Monstrous Spirit Clan who was willing to serve him, and that person is none other than Yao Cheng.

“More importantly than that, the energy from the benefactor has already been taken away by Sima Xiangtu. My guess is that it’s currently sealed inside the military seal in Sima Xiangtu’s hand. It’s just a pity that Sima Xiangtu was unable to mobilize the puppet army nor return to the Monstrous Spirit Clan even with the military seal in hand. He needed a junior to enter the Monstrous Spirit Clan and clear the puppet army formation for him.

“Sima Xiangtu probably liaised with Yao Cheng and tried many things over the years. They must have found quite a few outstanding juniors and tried to get them to enter the Monstrous Spirit Clan so as to release the seal, but none of these juniors had been able to pass through the entrance spirit formation gate, let alone come into contact with the puppet army formation.

“Left with no choice, Sima Xiangtu decided to pin his hopes on us. We were foolish to have fallen for his ploy. We ended up releasing the seal on the puppet army and delivering it into his hands,” Chu Feng voiced out his deduction with a look of self-reproach on his face.

“Amazing. You have gotten much smarter after getting duped. You actually managed to get it all right. Chu Feng, I really have to thank you here. You have done me a huge favor. If not for you, I wouldn’t have been able to channel this Immortal Cauldron and turn your master and these trash of the Nine Souls Galaxy into my energy.”

Sima Xiangtu applauded loudly as he looked at Chu Feng with eyes filled with ridicule.



On the other hand, Chu Feng glared at Sima Xiangtu with eyes filled with anger. He could have never imagined that Sima Xiangtu was planning to use the puppet army in order to channel the Immortal Cauldron.

In other words, if not for the puppet army, Sima Xiangtu wouldn't have been able to channel the Immortal Cauldron at all. The cultivators of the Nine Souls Galaxy wouldn't have met with danger either.

Chu Feng had inadvertently become Sima Xiangtu's accomplice!

"How is it, Lord Taibai? Do you think that I'll be able to channel the Immortal Cauldron with the power I have here?" Sima Xiangtu asked gleefully.

"Sima Xiangtu, it looks like I've underestimated you."

Jiang Taibai felt a chill run down his spine. He could feel the strength of the puppet army, which was why he knew that Sima Xiangtu was no longer someone he could look down on.

"Milord, don't say that. I..."

Sima Xiangtu was just about to say something when his face suddenly paled. Jiang Taibai's eyes also widened in astonishment too.

One of the rank three Half-God level puppets suddenly rushed forward and brandished its weapon at Sima Xiangtu. Before Sima Xiangtu could react, the puppet was already right in front of him.

If his reaction had been a split second slower, he would have died in the hand of that puppet.

He was able to order another puppet in time to stop the attack, but it made his entire body tense up. He realized that he didn't have full control over the puppet army yet, for there was someone who could fight with him for control.

"Chu Feng!!!"

Sima Xiangtu quickly used the military seal to take back full control over the puppets while directing a cold stare at Chu Feng. He could tell that the person behind the attack was Chu Feng.

Meanwhile, Chu Feng's face was completely red, and his muscles were tensed up. Veins were popping from his temples. He was using his full

strength in hopes of controlling that puppet, and the only reason why he could do that was thanks to the means he had grasped from the mysterious formation.

It was just a pity that he didn't have much time to decipher it. With enough time, he was confident that he would be able to retain full control of the puppet army even against Sima Xiangtu's military seal. However, it was meaningless to talk about 'what ifs' here.

This was Chu Feng's last resort.

With the Divine Deer unwilling to respond to his summons, he could only entrust his hopes to the puppet army. Their fate depended on this. If he failed here, all of them would die here today.

Chapter 5063: Do You Dare Fight With Me?

"I didn't think that you would have such means, but you shouldn't forget that these are my soldiers. I personally created them. They are fully under my control. You're dreaming if you think that you can use them to kill me," Sima Xiangtu spoke mockingly.

Despite his words, the struggling expression on his face and the aura emanated by the puppet army made it clear that it was not all under his control. Chu Feng was in control of the puppet army too!

Chu Feng didn't have time to answer Sima Xiangtu's provocation because he had to focus his full attention on controlling the puppet army.

In truth, Sima Xiangtu was also using his full strength to reinforce his control over the puppet army despite his calm expression. He dared not to let his guard down here.

At this point, they weren't just fighting over the Half-God level puppet that was near Situ Xiangtu. All nine thousand puppets had begun trembling intensely. Despite not exerting their oppressive might, just the simultaneous release of their auras was more than enough to stir hurricanes all around.

It felt like the world had fallen silent other than the furious hurricanes and creaking puppets.

Be it those from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect, the Nine Souls Sacred Clan, or the cultivators trapped here, everyone stared at this sight with fixated eyes. They knew what Chu Feng and Situ Xiangtu were fighting over, and the result of this fight would determine their fates.

“Chu Feng.”

Wang Yuxian wanted to say something to Chu Feng, but the Lady of Dao Sea stopped her right as she was about to open her mouth. The Lady of Dao Sea knew that they couldn't disturb Chu Feng at this moment, for the slightest lapse in concentration could spell the end.

However, Wang Yuxian could hardly remain calm as she stared at Chu Feng. She bit down on her lips, and her eyes had already reddened.

Chu Feng's veins were popping, and his muscles were tearing under the strain. Blood was seeping from his body. Even his bones were fracturing.

Chu Feng wasn't just giving his all here. He was putting his life on the line.

The truth was that Chu Feng's control over the puppet army was not on par with Situ Xiangtu, and he had fallen into a bad position as Situ Xiangtu started to get serious. Nevertheless, Chu Feng still continued to persist because of a single person—the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

His anger flared when he saw the pitiful state the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was. That made him more determined than ever to win this battle. He knew that he couldn't lose here, or else everyone whom he cared about here would die.

Pu!

However, Chu Feng's body suddenly trembled, and a mouthful of blood spurted from his mouth. Blood also started gushing from his nose, eyes, and ears.

If not for Wang Yuxian and Princess Xiaoxiao rushing forward to support him, he wouldn't even have the strength to remain on his feet.

Shoosh shoosh shoosh!

All of the puppets lifted their weapons and pointed them toward Chu Feng right after. None of them were trembling anymore.

Looking at the delighted look on Situ Xiangtu's face and Chu Feng's pathetic plight, the result of the battle was clear for all to see. Situ Xiangtu won this battle over the puppet army's control.

"I'm sorry, master. I was incompetent," Chu Feng said with a lowered head.

He dared not to lift his head to look at the Ox-nosed Old Daoist. He felt that he had let the latter down.

"Silly lad, what nonsense are you spouting? I have been watching. You haven't disappointed me. If anything, I am proud of you," the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said with a hearty laugh.

"You're right. That disciple of yours has made you proud."

Surprisingly, Situ Xiangtu also acknowledged Chu Feng too.

"Chu Feng, you sure are impressive. If not for Yao Cheng telling me in advance that you have grasped the way to control the puppet army and I need to force you to make an appearance, the army that I have created might have just fallen into your hands. Unfortunately, you have been playing in my hands all this while. Still, I'm glad that a prodigy like you is here. With you around, it'll be hard for me to fail!" Situ Xiangtu said mockingly.

He raised his arm and opened the cage imprisoning the Ox-nosed Old Daoist. He wasn't planning on killing Chu Feng but to lock all of them up.

Situ Xiangtu was only sparing Chu Feng because he wanted to refine Chu Feng into a pill through his Immortal Cauldron. In his view, Chu Feng and the Ox-nosed Old Daoist were much more important than the tens of thousands of cultivators gathered here.

"Wait a moment," a voice suddenly echoed.

Looking over, two silhouettes could be seen standing not too far away. One of them was Jiang Kongping, which had the formation Chu Feng had previously planted on him removed.

However, Chu Feng only spared a cursory glance at Jiang Kongping before looking at the man standing next to him. Those earlier words had come from this man.

He was none other than Jiang Yuantai.

“Chu Feng, you’re the one who defeated my younger brother?” Jiang Yuantai asked.

“Indeed. I was the one who kidnapped and injured your younger brother that day. If you wish to exact vengeance, you can come for me.”

Chu Feng steadied his posture, not faltering in the least even though his body was covered in blood.

“You do have some backbone for daring to admit to everything. Aren’t you afraid that I’ll hurt your friend? Good. I’ll give you a chance in view of your loyalty! Have a fight with me. If you can defeat me, I’ll allow you and your friends to leave this place alive!” Jiang Yuantai said.

“Young master Yuantai, you mustn’t do that!” Situ Xiangtu exclaimed in horror.

He was well aware of Chu Feng’s means. It was one thing if Jiang Yuantai won the battle, but if he lost? He would lose one of his precious cultivation resources!

The moment Situ Xiangtu spoke up, Jiang Yuantai directed a cold glare at Situ Xiangtu.

“What did you say? Are you telling me what to do right now?” Jiang Yuantai said coercively.

Despite knowing that the powerful puppet army was under Situ Xiangtu’s command, everyone could sense Jiang Yuantai’s presence overshadowing Situ Xiangtu’s.

“Young master Yuantai, that’s not what I…”

Situ Xiangtu still wanted to explain himself, but Jiang Yuantai had no intention of listening to his explanation.

“Did you think that you could go against our Pill Dao Immortal Sect with this bunch of wooden logs?” Jiang Yuantai bellowed.

“Young master Yuantai, that’s not what I mean!” Situ Xiangtu exclaimed in a panic.

“Shut your mouth then. Who do you think you are to dare speak up before me?”

Jiang Yuantai glared at Sima Xiangtu coldly, not giving the latter the slightest respect.

The crowd was shocked by this sight. They had witnessed the tremendous might of the puppet army, so they couldn't imagine the master of such a powerful puppet army being demeaned in such a manner.

This only went to show how formidable Jiang Yuantai was.

The puppet army was only a terrifying force for them. It might not necessarily hold a candle to the Pill Dao Immortal Sect.

In the blink of an eye, the person who was in control of the situation was no longer Situ Xiangtu but Jiang Yuantai.

Jiang Yuantai turned to Chu Feng and assessed the latter in interest.

“To be frank, I didn't challenge you to exact vengeance for my younger brother. Rather, I received a prophecy stating that someone will hinder the business of our Pill Dao Immortal Sect in the Eastern Region, and that 'someone' was revealed to be you. What's more laughable is that the prophecy predicted that I'd be defeated by you.

“No matter how I look at it, there's no way you could be a match for me. That's why, I want to go against heaven today and let everyone know that prophecies are meaningless before true power. I'll grasp my own fate. Chu Feng, do you dare to face me in a battle?”

Chapter 5064: Falling Into a Disadvantage

“What do I have to fear since I'm already cornered? I just hope that you can hold to the end of your promise and release my master and the others if I win,” Chu Feng said.

“Of course, but do you really think that you stand a chance here?” Jiang Yuantai said with a laugh.

His body began to glow brightly from the spirit power it was emanating. It was just pure spirit power, but it was enough to astonish all of the cultivators from

the Nine Souls Galaxy. The might his spirit power commanded was comparable to a rank nine Martial Exalted level cultivator, meaning to say that he was at rank nine Dragon Transformation Sensation!

Following that, the world suddenly tremored. Jiang Yuantai started releasing his martial power too, revealing his rank eight Martial Exalted level cultivation.

Holy flames started appearing on his body right after, raising his cultivation by a rank to rank nine Martial Exalted level. The flames morphed once more, and his aura raised even further. His strength had now far surpassed that of ordinary rank nine Martial Exalted level cultivators.

Jiang Yuantai was able to raise his cultivation by two ranks at rank eight Martial Exalted level, and he was a rank nine Dragon Transformation Sensation world spiritist too.

This was the caliber of a prodigy from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect!

While the cultivators of the Nine Souls Sacred Clan knew that the Eastern Region was probably hardly worth a mention compared to the powerhouse known as the Pill Dao Immortal Sect, they were still shocked by the prowess displayed by Jiang Yuantai.

It felt like they were standing before a rift that couldn't be bridged, and it filled their hearts with fear.

Sima Xiangtu breathed a sigh of relief after witnessing Jiang Yuantai's prowess. He knew that Chu Feng was talented too, but he couldn't imagine any way Chu Feng could win this battle. **novE/lB(In**

In fact, Chu Feng had a tight frown on his forehead.

If Jiang Yuantai was only at rank nine Martial Exalted level, he might still stand a chance with the Second Slash of his Heavenly Lightning Nine Levels Slashes. However, Jiang Yuantai was able to raise his cultivation by a rank above that of rank nine Martial Exalted level, which made him beyond Chu Feng's current means to deal with.

Chu Feng was the top prodigy of the Eastern Region, but he didn't stand a chance against Jiang Yuantai.

“You need not panic. You would indeed stand no chance against me under normal circumstances, but I’ll give you a chance today. Let’s compete in another format,” Jiang Yuantai said.

“Another format?” Chu Feng asked.

“What’s your real cultivation level?” Jiang Yuantai asked.

“Rank four Martial Exalted level,” Chu Feng replied.

“Heh…” Jiang Yuantai sneered in disdain.

He glanced at Jiang Kongping, as if mocking the latter for being defeated by a mere rank four Martial Exalted level cultivator.

Jiang Kongping shrugged in response. He didn’t say a word, but his movements were telling his older brother not to underestimate Chu Feng.

Jiang Yuantai thought nothing of his warning and turned his attention back to Chu Feng, saying, “Very well, I’ll suppress his cultivation level down to rank four Martial Exalted level. We’ll cross blows in the most primitive way, not using any martial skills, secret techniques, or means to raise cultivation.”

“You want to fight with me bare-handed?” Chu Feng asked.

“That’s not it.”

Jiang Yuantai reached into his Cosmos Sack and pulled out a wooden crate. The wooden crate flew into the sky and automatically opened itself, revealing eighteen different weapons within. These weapons were all made out of wood, not harnessing the slightest power in them. However, they were incredibly resilient.

They were actually treasures, just slightly peculiar ones.

Shoosh!

Jiang Yuantai raised his hand, and a wooden spear flew into his grasp.

“Feel free to choose any of the weapons here,” Jiang Yuantai said.

“Are you sure you want to fight with me in such a manner? It’ll be unfair for you,” Chu Feng said.



“Of course it isn’t. I can easily claim your life in a heartbeat in a normal fight, but I want to prove that you’re inferior to me on all grounds. I want to show everyone from the Nine Souls Galaxy how helplessly weak their so-called strongest prodigy is!” Jiang Yuantai said.

Chu Feng initially still had a fair impression of Jiang Yuantai since the latter’s appearance had brought him a ray of hope, but those words made him realize that the latter was just plain arrogant. Jiang Yuantai simply had low self-esteem and wanted to validate his own self-worth here. It would be unwise to expect Jiang Yuantai to hold to the end of his promise.

Nevertheless, Chu Feng still wanted to give it a try here since this was his only hope.

Shoosh!

Chu Feng raised his hand, and a wooden sword flew into his grasp. He could tell right away that the wooden sword had no additional enhancements to it. Rather than a weapon, it would be more accurate to call it an artwork or a collectible.

That being said, its resilience was truly no joke. On that aspect, it was still possible to use it as a weapon.

“Are you done choosing? You won’t be able to swap your weapon once you have made your choice,” Jiang Yuantai said.

“I’ll take this,” Chu Feng replied.

“Alright.”

With a flick of his sleeves, the wooden crate filled with weapons closed by itself and returned to Jiang Yuantai’s hand. By this point, Jiang Yuantai had already retracted his spirit power. His aura also started weakening till his cultivation was finally lowered to rank four Martial Exalted level.

“Young master Yuantai.”

Sima Xiangtu wanted to dissuade Jiang Yuantai from his decision.

Jiang Yuantai would have no problem defeating Chu Feng in a normal fight, but he was foolishly crippling himself for the sake of his needless pride. To get

complacent against someone like Chu Feng was no different from courting death!

“Shut your mouth! Say a word more and I’ll terminate our partnership!” Jiang Yuantai bellowed.

He pointed his spear toward Chu Feng and said, “I’ll repeat it once more. No martial skills or secret techniques are allowed. You can’t resort to any treasures either. We’ll fight using the most primitive means till one of us admit defeat or lose the ability to continue fighting. If you break your promise, I’ll immediately revert back to my original cultivation level and end your life,” Jiang Yuantai said.

“Very well,” Chu Feng replied with a nod.

“Are you ready?” Jiang Yuantai asked.

“Come at me whenever you want to,” Chu Feng said.

“Heh... You’re one confident lad. Let me see if your strength matches up to your words!”

Shoosh!

Jiang Yuantai rushed toward Chu Feng with a spear in his hands, moving so quickly that he was able to reach Chu Feng within the blink of an eye.

Shoosh!

Jiang Yuantai propelled his spear toward Chu Feng’s heart with a swift pierce that was both powerful and accurate. All experts present could tell that even though Jiang Yuantai had suppressed his cultivation, he was still one of the strongest ones among rank four Martial Exalted level cultivators.

Without resorting to martial skills, secret techniques, or treasures, no other rank four Martial Exalted level cultivator, be it a junior or an elder, would have been able to deal with that attack. That was simply how powerful Jiang Yuantai was!

Chu Feng dared not to get careless before Jiang Yuantai’s attack. He quickly took a step back and twisted his body to block that pierce. He chose to dodge instead of confronting Jiang Yuantai.

“Hmph!”

Jiang Yuantai didn't lose his composure just because his spear had missed. Without any hesitation, he stopped the propulsion of his spear and swung it sideward instead, changing it into a sweeping motion.

Shoosh!

Given how close the two of them were and the large radius of the sweeping spear, it was impossible for Chu Feng to dodge the attack.

However, Chu Feng seemed to have predicted this follow-up attack from Jiang Yuantai. Just as the spear was about to strike Chu Feng, his sword suddenly moved in place to stop the spear.

Bam!

Both weapons were made out of wood, but their collision produced a resounding explosion, followed by furious shockwaves and diffused into the surroundings. Chu Feng was unable to hold his ground and ended up being sent flying.

“Chu Feng?!”

Wang Yuxian, the Lady of Dao Sea, the Godwish Grandmother, and the others were shocked to see that. They noticed that Chu Feng's arms were trembling ever so slightly the moment he was sent flying.

While Chu Feng had quickly stabilized his own arm right after, the experts present were still able to notice this subtle movement. It showed that Chu Feng, despite being unmatched in terms of strength amongst his peers all this while, was actually being overpowered!

Chapter 5065: Unfair Duel

Shoosh!

Barely after Chu Feng steadied his body, Jiang Yuantai swiftly rushed over to launch a follow-up attack. Chu Feng quickly twisted his body to dodge the attack, but Jiang Yuantai reacted instantaneously and adapted his attack accordingly.

Just like the last attack, while Chu Feng was able to dodge the initial strike, he was unable to deal with the second one. There was simply too little time to react once Jiang Yuantai closed the distance between them. He could only block with his sword.

Clang!

There was a sharp reverberation as ripples of shockwaves devastated the surroundings. Chu Feng was sent flying once more, and his trembling hands were much more apparent this time around.

“Oi, lad from the Nine Souls Galaxy, why are your hands trembling? Are you so weak that you can’t even hold a sword properly?”

Even though Chu Feng was able to control his trembling within moments, those from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect still noticed it and mocked him for it. It was only normal for them to notice since they were all at pinnacle Martial Exalted level, some of them even reaching Half-God level. With their cultivation, there was no way they would miss on the subtle details in the battle.

“I am not from the Nine Souls Galaxy. I am from the Ancestral Martial Galaxy,” Chu Feng replied with a harrumph.

Right after saying those words, he embarked on his counterattack. He began charging toward Jiang Yuantai with his sword in hand.

Jiang Yuantai revealed a disdainful look as he waited for Chu Feng to come to him. He was fully confident of his victory here.

Shoosh!

Even though Chu Feng was brandishing a wooden sword, his slash still induced a frighteningly cold aura.

“That fellow...”

It was at that moment that those from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect finally realized that Chu Feng was not to be made light of. The might he was displaying from that single slash was not something that could have come from an ordinary rank four Martial Exalted level cultivator.

Even though they were competing on raw battle prowess, Chu Feng had proven himself to be an expert in close-quarter combat.

However, to everyone's shock, Jiang Yuantai didn't bother to dodge at all. He raised his spear and flicked it toward Chu Feng's sword.

Clang!

Just like that, he easily deflected Chu Feng's sword. At the same time, Chu Feng was also pushed back as well.

In contrast, Jiang Yuantai stood firmly on the spot, not moving in the slightest.

"Formidable!"

Tight knits showed on the faces of the Nine Souls Galaxy's experts. Even the Godwish Grandmother and the Lady of Dao Sea didn't think well of Chu Feng despite knowing how powerful he was. They could sense just how powerful Jiang Yuantai was.

At the very least, it was clear that there was a huge gap between Chu Feng and Jiang Yuantai even though the two of them were at the same cultivation level.

"Is that all you amount to without any martial skills?" *nOve(lB-1n*

Jiang Yuantai eyed Chu Feng as if he was staring at a pitiful insect. The contemptuous nature of his gaze enraged Chu Feng.

Shoosh!

Chu Feng charged forth with his sword once more, emanating an even greater chill than before. Powered by his fury, his movements were much faster and more vigorous as compared to before.

Clang!

Yet, all it took was a sweep of Jiang Yuantai's spear to smack Chu Feng's sword away. Chu Feng himself was also sent flying a distance away.

"Weak."

In the few clashes they had, Jiang Yuantai had already realized that there was a huge gap between them. He began losing his patience, thinking that there was no point wasting his time on Chu Feng anymore.

Thus, after he sent Chu Feng flying, he took a step forward and began charging toward Chu Feng. He had decided to end this boring battle.

He moved at such a tremendous speed that he was already right before Chu Feng before the latter could even steady his figure.

Shoosh!

But just as he was about to propel his spear forth, Chu Feng's sword suddenly appeared from above and swiftly hacked down on him. This time, it moved at a speed much faster than the previous two slashes.

Jiang Yuantai's eyes narrowed in astonishment. He quickly retracted his spear to block the falling sword, barely making it in time.

Clang!

The two weapons collided, but this time around, the sword felt much heavier compared to the two previous slashes. Jiang Yuantai was actually finding it hard to push it back. He could only stare in bewilderment as the sword slowly pushed his spear downward, till it started sinking into his shoulder.

It was only a relief that his spear had managed to redirect the trajectory of the sword a little, or else it would be slicing into his head right now.

"This!!!"

Those from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect were flabbergasted by what they were seeing. They hadn't expected Chu Feng to be able to hurt Jiang Yuantai.

"That fellow intentionally concealed his battle prowess. How despicable!"

Jeers began sounding shortly after. They realized that Chu Feng had been intentionally holding back so as to get Jiang Yuantai to lower his guard so that he could end the fight in a single strike. In fact, his trembling hand was also an act too.

Clang!

Jiang Yuantai also realized the same too. He garnered every last bit of strength he had to push the sword off before hurriedly backing away. He was hoping to make a quick strategic retreat and get back into form before continuing the battle.

But the moment he started backing away, Chu Feng quickly chased him.

The anger in Chu Feng's eyes had vanished without a trace, left with nothing but coldness. Jiang Yuantai was starting to understand how Jiang Kongping had fallen in defeat.

On the other hand, Chu Feng pursued Jiang Yuantai relentlessly, not giving him any chance to catch a breather. He had put on an act thus far for this moment, so there was no way he would let Jiang Yuantai get away so easily. Since he had already revealed his strength, he wouldn't rest until he had Jiang Yuantai cornered and defeated.

"That makes things interesting."

Surprisingly, Jiang Yuantai wasn't angered by Chu Feng's deception. Instead, a dangerous smile appeared on his face.

He halted his retreat and brandished his spear once more, swiftly launching a counterattack against the pursuing Chu Feng. The next moment, countless afterimages of his spear began thrusting at Chu Feng, forcing the latter to back away.

Jiang Yuantai pressed his attack on, forcing Chu Feng to have to deal with the many afterimages of his spear while trying to retreat.

The tables were turned just like that. Chu Feng had fallen into a disadvantageous position once more, possibly being even in a worse plight than before.

"How could someone achieve such an astounding level of mastery in their spearmanship?" the Godwish Grandmother exclaimed in astonishment.

The sheer might displayed by Jiang Yuantai left her feeling deeply worried on Chu Feng's behalf. This was the first time she was seeing anyone unleash such a terrifying attack, be it junior or elder. She wasn't confident of dealing with those attacks if she were to suppress her cultivation to rank four Martial Exalted level. Perhaps, she might even fare worse than Chu Feng.

She couldn't think of anyone who could possibly defeat Jiang Yuantai in a battle of weapons in the same cultivation rank.

"Is he finally getting serious?" Jiang Kongping murmured with a smile.

He wasn't too surprised since he knew his older brother better than anyone else.

Jiang Yuantai had always been fond of weapons from a young age, especially the spear. He had been specializing in spearmanship ever since he was ten years old, and their father even spent an exorbitant sum to buy a martial skill manual named the Three Souls Conqueror Spearmanship for him.

It was no easy feat to cultivate the Three Souls Conqueror Spearmanship.

The first soul enhanced one's strength, and the second soul enhanced one's speed.

The third soul achieved a balance of strength and speed, allowing one to set up a spear formation.

Jiang Yuantai spent forty years cultivating the Three Souls Conqueror Spearmanship to the third level. Following that, he devoted another twenty years to reinforce his mastery of it.

With a whole sixty years, he was able to fully master the Three Souls Conqueror Spearmanship and bring out its full prowess.

Since then, Jiang Yuantai had favored such duels. He would often suppress his cultivation to the same level as others and forbid them from raising their cultivation, using any martial skills, or resorting to any treasures. It would be a pure battle of weaponry.

It might appear to be a fair duel, but those who were aware of Jiang Yuantai's means would know better than to think that. There was no way Jiang Yuantai could lose when he had devoted sixty years of his life to master the Three Souls Conqueror Spearmanship.

From the very start, this had been an unfair duel!

Chapter 5066: Struggling In Despair



No cultivator would devote so much time and effort to mastering a single weapon, especially not a junior. A cultivator's comprehension ability tended to be the strongest in their younger years, allowing them to further their cultivation at a rapid pace.

With each advancement in cultivation rank, there would be new martial skills to learn. Even trying to grasp these new martial skills was a challenge in itself, so it made little sense for a junior cultivator to squander their time on mastering a single weapon.

Yet, Jiang Yuantai happened to be an odd one out.

Shoosh shoosh shoosh!

Deafening winds raged around Chu Feng like a furious storm, each of them accompanied with a single spear piercing toward him.

There was only a single spear in Jiang Yuantai's hands, but it was all he needed to draw on the might of tens of thousands of soldiers to tightly encircle Chu Feng. Chu Feng was already using his full strength at this point, but he was still struggling to deal with Jiang Yuantai's offense.

Chu Feng didn't know that Jiang Yuantai's offense wasn't any simple attack. This was a spear formation created through the third level of the Three Souls Conqueror Spearmanship!

Jiang Yuantai pushed on with his ferocious offense, but to his astonishment, he was still unable to breach Chu Feng's defense. Slowly, those from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect began to lose their composure.

Under normal circumstances, Jiang Yuantai should have clinched victory by now after bringing forth the full prowess of the Three Souls Conqueror Spearmanship, but somehow, the spear formation wasn't able to get to Chu Feng despite the relentless assault.

"Could it be that Chu Feng is well-versed in swordsmanship?"

"No, that's not right. Chu Feng is putting up a strong defense, but there doesn't seem to be any pattern to it. He seems to be doing it instinctively."

"How is Chu Feng able to react that quickly? Is he a prodigy greater than our two young masters?"

Jiang Taibai had been watching the duel too. As a Half-God level cultivator, he was able to clearly see Chu Feng and Jiang Yuantai's movements as if they were both moving in slow motion. For that reason, he could tell just how formidable Chu Feng was.

"Young master Yuantai, you should end the battle as quickly as possible," Jiang Taibai told Jiang Yuantai via voice transmission.

Jiang Taibai realized that even though Chu Feng initially struggled to deal with Jiang Yuantai's offense, his movements were slowly growing more fluid. This was a sign that Chu Feng was accustoming himself to Jiang Yuantai's offense. At this rate, it was only a matter of time before he breached Jiang Yuantai's spear formation.

As much as Jiang Yuantai didn't want to accept it, Chu Feng was indeed a prodigy. On top of that, he possessed great combat experience that few in the older generation could match.

Even without Jiang Taibai's reminder, Jiang Yuantai had also realized how serious the situation had become. In truth, he was already going all out, but he still couldn't overcome Chu Feng's defense.

"I don't believe it!"

Jiang Yuantai's eyes narrowed viciously.

His spearmanship grew even faster and stronger. His spear formation also increased in prowess, unleashing a relentless barrage of pierces toward Chu Feng.

"Damn it, he has been hiding his true strength!"

Chu Feng had barely gotten accustomed to Jiang Yuantai's offense when the latter's attacks suddenly grew explosively stronger. That threw Chu Feng off the loop, forcing him to defend in a fluster.

This time around, he wasn't able to maintain his perfect defense anymore. Jiang Yuantai's spear started brushing across his body while he was dodging. Within moments, he had already been inflicted with multiple bloodied lacerations. None of these injuries were fatal, but they were glaring enough to make one feel queasy.

It was not that Chu Feng was weak but that Jiang Yuantai had suddenly become too strong.

Even so, Chu Feng didn't lose his composure. With focused eyes, he gathered all of his attention and did his best to defend himself against Jiang Yuantai. He knew that it was even more so at times like this that he had to give his all.

There might still be a chance of survival if he gritted his teeth and held on. Otherwise, everything would really be over.

But it was simply too difficult. Jiang Yuantai's strikes were so heavy that only someone of Chu Feng's strength could barely receive them, and his attacks were so quick that Chu Feng couldn't even follow them at all. Chu Feng could only count on his own senses and combat experience to predict Jiang Yuantai's attacks.

It was only a matter of time before Chu Feng would fall in defeat at this rate, but this was already the limit of what he could do without resorting to martial skills, secret techniques, and other means.

"Am I destined to lose here? No, I can't lose. I must win this fight!"

Chu Feng felt deeply indignant. The overwhelming emotions welling up inside him forced him to become more focused than ever, and all of the fighting he had been through over the years flashed across his head.

"If my current means aren't enough to defeat him, all I have to do is to create a means that would allow it!"

Chu Feng's eyes suddenly began shining brightly. He began to study Jiang Yuantai's movements intently while blocking the latter's attacks. At the same time, his brain also started processing at an increased speed.

Such a state naturally resulted in a fall in Chu Feng's defensive prowess, resulting in him accruing injuries. Despite this, his eyes became even sharper. His determination to defeat Jiang Yuantai burned even more intensely than ever.

"Heh..."

Jiang Yuantai sneered coldly when he saw how Chu Feng's movements had become dulled. Oblivious to the truth, a relieved smile emerged on his lips. He thought that his victory was guaranteed now that Chu Feng was at his limit.

"Master, what do we do?"

Watching the growing number of injuries on Chu Feng's body, Wang Yuxian turned to look at the Lady of Dao Sea with pleading eyes.

"Lele, Chu Feng only has himself to count on right now," the Lady of Dao Sea replied helplessly.

She wanted to help Chu Feng too, but there was nothing she could do. They were completely at the mercy of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect. If she intervenes in the duel, Chu Feng would be immediately deemed as the loser and all of them would be killed.

Shoosh shoosh shoosh!

All of a sudden, Chu Feng suddenly switched from defense to offense and pushed his sword toward Jiang Yuantai. It was such an abrupt attack that Jiang Yuantai was forced to retreat. Had he not reacted in time, his spear formation might have collapsed to the attack.

Chapter 5067: Comprehending Swordsmanship

"Heh..."

Chu Feng revealed a smile upon seeing how his attack had worked. This was the first time he was showing such a smile since the two of them began their duel.

"Hmph!"

Thinking that Chu Feng was mocking him, Jiang Yuantai harrumphed coldly and altered his spear formation, encircling Chu Feng within it once more. However, he found himself unable to curb Chu Feng this time around.

n/.o//v./e--l-)b-.l((n

Chu Feng had completely abandoned his defense for offense, and every single slash was so unpredictable that Jiang Yuantai was unable to properly

read them. Before he knew it, Jiang Yuantai found that he was forced to go on the defensive.

“Could it be that Chu Feng...”

The Lady of Dao Sea, the Godwish Grandmother, and the others widened their eyes in disbelief.

“That brat is breaching the spear formation!”

Jiang Taibai and the others from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect revealed a hint of unease in their eyes. It was one thing if this was just a coincidence, but they could tell that all of Chu Feng’s slashes were calculated to curb Jiang Yuantai’s spear formation.

In other words, Chu Feng had found a way to overcome Jiang Yuantai’s spear formation!

But the Three Souls Conqueror Spearmanship was a technique that Jiang Yuantai had devoted sixty years to master. How in the world was Chu Feng able to find a way to overcome it within such a short period of time?

There were only two possibilities.

One, Chu Feng was the same type of person as Jiang Yuantai. He liked swords from a young age and had learned a formidable sword skill. He had been hiding his true skills all this while, only revealing it now that he was forced to a corner.

While Chu Feng’s attacks looked random at first glance, they strung together to form a coherent and profound sword skill.

But if that was truly the case, why didn’t Chu Feng reveal his skills right from the start? He would have a much easier time winning the duel if he had gone all out at the start while Jiang Yuantai’s guard was down.

This argument made the second possibility much likelier.

Chu Feng was actually an incredibly talented cultivator who could decipher the spearmanship that took Jiang Yuantai sixty years to master, and the sword skill he was displaying right now was something he had come up with in the spur of a moment!

Considering how the duel had progressed thus far, Jiang Taibai and the others were convinced that Chu Feng belonged in the second category.

“Is that junior from the Eastern Region really that monstrously talented?”

The contempt in Jiang Taibai’s eyes had vanished without a trace, replaced with vigilance and a hint of fear. Those eyes were reminiscent of an adult wolf assessing a young tiger. He knew that even though the young tiger was helpless against him now, it was only a matter of time before the young tiger matured and crushed him beneath its feet.

“This is unbelievable. Young friend Chu Feng actually comprehended a sword skill to overcome that spearmanship!”

The Lady of Dao Sea and the Godwish Grandmother were excited to see that sight. It was one thing if it had been any normal spearmanship, but that clearly wasn’t the case. One would require extraordinary combat experience, great intelligence, and an exceptionally creative mind in order to pull off such a feat.

At the very least, it was impossible for ordinary prodigies to develop such a sword skill within such a short period of time.

Chu Feng’s fighting style underwent a complete change. His movements suddenly became extremely aggressive, leaving his opponent with no room to retaliate at all.

While this sword skill was developed in order to counter Jiang Yuantai, it would still be a formidable means no matter whom he used it against.

“Hmph!

Jiang Yuantai harrumphed coldly as his spear became even faster and stronger.

This time, Chu Feng was really unable to catch up with Jiang Yuantai anymore. As ingenious as his sword skill was, the gap in their raw physical abilities was too big that it could no longer be bridged with technique.

Even the ultimate skill would crumble in the face of absolute strength!

“How could any rank four Martial Exalted level cultivator be this powerful? Did he consume a forbidden medicine? That shouldn’t be. There aren’t any traces of a forbidden medicine at all. Is Jiang Yuantai really that powerful?”

The Lady of Dao Sea and the others revealed looks of despair upon seeing how Chu Feng was still being suppressed despite having developed such a profound sword skill.

Chu Feng’s performance in this duel had already far surpassed their expectations, such that they wouldn’t have expected this out of even the most talented junior. It was just a pity that Jiang Yuantai was unreasonably strong.

There was only so much Chu Feng could do against such an opponent.

In a moment of carelessness, Jiang Yuantai’s spear impaled Chu Feng’s left shoulder. It was a strike that not only injured Chu Feng’s physical body but his soul too.

However, this was only the start of his suffering. More and more spears pierced into Chu Feng, each of them drawing blood without fail. In just a matter of moments, his body was already covered in bloodied holes.

Chu Feng was far too overwhelmed by Jiang Yuantai to retaliate. Even blocking and dodging were impossible for him.

“Young master Yuantai, please show mercy to that boy! I have a use for him!” Sima Xiangtu exclaimed.

Needless to say, his real intention wasn’t to help Chu Feng but to make use of him.

However, Jiang Yuantai paid no heed to Sima Xiangtu and continued impaling Chu Feng without any mercy. He was infuriated by how a mere ant like Chu Feng was able to force him this far, and he wanted to vent his frustrations.

Be it Chu Feng’s arms, legs, waist, chest, or neck, there was not a single part of Chu Feng’s body that was spared from his spear. By this point, Chu Feng was already covered in holes.

“Big brother, this is enough,” another pleading voice sounded.

It was from Jiang Kongping, which was surprising considering how Chu Feng had previously held him hostage and publicly humiliated him. In fact, part of Jiang Yuantai's hatred toward Chu Feng stemmed from how the latter had treated Jiang Kongping.

There should have been no reason for Jiang Kongping to speak up on his behalf, but he did and it was effective.

Pu!

Jiang Yuantai launched his final pierce before finally stopping his aggression. It was just that this final pierce was aimed at Chu Feng's head, skewering his right eye and piercing through the other side of his head.

Chu Feng's body swayed along with the vibrations of the spear.

Meanwhile, Jiang Yuantai turned to look at the crowd with a haughty look on his face, as if Chu Feng was his prized trophy.

"That bastard!"

Wang Yuxian was infuriated by that sight. If not for the Lady of Dao Sea stopping her, she would have stomped up to confront Jiang Yuantai.

Chapter 5068: Embarrassment of Defeat

Shoosh! n)/o(-V(-e--L)-b--1(-n

With a fling of his spear, Jiang Yuantai hurled the skewered Chu Feng down from the sky.

Boom!

Chu Feng was slammed into the ground with an enormous force that created a huge crater beneath him. He had already stopped moving altogether, but Jiang Yuantai didn't let him off just because of that.

Jiang Yuantai descended from the sky and pointed his spear toward Chu Feng while placing his foot on the latter's body. This was the movement Chu Feng had made in the prophecy.



“That’s all you amount to, Chu Feng. I gave you a chance, but you’re an utter weakling. Your master and your friends could have survived this ordeal, but they are now doomed to die because of how useless you are.”

After saying those words, Jiang Yuantai finally withdrew his leg and turned around. As he left, he suddenly burst into hearty laughter.

“That’s all the prophecy amounts to! The man in the prophecy has been defeated by me! Let’s see who else in the Eastern Region is able to stop our Pill Dao Immortal Sect!”

Those arrogant words were directed toward everyone present in the area, but no one dared to refute him. The cultivators of the Nine Souls Galaxy present in the area were already no different from prisoners on death row. Given the position they were in, they dared not to speak against Jiang Yuantai.

Chu Feng’s body suddenly began floating into the air before flying over to Sima Xiangtu’s side.

“You’re still conscious? Why aren’t you saying a word at all? Feeling defeated?” Sima Xiangtu glanced at the bloodied Chu Feng and sneered.

With a wave of his sleeves, he hurled Chu Feng into the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s arms.

“Zhuge Yuankong, do you see that? Your disciple might be talented enough to be deemed the number one prodigy of the Eastern Region, but he’s still no match for the other prodigies in this vast world of cultivation. The same goes for you as well.

“You’re once the strongest world spiritist of the Holy Light Galaxy, basked in glory and splendor. Yet, all you can do now is to watch helplessly as your disciple undergo such torture. Do you know why that’s the case? It’s because you’re too weak,” Sima Xiangtu mocked the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist ignored him. Instead, he began channeling his spirit power to treat Chu Feng.

“Is there a need to treat him? He’s going to die anyway,” Sima Xiangtu said.

“All humans eventually meet their death. Why are you living then?” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist replied.

“Hmph!”

Sima Xiangtu was displeased by the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s attitude. It was one thing for the Ox-nosed Old Daoist to put on such airs while he was weaker than him, but he had already obtained far greater power now.

Yet, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist continued to face him without the slightest hint of fear. No matter how he tortured the Ox-nosed Old Daoist, the latter continued to treat him the same way as before, as if he was an outcast unworthy of respect.

“All humans eventually meet their death, but I have much time ahead of me whereas your days are already numbered,” Sima Xiangtu replied with a harrumph.

With a wave of his sleeves, he imprisoned Chu Feng, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist, Wang Yuxian, Princess Xiaoxiao, the Lady of Dao Sea, and the others into his confinement formation.

The world fell silent following that.

Be it the trapped cultivators of the Nine Souls Galaxy or the enslaved clan members of the Nine Souls Sacred Clan, all of them looked despaired. They thought that they were saved when the puppet army appeared. Even when Sima Xiangtu took control of the puppet army, they still clutched onto a sliver of hope.

During the duel between Chu Feng and Jiang Yuantai, they were vaguely aware that they wouldn’t be saved even if Chu Feng won, but they still prayed for his victory anyway. At least that would have proved that their Eastern Region wasn’t filled with just weaklings that others could trample at their whim.

But despite Chu Feng’s astounding talent, he still lost to Jiang Yuantai. That plunged them deeper into despair.

With Chu Feng’s defeat, the final sliver of hope in their hearts was extinguished. They didn’t dare to carry any expectations anymore.

“Sima Xiangtu, how did you obtain that military seal?”

Jiang Taibai headed over to Sima Xiangtu's side and eyed the military seal in his hand.

"Lord Taibai, I obtained this from the Monstrous Spirit Clan. I'm not too sure about its exact background except that a mysterious elder had entrusted it to the Monstrous Spirit Clan. It's just that the Monstrous Spirit Clan was too useless to grasp control of this military seal, so it ended up falling into my hands," Sima Xiangtu replied honestly.

"You could have controlled the Eastern Region by yourself with that puppet army. Why do you need our powers? Is it really just to borrow our Immortal Cauldron? What are you intending to do with our Immortal Cauldron?" Jiang Taibai asked.

He had never been interested to know what Sima Xiangtu was planning to do with the Immortal Cauldron because he never thought that the latter was a threat. However, it would be foolish of him to continue underestimating Sima Xiangtu when he had such a powerful puppet army under his control. He realized that there might be more to Sima Xiangtu than he knew about.

Recalling the terrifying talent Sima Xiangtu had previously displayed, he was more certain than ever that they had to be wary of Sima Xiangtu.

"Milord, I've cultivated a special cultivation technique, but I was unable to make a breakthrough in it due to the limitations of my talent. However, I was able to find another alternative way to overcome my limits. As long as I turn these people into my nutrients, I'll be able to advance to Half-God level.

"Due to the stringent requirements of the forging process, I require a treasure of the caliber of the Immortal Cauldron. That's also why I'm deeply grateful to the Pill Dao Immortal Sect for the generous help you have offered me. Rest assured, I'll fulfill the end of my promise," Sima Xiangtu replied humbly.

"You really aren't the one who divulged young master Kongping's whereabouts?" Jiang Taibai asked.

"Milord, there's no way I would have dared to do something as insolent as that, not to mention that I'm unaware of young master Kongping's whereabouts," Sima Xiangtu hurriedly explained.

"That better be the truth, or else not even these wooden puppets you have will be able to save your life," Jiang Taibai sneered before walking away.

Sima Xiangtu kept his back lowered as Jiang Taibai and the other members of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect left the area. It was only when all of them were no longer within sight that he finally dared to raise his head.

As he straightened his posture, the puppet army immediately took its position behind him. A faint smile slowly formed on his lips.

Chapter 5069: Unfair

Meanwhile, in Sima Xiangtu's confinement formation, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was once again pinned up under Sima Xiangtu's maneuver.

Fortunately, the Lady of Dao Sea and Godwish Grandmother were around. Under their treatment, Chu Feng's condition improved significantly. His punctured body soon returned to normal. It was just that his soul had yet to recover, so his complexion remained awful.

In order to prevent Sima Xiangtu from overhearing their discussion, they set up a barrier within the confinement formation.

"Master and elders, I was inept," Chu Feng said with his head hanging in shame.

"What nonsense are you saying, Chu Feng? You have already done your best!" Wang Yuxian quickly consoled him.

The Godwish Grandmother and the Lady of Dao Sea also did the same. They knew that Chu Feng was not to be blamed for their plight.

"What do you have to be ashamed of? Jiang Yuantai is the one who should be ashamed!" the Ox-nosed Old Daoist suddenly said.

"Master, what do you mean? Did Jiang Yuantai use special means to defeat me?" Chu Feng asked.

"Of course! There was a sharp increase in his fighting prowess two times in the battle. He must have consumed two forbidden medicines," the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

"But I didn't sense any traces of forbidden medicine from him," the Lady of Dao Sea said.

That was also what everyone else was perplexed about. They had been keeping a close eye on the duel, but none of them noticed any traces of forbidden medicine at all.

“The Pill Dao Immortal Sect specializes in forging pills. All young masters of notable standing in the Pill Dao Immortal Sect would receive precious forbidden medicine that is both discreet and comes with minimal side effects.

“Of course, this forbidden medicine is not easy to forge. The ingredients required are exorbitant, and the process is incredibly convoluted too. For that reason, this forbidden medicine isn’t available to ordinary sect members, and the Pill Dao Immortal Sect doesn’t sell it to outsiders either. That’s why few people know about its existence,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

“Despicable! So much for his talk about having a fair duel, but he actually resorted to forbidden medicine!”

“Indeed, he’s despicable.”

Both Wang Yuxian and Princess Xiaoxiao berated Jiang Yuantai. The Ox-nosed Daoist chuckled at that sight.

“My disciple truly has luck with women. I’m truly no match for you on that aspect,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist teased.

Both Wang Yuxian and Princess Xiaoxiao’s faces reddened, not knowing how to respond to those words. Their embarrassment quelled their anger.

“There’s no such thing as fairness in this world. His so-called fairness is nothing more than a pretense to make others acknowledge his strength. This has never been a fair duel from the very start. I dare say that he has devoted a huge amount of time to training his spearmanship. No one else other than my disciple would have been able to withstand that spear of his,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

“His spearmanship is indeed formidable. It appears ordinary at first glance, but it comes together to form a formation. Now that I think about it, his speed and spear are most likely augmented by a spear skill. It isn’t just his raw strength,” the Lady of Dao Sea agreed.

“I wonder if there’s any forbidden medicine in here too. Master, are you able to open this Cosmos Sack?”

Chu Feng took out a Cosmos Sack and passed it over to the Ox-nosed Old Daoist. This was the Cosmos Sack he had snatched from Jiang Kongping, but unfortunately, none of them had been able to open it thus far.

While the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's spirit power was nowhere in comparison to the Lady of Dao Sea and the Godwish Grandmother, he seemed to know a lot of things and possess exceptional means. Just his feat of fusing the Four Symbols Divine Power into his body was something that ordinary world spiritists wouldn't be able to pull off.

That was also why Chu Feng thought that his master might be able to pull off what the others couldn't.

"Where did you get this Cosmos Sack from?" the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

"It's from Jiang Kongping, a young master of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect," Chu Feng replied.

"There's no need for me to look at it. All young masters of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect use a recognition formation for it," the Ox-nosed Old Daoist replied.

"Recognition formation? I didn't find anything like that on it."

The Godwish Grandmother and the Lady of Dao Sea began examining the Cosmos Sack once again. They hadn't been able to find any recognition formation on it the last time they inspected the Cosmos Sack.

As the name suggested, recognition formation was a type of sealing formation that only unlocked upon sensing its master's aura. Unless one's spirit power was superior to the person who constructed the formation, it would be impossible to forcefully break it open.

"Chu Feng, open my Cosmos Sack. You should be able to find a black pill with a star imprint on it. Consume it and try imitating Jiang Kongping's aura. You should be able to open that Cosmos Sack now," the Ox-nosed Old Daoist instructed.

Chu Feng quickly did as he was told. He found a black pill in the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's Cosmos Sack and consumed it. Then, he used his spirit power to copy Jiang Kongping's aura.

The pill helped Chu Feng better copy the aura of others. Together with Chu Feng's superior skills as a world spiritist and the fact that he was a junior, he was able to copy Jiang Kongping's aura with a high degree of resemblance.

It was time to verify whether this was sufficient to trick the Cosmos Sack.

Everyone watched intently as Chu Feng released his aura, wanting to see if the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's words rang true.

Weng!

Shockingly, the seemingly indestructible formation began unraveling the moment it sensed Chu Feng's aura. The Cosmos Sack opened up!

"Master, you're as formidable as ever," Chu Feng remarked in awe.

"Take all of the items out of the Cosmos Sack or else it'll soon close on its own accord. Without my pill, you won't be able to open the Cosmos Sack no matter how well you copy Jiang Kongping's aura," the Ox-nosed Old Daoist instructed.

"Alright."

Chu Feng quickly did as he was told.

There weren't many items in Jiang Kongping's Cosmos Sack, filled with mostly unusually flashy and revealing clothes intended for men. However, there was an ordinary-looking wooden box that contained three pills.

## **Martial God Asura #Chapter 5070: Why Are You Helping Me? - Read Martial God Asura Chapter 5070: Why Are You Helping Me?**

Chapter 5070: Why Are You Helping Me?

These three pills were around the size of a fingernail, and they were colored white, gray, and blue.

"Master, is this the forbidden medicine you mentioned?"

Chu Feng was able to tell right away that this was a particularly potent forbidden medicine.

“What formidable forbidden medicine this is! These should be the ones Jiang Yuantai secretly used in the earlier duel. Junior Chu Feng, your master is truly knowledgeable.”

The Lady of Dao Sea and the Godwish Grandmother began seeing the Ox-nosed Old Daoist in a different light. They were both proud people who didn't think much of the Ox-nosed Old Daoist at the start, only showing him respect in view that he was Chu Feng's master.

However, it was becoming clear that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was much more knowledgeable than them. The things that he said might appear to be nothing at first glance, but they were actually all secrets of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect. The fact that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist knew of them showed that he was no ordinary world spiritist.

“Elder, release the isolation barrier and allow me to speak with Sima Xiangtu. I'll head out and fight with Jiang Yuantai again,” Chu Feng said.

“It's futile. He won't let us go even if you defeat him,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

“Master, I still wish to give it a try. Even if my chances are slim, this is the only hope we have,” Chu Feng said.

He wasn't oblivious to the fact that Jiang Yuantai could renege on his promise, but there was no other way out here.

“You'll be better off finding a way to escape from here than to pick meaningless fights. We can all be saved if you're able to find a powerful helper. Otherwise, you should at least survive and exact vengeance for us in the future,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

“Helper? The only ones I can think of are the Holy Valley and the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect,” Chu Feng replied.

“The Hidden Dragon Martial Sect? Did you manage to enter the sect? But I haven't told you its location yet,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist asked in bewilderment.

“Master, weren't you the one who got your friend to write a letter so as to inform me the location of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect?” Chu Feng asked.



“My friend? Which friend?” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist asked.

“Of course it’s the master of Zhang Yingxiong!” Chu Feng replied.

“Who is Zhang Yingxiong?” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist asked.

“Master, you don’t know them?”

Chu Feng’s eyes widened as realization finally struck him.

“No, I don’t know them, and I have never gotten anyone to write a letter to you,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

“This is weird. Are they helping me on their own accord? But why?”

Chu Feng fell into deep thoughts. He didn’t think that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist would joke about something like this, which meant that Zhang Yingxiong’s master had impersonated himself as the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s friend to relay the location of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect and the way to overcome the formation to him.

But why would they help a stranger like him?

“It seems like someone has borrowed my name to help you get into the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect?”

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist swiftly deduced what had happened.

“That seems to be the case, but I don’t know why they are helping me,” Chu Feng replied.

“We’ll know the answer once we meet them in the future, but we’ll have to first survive this ordeal. The Hidden Dragon Martial Sect wields great power. They might just be able to save us from this quandary if you’re able to secure their help. The question is whether they’ll be willing to help us,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

“I don’t know, but it doesn’t matter anyway since we’re all trapped here. We won’t even get a chance to ask them,” Chu Feng replied.

“Who says that there isn’t a chance? I don’t know about others, but you should be able to escape from here,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

“Me? Master, are you serious about that?”

Chu Feng was surprised to hear that. He had examined the confinement formation, and it was incredibly resilient as it utilized a treasure as its core.

The Lady of Dao Sea, the Godwish Grandmother, and the others also looked at the Ox-nosed Old Daoist in disbelief. They were also helpless toward the confinement formation, which was why the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s words sounded incredulous to them.

“Dig my heart out and I’ll show you a path. Follow the path into my soul, and you should be able to find a teleportation seal in there. Take it out,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

“Master, this...”

Chu Feng was reluctant to do such a thing to his master, but the Ox-nosed Old Daoist snapped at him.

“Stop dawdling around and quickly get to it. Are you going to wait till all of us die before you’re willing to make a move?” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist urged impatiently.

Upon hearing those words, Chu Feng stopped hesitating and immediately got to action. He dug out the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s heart and placed his hand on it. He couldn’t feel anything at the start, but as the Ox-nosed Old Daoist started to channel his spirit power, he soon saw a path in front of him.

He followed the path and successfully entered the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s soul. There was a teleportation seal in there, so he grabbed it and headed out.

“What a formidable teleportation seal this is. Is it crafted using a treasure?”

The eyes of the Godwish Grandmother and the Lady of Dao Sea lit up upon seeing the teleportation seal. They could tell that the teleportation seal harnessed great teleportation energy.

“It looks like you have an eye for the good stuff. Indeed, this teleportation seal was made out of a treasure. I placed this teleportation seal inside me before confronting Sima Xiangtu just in case I got overpowered, but I underestimated him and ended up becoming his captive.

“I’d have escaped with the teleportation seal if I could, but this confinement formation around us prevents me from doing so. However, Chu Feng, it might just work for you since you’re a junior and possess great willpower.”

After saying those words, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist turned to Wang Yuxian and Princess Xiaoxiao and continued on, “Lasses, I know that I’m being biased here, but to be frank, this teleportation seal is unlikely to work for the both of you. You’ll need a sufficiently powerful mind to forcefully escape from this confinement formation, or else your mind might end up getting crushed even if your body is successfully teleported out of here. That’s why I’m entrusting this opportunity to my disciple.”

“Elder, you don’t need to explain to us,” Wang Yuxian and Princess Xiaoxiao said.

Chu Feng began examining the teleportation seal in order to determine the feasibility of escaping from the confinement formation with it.

“It does seem plausible, but what if Sima Xiangtu goes after you after I escape from the confinement formation?” Chu Feng asked.

He was delighted to find a possible way out of this situation, but at the same time, he was worried that Sima Xiangtu might take it out on the Ox-nosed Old Daoist and the others upon realizing that he had escaped.

“You don’t have to bother about that. We’re already in a bad position as it is. You can at least be assured that he won’t kill us until he begins forging his pill. Remember, you should only return to save us if you’re able to find powerful helpers. Otherwise, don’t bother.

“It’s never too late for a man to exact vengeance. You can wait till your cultivation reaches greater height before avenging us. That would be much better than all of us getting wiped out. You should hurry up and go now before Sima Xiangtu notices anything,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

“Chu Feng, you should go now. Listen to your master,” the Godwish Grandmother urged as well.

“Master, elders, and Lele, wait here for me. I’ll definitely bring reinforcement in!”

Chu Feng bowed to the crowd before activating the teleportation seal. His surroundings warped, and he was brought directly into a teleportation passageway. When he finally exited through the other end of the teleportation formation, he was no longer in the Nine Souls Sacred Clan.

It just so happened that there was an ancient teleportation formation located not just too far away from him. Without any hesitation, he took out a token and stepped into it.

It was the token that Duan Liufeng had given him before he left the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. No matter where he was, as long as he entered a teleportation formation with this token activated, he would be brought directly to the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect.

The only ones who could save them now were the Holy Valley and the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect.

Shengguang Baimei and the others had already returned to the Holy Valley to request help. If the Holy Monarch was willing to intervene in this matter, they would head to the Nine Souls Sacred Clan on their own accord.

Thus, Chu Feng decided to head to the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect instead!

#### Chapter 5071: It's Useless Even If You Kneel and Beg Me

One of the sleeping chambers of Jiang Kongping's palace was reserved for Jiang Yuantai's use. This was under the request of Jiang Yuantai. He wanted to supervise Jiang Kongping's cultivation, which was why he insisted on staying with the latter.

A recovery formation was constructed within Jiang Yuantai's sleeping chamber in order to heal his soul and lessen his pain. To strengthen the formation, Jiang Yuantai even tossed a bunch of precious herbs and holy water in, making it incredibly potent.

Even so, Jiang Yuantai was hardly in a good condition at all. His face was pale and his lips were dry. His closed eyes were quivering ever so slightly, indicating that he was going through great pain.

Jiang Kongping wasn't surprised by the sight at all. He knew that Jiang Yuantai had consumed two forbidden pills in order to raise his fighting

prowess during his fight with Chu Feng, so he was bound to suffer some backlash.

To be fair, the backlash he was going through was already considered light compared to the other forbidden medicine out there.

“Kongping, why did you plead for mercy on Chu Feng’s behalf?” Jiang Yuantai suddenly opened his eyes and asked Jiang Kongping.

His tone was calm but carried a hint of reproach.

“Big brother, if you look at things from Chu Feng’s perspective, he has done no wrong. He was willing to brave death for the sake of his friends. Cultivators like him are rare to come by. To be honest, I admire him greatly,” Jiang Kongping replied with a fearful smile.

He was afraid of his older brother.

“You’re admiring the enemy? How can you be this foolish?!” Jiang Yuantai bellowed furiously.

Jiang Kongping could only awkwardly smile back in response.

“Young master Yuantai, Sima Xiangtai seeks an audience!” a voice suddenly echoed from outside.

“Kongping, go and meet him,” Jiang Yuantai said.

He didn’t want Sima Xiangtu to see the state he was in. Knowing that, Jiang Kongping opened the door and headed out. However, he soon returned with a nervous look on his face.

“What’s wrong, Kongping?”

Sensing that something was amiss, Jiang Yuantai immediately shot to his feet.

“Big brother, I... I think I have made a huge mistake,” Jiang Kongping replied.

“Calm down, Kongping. Tell me what happened,” Jiang Yuantai said.

“It’s Chu Feng. Sima Xiangtu said that he had just entered his confinement formation earlier upon noticing a barrier there, but to his astonishment, Chu

Feng wasn't there. It seems like he has managed to escape from the confinement formation somehow," Jiang Kongping reported honestly.

"Is that all? I was still wondering what could put you in such a fluster," Jiang Yuantai replied with a cold sneer before sitting back down.

"Kongping, it's just a mere Chu Feng. What are you so worried about?" Jiang Yuantai asked.

"Big brother, didn't the prophecy say that Chu Feng would put a halt to our ambitions? Is there a chance that he might return to save the others?" Jiang Kongping asked worriedly.

"Hahaha!"

Jiang Yuantai burst into hearty laughter. He laughed for a very long while before finally replying, "Kongping, I concede that Chu Feng is indeed a prodigy, but he's far too weak right now. If I had used my full strength, I could have easily crushed him as if I was crushing an ant. If he knows what's better for him, he'd keep his distance. Otherwise, I'll make him suffer a fate worse than death!"

Jiang Kongping was nervous only because he was afraid that Jiang Yuantai would berate him. After all, Jiang Yuantai would have killed Chu Feng off if not for him pleading for the latter's mercy.

But since Jiang Yuantai thought nothing of it, his heart was put at ease.

Jiang Kongping also thought that Chu Feng would be unable to do much due to the limitations of his cultivation. With Sima Xiangtu's puppet army and the experts of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect gathered here, it was impossible for Chu Feng to turn the tables on them.

It was impossible for the prophecy to be realized.

Jiang Kongping gazed into the distance and murmured under his breath, "Don't come back, Chu Feng."

He earnestly admired Chu Feng and didn't want the latter to die in his older brother's hands.

...

Many days later...

Three people were gathered in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect's Sectmaster Hall. They were the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect's sectmaster, Hidden Dragon Chief Elder Duan Liufeng, and Chu Feng.

Zi Ling was still in closed-door training, so she was unaware of Chu Feng's return. Fortunately, the person whom Chu Feng wanted to meet the most was still in the sect.

He had already told the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect's sectmaster about everything that had happened and was now waiting alongside Duan Liufeng for the sectmaster's verdict. Her decision would determine the fate of his master, the Godwish Grandmother, and the many cultivators of the Nine Souls Galaxy.

"Are you done yet?" the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect's sectmaster asked with her back against Chu Feng.

"Lord Sectmaster, I don't know what your current cultivation level is, but the Pill Dao Immortal Sect and Sima Xiangtu are indeed difficult enemies..."

Chu Feng was about to continue elaborating when the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect's sectmaster suddenly cut in.

"Who told you that I can't deal with them?" the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect's sectmaster asked.

Chu Feng was delighted to hear those words. He didn't know how powerful the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect's sectmaster was, only that she was unfathomably strong. Unfortunately, those from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect and Sima Xiangtu's puppet army were formidable as well, such that he wasn't sure whether the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect's sectmaster would be able to curb them.

Chu Feng was delighted to hear those words since it showed that the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect's sectmaster was confident of dealing with them. However, the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect's sectmaster suddenly turned around and looked at him with chilling eyes that froze his smile.

“Chu Feng, have I been too lenient to you? As a disciple of the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect, you have neither focused on your cultivation nor made any contributions to the sect. Instead, you spent your time wandering all over the place. You should be glad that I haven’t removed your title as a Hidden Dragon Disciple! It’s one thing for you to get into trouble, but now you’re dreaming of bringing me in as well?” the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect’s sectmaster bellowed.

She looked truly angered.

Chu Feng fell to his knees and pleaded, “Lord Sectmaster, I know that it’s inappropriate of me to ask you of such a request. It’s selfish motives at heart that I’m asking for this favor, but there’s really nothing else I can do to help anymore. I beseech you to help me. I’m willing to do anything for you in return, even if it means having to stay in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect for the rest of my life!”

Chu Feng kowtowed deeply to the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect’s sectmaster. It was rare for him to act so subserviently, but he had no other choice here. He wouldn’t want to pathetically beg another person in such a manner either, but with the safety of the Ox-nosed Old Daoist and the others at stake, he had no choice but to do so.

Chapter 5072: Yaoyao Has a Way Out

“What use do I have for you to stay in the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect for the rest of your life? Are you saying that our Hidden Dragon Martial Sect can’t survive without you? Scram! I won’t help you. Not only so, but I also won’t allow anyone from the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect to help you.”

The Hidden Dragon Martial Sect’s sectmaster flung her sleeves and left the area.

“Chu Feng, hurry up and get up.”

Duan Liufeng rushed forward to support Chu Feng to his feet. He felt sympathetic for Chu Feng because he didn’t think that the latter had done anything wrong. He could imagine just how stressed Chu Feng must be feeling right now.

“I’ll try to persuade the sectmaster for you.”



After saying those words, Duan Liufeng rose into the air with the intention to chase the sectmaster, but before he left, he shot a glance at Chu Feng.

“Wait here for me. Don’t leave this place till I return,” Duan Liufeng said.

He was worried that Chu Feng would return to the Nine Souls Sacred Clan all alone. Such an act would have been no different from committing suicide.

Chu Feng heeded Duan Liufeng’s order and stood still on the spot. He was upset and helpless, but most of all, he felt a strong hatred. It wasn’t directed at the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect’s sectmaster but himself. He blamed his own powerlessness.

If only he was strong enough, he would have been able to master his master and friends.

“Daddy!” an adorable voice suddenly echoed in the empty hall.

Chu Feng glanced over, and a faint smile formed on his lips despite all of the negative emotions bubbling inside him. It was Yaoyao.

She had entered the hall at some point in time and was currently hiding behind a pillar, peeking at Chu Feng from afar. She wasn’t as boisterous as she usually was, seemingly in a low mood. She was feeling sorry for Chu Feng.

“Yaoyao, when did you come in? I didn’t notice you,” Chu Feng asked.

“Grandma Sectmaster gave me a treasure to conceal my aura. That’s why you couldn’t find me.”

Yaoyao shook her wrist, revealing a silver bangle. It was a world spiritist treasure.

“Come, let daddy hug you.”

Chu Feng opened his arms wide and beckoned Yaoyao over.

Yaoyao finally revealed a sweet smile and leaped straight into Chu Feng’s arms.

“How have you been? Are you getting used to this place?” Chu Feng asked concernedly.

“Not at all.”

Yaoyao shook her head.

“Oh? Do the people here not treat you as well as big sister Lele and the others?” Chu Feng asked.

Yaoyao shook her head yet again.

“Actually, I didn’t want to stay with big sister Lele and grandma. I want to be with daddy,” Yaoyao replied.

“Silly lass. There are things I have to do, so I can’t bring you with me. Stay here obediently, alright? I’ll visit you often,” Chu Feng replied.

“Alright~”

Upon hearing that Chu Feng would visit her often, her downcast face immediately lit up with a brilliant smile. Just like any innocent child, her mood changed very quickly.

She looked at Chu Feng with her blinking large eyes.

“Daddy, did big sister Lele and grandma meet with baddies?” Yaoyao asked.

Clearly, she had overheard Chu Feng’s earlier conversation with the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect’s sectmaster. Chu Feng smiled at her, not wanting to share the distressful news with her.

However, before he could say a word, Yaoayo suddenly said, “Daddy, bring me with you. I can help you.”

“Our Yaoyao is still a child. What you have to do is to grow up healthy and strong,” Chu Feng replied.

“Daddy, don’t look down on me. Have you forgotten where you have found me?” Yaoyao harrumphed.

“Yaoyao, you still remember that?” Chu Feng replied in surprise.

It was bewildering as Yaoyao shouldn’t have had memories of that. She wasn’t even born then.

“I remember things before meeting daddy too. Daddy, there’s no need to be afraid. The Asura World Spirit Army can deal with those baddies, and I can control the Asura World Spirit Army!” Yaoyao said with a gleeful smile as she swung her little clenched fists.

“Yaoyao, Is what you’re saying true?”

Chu Feng was astonished to hear those words. There was no way he would forget where Yaoyao was from.

Back then, the Wretched Black Demon had asked Chu Feng for a favor, requesting that he disguised himself as an Asura Evil Spirit, sneak into the Asura Graveyard, and steal an item. The Asura Graveyard was a place where innumerable powerful evil spirits were imprisoned.

These Asura Evil Spirits called themselves the Asura World Spirit Army, and they were under the command of the powerful Asura King.

Upon sneaking into the Asura Graveyard, Chu Feng received help from an Asura Evil Spirit named Lord Yunliang and successfully stole the item. The item was none other than Yaoyao.

The Asura Evil Spirits seemed to put great importance on the unborn Yaoyao, but Chu Feng wasn’t certain of the reason why. He simply thought that Yaoyao was just a powerful demonic being. He had tried asking the Wretched Black Demon why he wanted to steal this item, but the latter didn’t answer his question. Instead, he tried to eliminate Chu Feng.

Fortunately, Chu Feng was prepared for it and successfully escaped from the area. Following that, he took Wang Yuxian back to the Dao Sea.

It was also around then that the item gave birth to Yaoyao.

From the start to the end, Chu Feng wasn’t able to figure out the secret of the Asura Evil Spirits. Yet, Yaoyao actually said that she possessed memories of her time in the Asura Graveyard, which meant that there was a good chance that she knew of their secret.

Most important of all, Yaoyao mentioned that she was able to control those Asura Evil Spirits!

Chu Feng had met those Asura Evil Spirits in person, and most of them were at pinnacle Martial Exalted level. Those who were of higher standing were even more unfathomably powerful, especially the Asura King. The pressure he felt from the Asura King was on a completely different level from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect's Jiang Taibai.

Back then, Chu Feng thought that the Nine Souls Galaxy would be doomed if those Asura Evil Spirits escaped from the Asura Graveyard, but now that he thought about it...

If Yaoyao could command those Asura Evil Spirits, they would be able to resolve the current crisis of the Nine Souls Galaxy too!

Shoosh!

Chu Feng immediately left the hall together with Yaoyao in his arms. He was afraid that the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect's sectmaster wouldn't allow him to leave with Yaoyao once she learned of the matter, so he decided to make a move right away.

Once he was finally a safe distance away, he set up multiple layers of formations before finally turning his attention to Yaoyao once more.

Chapter 5073: Entering the Asura Graveyard Once More

"Yaoyao, are you really able to control those Asura Evil Spirits? Can you tell me what you know?" Chu Feng asked.

He wanted to first clarify the situation before diving into it.

"Of course. I wouldn't tell anyone else but daddy!"

Yaoyao quickly recounted what she knew.

She wasn't too sure about how she came about, and her memories traced back to a time before Chu Feng entered the Asura Graveyard. She said that the Asura Evil Spirits identified themselves as the Asura World Spirit Army, and they were currently trapped inside the Asura Graveyard.

They had created Yaoyao with the intent to free themselves from the Asura Graveyard, and their plan was a success. Yaoyao had the power to free them and control the Asura World Spirit Army.

In fact, the ritual they had conducted back then around Yaoyao was to free them from the Asura Graveyard. That was why they shouted: Once we destroy all obstacles in our way, we shall dye the blue sky red with blood!

They had simply been trapped and suppressed for far too long.

Who could have thought that Chu Feng would steal Yaoyao from the Asura Graveyard before the ritual started? It could be said that Chu Feng had ruined their plan.

“But why did Lord Yunliang help the Wretched Black Demon?” Chu Feng asked.

He sensed that Lord Yunliang was a good person, so he likely had his own reason for betraying the Asura Evil Spirits.

“Ahh... I don’t know either. Daddy, you should take me to the Asura Graveyard. As long as I’m here, they won’t dare to hurt you!” Yaoyao said.

“Who could have thought that I would end up getting saved by my daughter?”

Chu Feng patted Yaoyao’s little head as ravenous joy burst from his heart. He took Yaoyao to the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect’s teleportation formation and made his way toward the Nine Souls Galaxy’s Asura Graveyard.

Oblivious to Chu Feng, a person suddenly appeared right in front of the teleportation formation just a moment after the two of them stepped into it. It was the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect’s sectmaster.

She eyed the teleportation formation before heading back to her palace. Along the way, she encountered Duan Liufeng.

“Lord Sectmaster, please reconsider this matter. I know that you have a high opinion of Chu Feng, and...”

Before Duan Liufeng could finish his words, the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect’s sectmaster raised his hand, indicating for him to stop talking.

“Your younger brother Chu Feng has already left the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect. He’ll be safe,” the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect’s sectmaster said.

A smile broke out on Duan Liufeng's face upon hearing those words. He thought that the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect's sectmaster was going to help Chu Feng.

"Lord Sectmaster, I knew that you wouldn't leave Chu Feng to the lurch!"

However, the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect's sectmaster shook her head.

"He doesn't need my help."

"Ah?"

Duan Liufeng was taken aback by those words. Before he could react, the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect's sectmaster had already vanished from sight, leaving just a couple of words in her wake.

"You won't be able to help Chu Feng. Focus on your own affairs instead."

...

After traveling for a while, Chu Feng and Yaoyao finally arrived at the Graveyard Realm.

The Asura Graveyard also happened to be the Wretched Black Demon's territory, so the two of them had made sure to conceal themselves through a formation. Fortunately, they were able to get to the entrance of the Asura Graveyard without alerting anyone.

Just like before, the Asura Graveyard exerted tremendous pressure on Chu Feng. He felt both anticipation and fear. He never thought a day would come where the Asura Evil Spirits inside the Asura Graveyard would become his saviors.

"Yaoyao, will they really listen to you?" Chu Feng asked once more. **no1ε-7b.In**

He knew just how terrifying and powerful those Asura Evil Spirits were. There was no turning back once they entered the Asura Graveyard, so he sought another confirmation from Yaoyao.

"Just like how daddy protects me, I'll protect you in the Asura Graveyard!" Yaoyao nodded confidently.

She looked particularly adorable when she said those words.

“Alright, let’s head in then.”

Chu Feng dispelled his concealment formation and leaped down the entrance of the Asura Graveyard together with Yaoyao. They passed through several powerful barriers along the way, but these barriers didn’t stop their path since they were intended to keep those Asura Evil Spirits from escaping.

Just like that, he successfully entered the Asura Graveyard.

“Intruders!”

But barely after he entered the area, he encountered a group of towering Asura Evil Spirits. They were armored and armed, and the aura they were emanating indicated that they were at least at rank six Martial Exalted level.

There were initially only a hundred of them, but with a mere shout, another thousand immediately rushed to the scene. To make things worse, more and more of them were heading in their direction, and the pressure they exerted increased correspondingly.

The Asura Evil Spirits who encircled them at the start were only at rank six Martial Exalted level, but the reinforcements had plenty who were at pinnacle Martial Exalted level. Furthermore, their dress-up indicated that they were only footsoldiers.

It was likely that those who held leadership positions amongst the Asura Evil Spirits were at Half-God level at the very least.

“Intruders? Who are you saying are intruders?” Yaoyao said with a displeased tone.

She emanated a black aura as she spoke. It was asura power.

“This!!!”

Chu Feng and the surrounding Asura Evil Spirits were stunned upon sensing the asura power.

Yaoyao’s cultivation was still low, but the asura power she summoned was extraordinarily powerful. It exerted a natural pressure on the Asura Evil Spirits

present, compelling their obedience. This made them realize that Yaoyao was not just anyone.

“Call your Asura King here. Tell him that the person who can bring you out of the Asura Graveyard has arrived!” Yaoyao said.

Despite being a child, her attitude was extremely haughty. She behaved as if she was truly the master of these Asura Evil Spirits.

The Asura Evil Spirits were doubtful of Yaoyao’s words, but they didn’t dare to make a move on her out of apprehension of her powerful asura power. Some of the Asura Evil Spirits quickly headed off to inform their leaders of the current happenings.

#### Chapter 5074: The Significance of the Three Plaques

It didn’t take long for an army of ten thousand Asura Evil Spirits to arrive from the sky. Each of them commanded a powerful aura that was far superior to the guards surrounding Chu Feng.

The one leading the group was riding on a gigantic beast morphed out of an Asura Evil Spirit. The aura he emanated was grand and imposing.

The moment he appeared, all of the Asura Evil Spirits in the vicinity fell to their knees and kowtowed to him.

Chu Feng recognized the man. He was the master of these Asura Evil Spirits, the Asura King!

“Back down.”

At the Asura King’s command, the Asura Evil Spirits immediately retreated. The Asura King continued to assess Yaoyao from his gigantic beast, and his sharp eyes slowly mellowed down. A smile emerged on his icy face.

His silhouette suddenly blurred, and he appeared in front of Yaoyao the next instant.

“Brightmoon, it’s you! My good daughter, you’ve come back to find me!”

He carried Yaoyao up with adoration in his eyes. His words caught Chu Feng by surprise.



Yaoyao is his daughter?

“Who are you calling Brightmoon? That name sounds horrendous. Call me Yaoyao instead.”

However, Yaoyao expressed her contempt toward the name. She pushed the Asura King away and leaped out from his arms before returning to Chu Feng’s side.

“Who are you?”

Seeing this, the Asura King turned his sight toward Chu Feng. n/.Ove**ll**In

Boom!

Just a mere look from the Asura King made Chu Feng feel as if his soul was going to explode. Even breathing became incredibly laborious to him, to the point that he thought that he was going to lose his life.

The Asura King was far stronger than he had expected!

“You can’t hurt him! He’s my daddy. If you dare hurt him, I’ll kill myself right now and make it impossible for you to leave the Asura Graveyard!”

Yaoyao noticed the pressure Chu Feng was under, so she hurled her fist at the Asura King and shouted.

“Daddy? Brightmoon, what are you saying? I’m your father!”

The Asura King shot a furious glare at Chu Feng.

“You are the one who kidnapped my Brightmoon and deceived her!”

Rage blazed in the Asura King’s eyes. He was intending to murder Chu Feng.

“He didn’t deceive me. I remember everything. I know that you’re my blood-related father, but you sacrificed me and my mother for your so-called ambitions. I don’t recognize you as my daddy. I only have one daddy, and he’s Chu Feng!

“If not for him, I wouldn’t have returned to this horrible place!” Yaoyao said indignantly.

It seemed like she was reminded of her painful memories. Tears began brimming in her eyes.

Seeing that, Chu Feng quickly pulled her into his embrace. He realized that Yaoyao did know her own origin, just that it was too painful that she didn't want to speak of it.

“Brightmoon, you... remember everything?”

Guilt appeared on the face of the Asura King. That confirmed Chu Feng's suspicion that the Asura King had done something horrible to Yaoyao. Yaoyao thought that she was nothing but a sacrificial lamb to the Asura King, and that made her reluctant to help the Asura Evil Spirits.

She was thankful to Chu Feng when he took her away from this place, which was why she would rather recognize Chu Feng as her father than acknowledge the Asura King.

If not for Chu Feng meeting with trouble, she would have never returned to this place.

“I'll say it one last time. I'm Yaoyao, not Brightmoon! Stop calling me by that awful name! I don't like it!” Yaoyao hollered.

Her rage was fully conveyed despite her childlike voice.

“Alright alright, Yaoyao. I'll call you Yaoyao since that's the name you like. Yaoyao, I know that I'm not a qualified father. Your mother is also... Haa...”

“Yaoyao, you have to know that I'm doing this for the sake of our Asura World Spirit Army. I hope that you can understand that I have no choice either,” the Asura King said.

“You don't have to say anything. I know what I have to do. I came back to help you leave this place. However, I have a condition. You have to help my father take care of a group of baddies once you leave this place!” Yaoyao said.

“Baddies? Who are you referring to?” the Asura King asked.

“Allow me to fill you in on the details,” Chu Feng interjected.

He quickly told them about the crisis faced by the Nine Souls Galaxy.

“Hah! I was still wondering what it is. That’s a walk in the park for our Asura World Spirit Army!” the Asura King declared proudly.

“Let’s head over right now,” Yaoyao said, knowing that Chu Feng was in a rush.

The Asura King was conflicted to see how much Yaoyao cared for Chu Feng, but he did want to leave the Asura Graveyard as soon as possible. Thus, he issued an order informing the upper echelons of the Asura World Spirit Army to head to the Asura King Palace.

Once again, Chu Feng walked through the grand doors of the Asura King Palace. It still felt incredibly intimidating to him. As he proceeded deeper inside, he soon encountered three enormous floating plaques, each spanning over a hundred thousand meters.

The leftmost plaque was placed vertically and had the word ‘Hellfire’ written on it. The remaining part of the plaque was awkwardly empty, indicating that the plaque was incomplete. However, there was a bizarre black inferno blazing beneath the plaque, crackling terrifyingly with the roars of thousands of beasts.

No words were needed to describe how dangerous this inferno was. Even Chu Feng would be instantaneously turned to ashes if he fell in.

The rightmost plaque was also placed vertically and had the words ‘King’s Stand’ written on it. The remaining part of the plaque was awkwardly empty, indicating that it was incomplete too. Beneath the plaque was a humongous golden stand that was delicately inscribed with runes reminiscent of artwork. These runes were extremely profound that even Chu Feng couldn’t understand them.

In contrast to the terrifying black inferno, this humongous golden stand looked like a treasure from heaven. It was none other than the King’s Stand.

It was on this very King’s Stand that the Asura King, Lord Yunliang, and the experts of the Asura Evil Spirits had come together to construct a formation around Yaoyao back then.

The middle plaque was slightly peculiar compared to the other two beside it. It was placed horizontally, and there was not a single word written on it at all. However, there was a ten thousand meters tall tower beneath it, and at the tip

of the tower was a throne. This throne comprised countless coiling dragons, looking both beautiful and authoritative.

Compared to the golden stand on the right, this throne emanated an even more divine vibe.

However, this throne was split into two from the middle. It was composed of two different colors and materials. The left side was made out of the blazing black inferno whereas the right side gave off a golden shimmer. Clearly, it was a composite product of the black inferno and the golden stand.

Chu Feng thought that it was the Asura King's throne, but he couldn't understand why it was constructed here. He had also never seen the Asura King sitting on it before.

Back then, when he first saw the three plaques, as well as the black inferno, the imposing golden stand, and the sacred throne, he felt a jolt in his heart. The feeling of awe had hardly lessened even though he had become much stronger than before.

He was curious to know what the missing words on the three plaques were and what their absence meant.

#### Chapter 5075: Agitation

"That is..."

Chu Feng's eyes soon fell upon a miserable figure who was tied up and hanging from mid-air. That person was in a near-death state.

Astonishingly, it was none other than Lord Yunliang, who had helped Chu Feng take Yaoyao away from here back then.

Chu Feng thought that Lord Yunliang would have definitely lost his life for what he did, so it was a relief to see that he was still alive. However, Lord Yunliang was being put through cruel torture even though there was a breath left in him.

"Mllord, can you release Lord Yunliang?" Chu Feng turned to the Asura King and asked.

He knew that it was under the Asura King's command that Lord Yunliang was being punished. If he wished to save Lord Yunliang, he would have to first acquire the Asura King's agreement.

"He colluded with you back then to steal my Brightmoon. I'm only sparing you on the account of my Brightmoon, but Yunliang betrayed our clan despite being a member of our Asura World Spirit Army. What he has done is unforgivable."

The Asura King gritted his teeth in hatred when he spoke about the incident, making it clear that he had no intention of sparing Lord Yunliang.

"Listen to my daddy and release that old man!" Yaoyao suddenly interjected.

"Brightmoon?"

The Asura King looked at Yaoyao indignantly.

"What? You don't understand my words? Also, didn't I tell you to call me Yaoyao? I'm not Brightmoon!" Yaoyao shouted.

Yaoyao wasn't showing the slightest respect toward the Asura King at all even though she usually acted so obediently in front of Chu Feng. Yet, the Asura King was unable to do anything about it at all. As reluctant as he was, he still waved his sleeves and released Lord Yunliang.

Chu Feng quickly flew over and caught Lord Yunliang in his arms before proceeding to treat him. He quickly noticed that Lord Yunliang's cultivation had been crippled, making him no different from a mortal now.

It made him feel deeply apologetic, especially when he remembered how powerful Lord Yunliang used to be.

Under Chu Feng's treatment, Lord Yunliang quickly regained his consciousness.

"Chu... Feng? Why are you here? Am I dreaming?"

Lord Yunliang had been tortured for too long that his consciousness was all muddled him. He dared not believe what he was seeing was real when he saw Chu Feng.

“Lord Yunliang, this isn’t a dream. I’ve returned with your princess. You can leave this place now,” Chu Feng said.

“What? You brought her back? Are you out of your mind?!”

Despite being in a severely weakened state, Lord Yunliang was so agitated by Chu Feng’s words that he immediately reached out and grabbed Chu Feng’s collars.

“Old man, let go of my daddy!” Yaoyao ran over and berated Lord Yunliang.

Lord Yunliang looked at Yaoyao, and tears began brimming in his eyes. His face reflected his deep regret and self-reproach.

“Chu Feng, why did you turn your back on me? You sullied my loyalty to the Asura World Spirit Army. You trampled all over my determination!” Lord Yunliang cried out of sheer sorrow.

“Lord Yunliang, what do you mean?”

Chu Feng immediately noticed that something was amiss. He had thought that it was weird that Lord Yunliang would agree to help the Wretched Black Demon back then, and this showed that there was indeed more to the story.

Lord Yunliang must have his own reasons for betraying the Asura World Spirit Army.

Wu!

Lord Yunliang’s body abruptly fell limply to the ground. Chu Feng didn’t see how it happened, but he subconsciously glanced at the Asura King.

“That man is a traitor of our clan. There’s no need to listen to his words,” the Asura King said.

He then turned around to face the millions of Asura Evil Spirits that had gathered in the area. Every single one of them wielded incredible strength, and the sheer pressure they collectively exerted was incomparable.

Even the puppet army would have looked no different from an assembly of children before the Asura World Spirit Army. There was simply no comparing them.

Those standing at the forefront of the Asura Evil Spirits were all familiar faces to Chu Feng as they were the ones who were involved in Yaoyao's ritual back then. Their cultivation was still indiscernible to him despite the huge advancement in his cultivation.

However, he was certain that they were all at Half-God level at the very least, considering how their auras were far more intense than that of Jiang Taibai.

They looked at Yaoyao with fervent eyes filled with desire. Some of them also directed hateful and murderous gazes at Chu Feng.

Chu Feng had no doubt that these people would tear out his tendons and mince his flesh if not for Yaoyao protecting him.

"Lord Father, I heard that my younger sister has returned?"

A person suddenly stepped forth from the crowd. It was a young man dressed in grandiose robes. He appeared to be the son of the Asura King judging from how he addressed the latter, which made him the prince of the Asura World Spirit Army.

It was just surprising to Chu Feng that the Asura King would have such a young son despite his old age.

"Brightsun, I know that you were in closed-door training, but your younger sister has come back. She will take us out of this place, but she'll need your help for that," the Asura King said.

"Lord Father, I know where my responsibilities lie," Prince Brightsun replied with a nod.

He made his way over to Chu Feng and Yaoyao's side and said, "Younger sister, welcome back."

"Who's your younger sister?" Yaoyao replied in irritation.

Then, she turned to the Asura King and impatiently asked, "Can we start now?"

"Brightmoon, I won't be able to help you with this. Your older brother will be able to lend you a helping hand, but you're still the crux to this. You'll be the

one who decides whether our Asura World Spirit Army will be able to see the light of the day or not,” the Asura King said.

“I know what I have to do, but you need to fulfill your promise too! Otherwise... Hmph!”

Yaoyao shook her little fists menacingly.

“I’ll fulfill the end of my promise,” the Asura King promised.

Yaoyao leaped onto the King’s Stand upon hearing the Asura King’s promise.

Prince Brightsun quickly did the same too and took his position behind Yaoyao. He intertwined his fingers and began releasing a huge outpour of spirit power. His spirit power twinkled with bits of light, which turned out to be runes upon close inspection. Clearly, Yaoyao wasn’t the only special one here.

His spirit power swiftly wrapped itself around Yaoyao, but Yaoyao ignored him. Instead, she took out a knife and slit her own arm. Then, she squatted down and placed her palm on the King’s Stand.

Blood flowed down her arm and onto the King’s Stand, inducing an immediate reaction.

Boom! n/.o//v./e--l-)b-.l((n

The entire Asura King Palace began to tremor.

As more of Yaoyao’s blood trickled down, runes started to cover the King’s Stand.

The Asura Evil Spirits were excited to witness this sight. After all, they were finally going to be freed from this prison.

Chu Feng could sense their anticipation too, but it still bothered him how Lord Yunliang was unwilling to allow the Asura Evil Spirits to leave this place. Was it because the Asura Evil Spirits would slaughter the innocents after escaping from the Asura Graveyard, or was there some other reason?

As much as Chu Feng needed the help of the Asura Evil Spirits, he was unable to turn his attention away from this question.



Shoosh!

A shocking sight suddenly occurred.

Prince Brightsun suddenly thrust his palm forward to shove Yaoyao, pushing her toward the black inferno with tremendous force. That would have indubitably spelled her death.

Chu Feng widened his eyes in shock. He tried to grab Yaoyao with his spirit power, but it was to no avail. He could only watch helplessly as Yaoyao fell toward the black inferno.

Without any hesitation, he dived into the black inferno to chase after Yaoyao.

Chapter 5076: The Conferred King

“Brightsun, what are you doing?!”

The Asura King and the other Asura Evil Spirits were so immersed in their joy and excitement of escaping from this place that it took them a while to register Prince Brightsun’s action. However, it was already too late. Chu Feng and Yaoyao had already fallen into the terrifying hellfire.

Enraged, the Asura King immediately flew over to the King’s Stand and grabbed Prince Brightsun.

“Lord Father, can’t you see? Your daughter has already become Chu Feng’s lackey. She only recognizes Chu Feng! If she successfully gains control over our Asura World Spirit Army, we’ll just become the lackeys of another!” Prince Brightsun exclaimed.

“What are you saying? She’s your younger sister! She’s our hope out of here!”

The infuriated Asura King raised his palm up high. If this palm were to fall, Prince Brightsun would die without a sliver of doubt.

“Milord, look!”

The leaders of the Asura Evil Spirits quickly rushed toward the King’s Stand too. At their exclamation, the Asura King quickly lowered his gaze onto the King’s Stand and realized that the ritual was still ongoing despite Yaoyao’s disappearance.

Yaoyao's blood was proliferating by itself and slowly cloaking the King's Stand.

"Just a single droplet of blood was enough? Our Asura World Spirit Army is saved!"

Overjoyed by that sight, the Asura King tossed Prince Brightsun away.

The Asura Evil Spirits turned their focus back to the King's Stand with anticipation on their faces. There was not a single one of them who felt upset by Yaoyao's death as if the sole purpose of her existence was to activate the King's Stand.

Finally, the King's Stand was completely covered in Yaoyao's blood.

The King's Stand began to glow with divine light, but the light only lasted for a short moment before dissipating. At the same time, the blood also started to dry up.

Everything was reverting back to normal. The ritual had failed.

"Milord, what's going on?" the Asura Evil Spirits asked the Asura King.

The Asura King stared at the King's Stand without saying a word. The look of despair on his face was enough to tell the others this wasn't the outcome they were wishing for.

"Hahaha!"

A weak but joyful laugh suddenly echoed in the Asura King Palace. It was from Lord Yunliang. He had awoken at some point in time and had witnessed everything that had happened.

"I told you that our master has to be an Asura World Spiritist and not one of our own. The only one who can lead us out of here is a great Asura World Spiritist, not an Asura World Spirit! You didn't believe me and even resorted to all sorts of underhanded tricks. But where did it get us?"

"There are indeed traitors among us, but it isn't me but the rest of you. You are all traitors who have turned your back on Lord Massacre!" Lord Yunliang sneered.

All of the Asura Evil Spirits were too despaired to pay any heed to Lord Yunliang.

Weng!

“It looks like you’re doomed to be trapped here. However, it matters not. My master will bring me to the peak of this world of cultivation. Farewell, Lord Father. I’ll surpass you.”

Prince Brightsun suddenly smiled as if this was what he had hoped to happen. He took out a teleportation talisman and crushed it, invoking a teleportation formation around him. With a burst of light, he vanished into thin air.

“Milord, that’s the means of a world spiritist! Prince Brightsun has connections with world spiritists?” the Asura Evil Spirits asked in astonishment.

However, the Asura King was in no mood to answer them.

Putong!

The Asura King fell to his knees, having lost all of his motivation. Tears began streaming from his eyes. The powerful and lofty Asura King had actually started crying!

The Asura Evil Spirits were shocked. This was the first time in tens of thousands of years that they had witnessed such a show of weakness from the Asura King.

“Lord Massacre, it was not my intention to betray you. Tens of thousands of years have already passed, but the world spiritist you spoke of never arrived. We didn’t turn our backs on you. You were the one who deceived and abandoned us first. Even if we were useless to you, you shouldn’t have kept us imprisoned here. Is it our fault for wanting to be free? We were so loyal to you, so why must you treat us so?!”

The Asura King wailed indignantly.

The other powerful Asura Evil Spirits also started sobbing as they were reminded of their sorrowful past. Even Lord Yunliang had tears in his eyes.

Boom boom boom!

The Asura King Palace suddenly started trembling, prompting the Asura Evil Spirits to quickly snap out of their sorrow and scan the surroundings vigilantly.

All phenomena should have already come to a halt now that the ritual had failed.

“Milord, what’s going on?”

Perplexed by the situation, the Asura Evil Spirits turned their sights toward the Asura King, only to notice the latter Asura King staring intently at the hellfire. It was only then that they realized that the hellfire was blazing much more fervently than before.

They quickly glanced at the King’s Stand and the throne, but neither of them were reacting. Clearly, the cause of the trembling was the hellfire.

It was baffling since the hellfire was potent enough to turn any of them into ashes within moments. It was something to be feared. Yet, the hellfire was suddenly reacting at this moment. Was this a sign that Lord Massacre was going to punish them for their disloyalty?

That realization sent the Asura Evil Spirits into a state of panic, including the stronger ones too.

Boom!

A bundle of hellfire suddenly rose into the air and flew straight for the throne, enveloping it whole. It flowed down the throne like lava, revealing two silhouettes hidden within.

They were Chu Feng and Yaoyao!

Chu Feng happened to be sitting on the throne whereas Yaoyao was held in his arms. They were both safe and unharmed.

However, there was a massive change in Chu Feng’s body. He was shrouded in a layer of black gaseous flames, and his eyes were glowing with a black luster. Even his disposition was completely different from before.

The current him felt more like a demon king than a human!

The black gaseous flames shrouding him was asura power, but it was no ordinary asura power. It harnessed incredible purity that compelled deference from all of the Asura Evil Spirits present, including the Asura King.

“How did this happen?”

The Asura King and the other Asura Evil Spirits stared at the sight before them in shock, not understanding how this could have happened. It was incomprehensible to them how Chu Feng and Yaoyao could have escaped from the hellfire.

But what was even baffling to them was how Chu Feng was emanating an aura that commanded their deference.

It was as if Chu Feng was their master.

“Milord, look! W-w-what’s that?”

One of the Asura Evil Spirits pointed to the plaques with a trembling finger. Astonishment filled his face, and his mouth was so wide open that one could stuff an egg into it.

The crowd quickly looked over, but what they saw left them with the exact same expression as him too, including the Asura King. They were shocked beyond words by what they had seen.

Words had started appearing in the empty parts of the three plaques, and their meaning jolted the hearts of every Asura Evil Spirit.

Written on the Hellfire Plaque was ‘The day when He rises from the flames’.

Written on the King’s Stand Plaque was ‘The leader of the Asuras shall be crowned’.

Words had also appeared on the empty plaque above the throne.

Hail your new king, Chu Feng!

Chapter 5077: Chaos in the Asura World Spirit Army

The day when He rises from the flames.

The leader of the Asuras shall be crowned.

Hail your new king, Chu Feng!

Looking at the words on those three plaques, followed by the imposing Chu Feng seated upon the throne, the Asura Evil Spirits were already able to figure out what was happening. However, this was simply too sudden that they couldn't come to terms with it right away.

It was unthinkable to them how a junior they had looked down upon and hated with a passion just a moment ago was going to become their master. Not to mention, the hellfire should have burned Chu Feng down to ashes, but how was he completely fine?

There were simply too many doubts in their minds.

“Chu Feng, it's... actually you?”

Lord Yunliang was the first to speak up in the silent Asura King Palace, but even so, his eyes showed his disbelief. He had been waiting all this while for the world spiritist whom Lord Massacre had told them about to lead them out of here, but he had never thought that the person would turn out to be Chu Feng.

This was completely at odds with what he had envisioned.

Meanwhile, Chu Feng had already gotten a rough understanding of the situation. It looked as if he and Yaoyao had only fallen into the hellfire for barely a minute, but there was actually a temporal formation embedded in it.

Within this short period of time, Chu Feng and Yaoyao had undergone over a month of trials together. It was through overcoming these trials that Chu Feng was able to earn the right to sit upon this throne.

Naturally, Chu Feng also learned about the origins of these Asura Evil Spirits too. They were the world spirits of the Heavenly King of Massacre. The Heavenly King of Massacre was a powerful cultivator who possessed a particularly formidable skill known as God's Contract.

Through God's Contract, the Heavenly King of Massacre was able to contract many powerful world spirits, creating a terrifying army. His army grew so large that he split his world spirits into multiple divisions.

He had seven divisions of Asura World Spirits in total, and the one that was left in the Asura Graveyard was the weakest of the seven. On the surface, it looked like they had been abandoned. One of the downsides of God's Contract was that it prevented the contracted world spirits from returning to the Spirit World, which meant that they were doomed to remain in the world of cultivation for their entire life.

As a result, they swiftly became evil spirits after they had been abandoned.

However, the truth was that the Heavenly King of Massacre hadn't truly abandoned them. He had left two ways out for the Asura Evil Spirits.

One was to wait for a qualified world spiritist to clear the trial he had left behind and establish a new contract with him. Through the world spiritist, they would be able to bypass the barriers around the Asura Graveyard and leave this prison.

However, if the Asura Evil Spirits refuse to recognize the world spiritist and contract with him, there was an alternative option. That was for them to abandon their ego as world spirits and exist in the world as evil spirits. As long as a sufficiently powerful evil spirit appeared amongst them, they could bring him up to the King's Stand to be judged for his qualification.

These two methods were recorded in a scroll left behind by the Heavenly King of Massacre. The first half recorded the trial for the world spiritist whereas the second half described the process of how the Asura Evil Spirits could elect a leader amongst them and determine his qualification.

Back then, Chu Feng had stolen it from the Asura King while the Asura Evil Spirits were busy conducting their ritual on the King's Stand, but for some reason, only the latter half remained. Chu Feng suspected that it was the Asura King's doing.

"Asura King, I'll ask you a question," Chu Feng gazed down on the Asura King and spoke.

Due to the effects of the black gaseous flame, his voice was much deeper than usual and his attitude was domineering.

Had it been in the past, the Asura King would have slapped Chu Feng into oblivion for daring to speak to him with such insolence. However, considering

the circumstances, he still decided to answer Chu Feng despite not acknowledging him.

“Go ahead,” he said.

“Why is the scroll left behind by the Heavenly King of Massacre incomplete?” Chu Feng asked.

“Chu Feng, allow me to answer the question instead,” Lord Yunliang spoke up.

“Lord Yunliang, please go ahead.”

Chu Feng’s attitude toward Lord Yunliang was much more respectful.

“The current Asura King isn’t the one who led us while we were still fighting alongside Lord Massacre. The one who first received the scroll from Lord Massacre is the First Asura King, but after Lord Massacre left, the First Asura King destroyed the first half of the scroll and handed the latter half to our current king.

“He told us that we have been abandoned by Lord Massacre, and that we can’t just rely on a world spiritist to save us. We have to depend on ourselves. He ordered us to become evil spirits and elect a new leader who would guide us to a new life.

“Shortly after that, our current king became the new Asura King. As for the First Asura King... he left this place tens of thousands of years ago,” Lord Yunliang said.

“In other words, you don’t know what the content of the top half of the scroll is?” Chu Feng asked.

“That’s indeed the case,” Lord Yunliang replied.

“But the First Asura King should be trapped inside the Asura Graveyard too, no? How did he leave this place?” Chu Feng asked.

“We don’t know either. Lord Massacre might have left him with some treasure that allowed him to escape from this place. Otherwise, it’s also possible that he possessed special means that we’re unaware of,” Lord Yunliang replied.

“That explained it all.”



Chu Feng nodded in realization.

In truth, the Heavenly King of Massacre had left plenty of clues outside the Asura Graveyard before he left, stating clearly that the Asura Evil Spirits inside the Asura Graveyard were waiting for a new master.

As long as a world spiritist was brave enough to step into the hellfire, take on the trial, and prove themselves qualified, they would be able to contract with the Asura Evil Spirits and become the master of an army of millions.

However, the clues outside the Asura Graveyard had vanished without a trace. That was likely to be the doing of the First Asura King. He might have felt betrayed by the Heavenly King of Massacre and no longer wanted anything to do with world spiritists. Otherwise, it was also possible that he might have other motives in mind.

In any case, there was no doubt that the First Asura King was the culprit behind the plight of the Asura Evil Spirits trapped in the Asura Graveyard.

“Lord Yunliang, what mistakes did the Asura Evil Spirits locked in the prison commit?” Chu Feng asked.

Back when he was rescuing Wang Yuxian from a prison in the Asura Graveyard, he noticed that there were many other Asura Evil Spirits who were locked up too. He couldn't help but wonder why the Asura World Spirit Army would lock up their own comrades.

“Even though the First Asura King told us to rely on ourselves, most of us are still fiercely loyal to Lord Massacre. There is a group of us who wants to follow Lord Massacre's instruction and wait for the arrival of the world spiritist. It's just that we have waited for tens of thousands of years to no avail.

“As a result, the incumbent Asura King decided to follow the instructions of the First Asura King and began searching for a leader who could lead us out of here. At the same time, he also started nurturing a powerful world spirit in case there was no one qualified amidst our ranks.

“Those who stood steadfast to Lord Massacre's instruction and refused to abide by the Asura King's directives were locked up,” Lord Yunliang explained.

“I see. Is that how Prince Brightsun and Yaoyao came about? Are the two of them born with the purpose of becoming the leader of the Asura World Spirit Army?” Chu Feng looked at the Asura King and asked.

“Yes, that’s indeed the case,” the Asura King replied.

“Did Prince Brightsun undergo the trial on the King’s Stand?” Chu Feng asked.

“He didn’t. The scroll stated that only a person who possesses superior talent will be able to become our leader. While Prince Brightsun is outstanding in his own rights, he doesn’t meet the required level of aptitude,” the Asura King explained.

“I understand.”

Chu Feng turned to Lord Yunliang and said, “Lord Yunliang, I’ll have to trouble you to free those Asura Evil Spirits who are imprisoned and bring them here.”

“Understood. I’ll get it done right away!” Lord Yunliang replied in delight.

“Wait a moment,” the Asura King suddenly interjected.

He first stopped Lord Yunliang before turning to look at Chu Feng.

“I don’t know how you received Lord Massacre’s recognition, but do you really think that you’re worthy of becoming our king?” the Asura King finally voiced out his thoughts.

#### Chapter 5078: I’ll Be Going Ahead

Many of the Asura Evil Spirits shared the same sentiments as the Asura King. Their previous master was the Heavenly King of Massacre, an expert who dominated the vast world of cultivation tens of thousands of years ago.

On the other hand, Chu Feng was a mere Martial Exalted level cultivator. Putting aside the Asura King, even a random guard present could have easily defeated Chu Feng. How could someone this weak be worthy to lead them?

Even Lord Yunliang could sense great pressure from the crowd. It was as if millions of ferocious lions were eyeing a small cub. Little had to be said about what Chu Feng was facing right now.

Afraid that Chu Feng wouldn't be able to withstand the pressure, Lord Yunliang stepped in and said, "Everyone, this is..."

"Lord Yunliang," Chu Feng suddenly interjected.

He knew that Lord Yunliang was speaking up on his behalf, but he thought that it would be best for him to resolve this issue by himself. Lord Yunliang looked at Chu Feng's gaze and understood his intention right away, so he decided not to say anything.

"I understand your skepticism. I would have felt the same way if I was in your place. I am a mere rank four Martial Exalted level cultivator and a rank seven Dragon Transformation Sensation world spiritist. It wouldn't be surprising if you deemed me to be unworthy.

"However, it's also a fact that I have cleared the trial left behind by the Heavenly King of Massacre. This should be more than enough to prove my qualification. Even if you don't trust my words, surely you should trust the Heavenly King of Massacre."

Shoosh!

Chu Feng formed a series of hand seals.

Weng!

A massive contract formation appeared before him. It was amazingly powerful, far superior to any other contract formations out there.

"God's Contract?"

Conflicted looks appeared on the faces of the Asura Evil Spirits. They could tell that this was the means of the Heavenly King of Massacre. In fact, it was through this same contract formation that they had become the latter's world spirits.

It was just that they were later abandoned by the Heavenly King of Massacre.

They had been anticipating this contract formation for so long, but now that it was right in front of them, they couldn't help but feel a little hesitant.

"This isn't the real God's Contract but a reward bestowed upon me by the Heavenly King of Massacre for clearing his trial. Through this, you'll be able to establish a contract with me and become my world spirit. I can bring you out of the Asura Graveyard," Chu Feng replied.

"I, Yunliang, am willing to establish a contract with Lord Chu Feng!" Lord Yunliang declared before walking over to the contract formation.

Many of the other Asura Evil Spirits were also moved by the proposal. While they had little confidence in Chu Feng, it had been their long-time wish to escape from the Asura Graveyard. Regardless of how powerful Chu Feng was at the moment, he was still a world spiritist who had been acknowledged by the Heavenly King of Massacre.

Choosing Chu Feng was testament to their loyalty in the Heavenly King of Massacre.

"Lord Yunliang, wait a moment. Please allow me to finish my words first."

Surprisingly, Chu Feng stopped Lord Yunliang before the latter could step into the contract formation. He turned to the millions of Asura Evil Spirits present.

"This God's Contract was left behind by the Heavenly King of Massacre, and it has the power to turn you back into world spirits. However, your cultivation will regress if you choose to establish a contract with me, though I'm not too sure to what extent," Chu Feng said.

Those words spurred chaos amidst the Asura World Spirit Army.

The fact that their cultivation would regress meant that they would become weak.

"Lord Chu Feng, my name is Xiang Ji. My current cultivation is rank six Half-God level. May I know how far will my cultivation regress if I establish a contract with you?" one of the elders amidst the Asura World Spirit Army asked.

Chu Feng had met Xiang Ji before, and he was one of the high-ranking individuals in the Asura World Spirit Army. It was just that he didn't expect the

latter to actually be at rank six Half-God level. If he was this strong, exactly how powerful was the Asura King?

“I can’t say for sure,” Chu Feng replied honestly.

He knew that their cultivation would regress, but he didn’t know the extent of it.

Xiang Ji frowned upon hearing those words. He wasn’t too happy with Chu Feng’s reply.

“Your cultivation will regress to rank three Half-God level,” the Asura King suddenly spoke up.

“Milord, you know about this?” Xiang Ji immediately turned to the Asura King and asked.

“It’s my guess. Your cultivation was at rank three Half-God level back when we were first abandoned by Lord Massacre. You were able to advance your cultivation to rank six Half-God level during the many years we have spent here, but it was relying on the energy Lord Massacre left to sustain our life force that you managed to do so.

“If our cultivation is going to regress, it’s likely to be Lord Massacre’s doing. My guess is that he would wish for us to return to our original cultivation level,” the Asura King said.

“Is that so?”

Xiang Ji's frown deepened.

He had spent tens of thousands of years to advance his cultivation from rank three Half-God level to rank six. It was hard for him to accept having his tens of thousands of years of hard work unraveled in an instant.

Many of the other Asura Evil Spirits felt the same way too.

The Heavenly Lord of Massacre had left behind a bundle of powerful energy for them back when he left them in the Asura Graveyard. It was thanks to that energy that they were able to survive the past tens of thousands of years. At the same time, they also used that energy to further their cultivation.

Their rate of cultivation was slow, but they managed to make significant progress over the past tens of thousands of years. They wouldn't want to lose it all just like that.

“Heh...”

The Asura King suddenly burst into laughter. He turned to Chu Feng and asked, “Is there anything else you want to say?”

“Your cultivation might regress, but under the effects of God's Contract, I'll benefit from establishing contracts with you, depending on the total number of contractees and your respective cultivation levels,” Chu Feng said.

“What kind of benefit is it?” the Asura King asked.

“Simply put, my cultivation level will rise,” Chu Feng replied.

“In other words, we're giving away our tens of thousands of years of cultivation to you?”

Another uproar broke out in the Asura World Spirit Army. How could they be willing to give away their cultivation to another person just like that?

In comparison, the Asura King was much calmer. He looked at Chu Feng without any change in his expression.

“How strong will you become?” the Asura King asked.

“I don't know, but I don't think it'll be much. Excessive growth is detrimental in the path of martial cultivation,” Chu Feng replied.

“Why are you telling us now? Shouldn't you reveal it only after we establish contracts with you? You might be weak right now, but you have indeed cleared Lord Massacre's trial. As much as we look down on you, some of us would still choose to contract with you out of loyalty to Lord Massacre. What you're saying right now will make many of us hesitate,” the Asura King said.

“I know. I'm also worried that none of you are willing to contract with me. I can frankly tell you that I need your strength and help right now, and that's also the reason why I have come here. However, I don't want to withhold information from you. I want you to be able to make this decision knowing the consequences so that you won't regret it,” Chu Feng said.

The Asura King nodded. He turned to the Asura World Spirit Army behind him and asked, "Are the rest of you still hesitating?"

"Milord, we..."

The Asura Evil Spirits were indeed unable to make up their minds. They were already used to being in the Asura Graveyard, and it was only a streak of tenacity in them that made them crave freedom. They didn't think that it would be worth it if the price of leaving this place was to acknowledge a far weaker person as their master and have their cultivation stolen from them,

"Since that's the case, I'll be going ahead," the Asura King said.

He began making his way toward the contract formation.

#### Chapter 5079: Precious Quality

Before stepping into the contract formation, the Asura King even clasped his fist and bowed to Chu Feng.

"I am Kui Ting, a world spirit from the Asura Spirit World. I'm willing to establish a contract with Lord Chu Feng today."

As he said those words, the black gaseous flames around him furious blazed and surged into the contract formation. He raised his palm and placed it on God's Contract.

Weng!

A flow of energy induced similar auras in Chu Feng, the Asura King, and God's Contract.

"Milord!"

The Asura Evil Spirits looked conflicted by the situation. They knew how proud the Asura King was, and they thought that he would be the last one amongst them to bow to Chu Feng. Yet, the Asura King chose to establish a contract with Chu Feng while the rest of them were still hesitating.

The contract was swiftly sealed, and the Asura King's appearance began to change. From a terrifying evil spirit, he reverted to the form of a human. He didn't look as sinister as before, but the aura he was giving off was much more domineering.

He was an Asura World Spirit, after all. They were known to be darker than even the world spirits of the Demon Spirit World. Even if his appearance didn't look as terrifying, the aura he emanated was still intimidating.

However, Chu Feng couldn't help but feel a sliver of guilt toward the Asura King. The moment God's Contract was sealed, he could sense the Asura King's cultivation plummeting from rank seven Half-God level to rank four Half-God level.

Needless to say, the cause of it was the contract.

"Just as I've guessed."

However, the Asura King wasn't disappointed by the fall in his cultivation at all. On the contrary, he revealed a light smile that showed that he wasn't too bothered by it. He turned around and faced the subordinates that had followed him for tens of thousands of years now.

"Everyone, I might have established a contract with Lord Chu Feng, but this decision is mine and mine alone. You're no longer related to me, and I'm not your king anymore. I'm just a world spirit of Lord Chu Feng.

"The choice is up to you whether you wish to follow Lord Chu Feng or not. There's no need for you to consider my decision."

After saying those words, the Asura King walked up to Lord Yunliang.

"Yunliang, I apologize for all the hurt I have caused you."

Astonishingly, the Asura King actually bowed deeply to Yunliang. This sight shocked all of the Asura Evil Spirits.

Putting aside the fact that Yunliang did do wrong by going against the Asura King's orders, just the lofty standing of the Asura King itself made it inappropriate for him to display such formality to Yunliang.

"Milord, please don't say that. You had the welfare of our clan at heart too. It's just that our stances differed from each other. I have done wrong by colluding with outsiders to kidnap the princess too. I am deeply grateful that you have chosen to spare me, or else I wouldn't have had a chance to meet Lord Chu Feng



“I’ll remember your grace for my entire life,” Lord Yunliang spoke earnestly from his heart.

He did begrudge the Asura King and the other Asura Evil Spirits for casting away their loyalty for Lord Massacre, but he didn’t blame the Asura King for crippling his cultivation and the torture he was put through.

“Let bygones be bygones. Come, let’s go and free our imprisoned clan members. I ought to apologize to them in person.”

With those words, the Asura King left together with Lord Yunliang, leaving behind just Chu Feng, Yaoyao, and the hesitant Asura Evil Spirits.

Under normal circumstances, Chu Feng should have started cowering once his most fervent supporters, the Asura King and Yunliang, left the area, but his gaze remained as firm as before.

“I have already said all that I wish to say. You should have also seen for yourself that your cultivation will regress if you choose to establish contact with me. However, I promise you that my weakness will not last for long. There will be a day where I grow to become the strongest cultivator in this vast world of cultivation. You may doubt my claim, but I can tell you that that has been my goal all along,” Chu Feng said.

“Lord Chu Feng, can you tell us the reason why you wish to become the strongest cultivator? Do you wish to rule over the world of cultivation?” the Asura Evil Spirit named Xiang Ji asked.

Chu Feng chuckled upon hearing the question.

“Lord Xiang Ji, I hope that you wouldn’t laugh at me for saying this, but I don’t have such ambitions.”

“This…”

The Asura Evil Spirits were taken aback by the unexpected answer. Even Yaoyao also stared at Chu Feng with widened eyes. Those who sought to become the strongest usually had ambitions to conquer the world and make everyone submit to them, but Chu Feng had no such goal in mind?

None of them could figure out what Chu Feng was thinking.

“I believe that the greatest thing in this world is not the power to destroy everything or make everyone worship you. Rather, it’s the earnest sentiments that exist between people. That’s what makes me feel the warmth of the world.

“I could rule the world if I have boundless power, but if there’s not a single person in the world who can make me waver, the vast world would just become utterly monotonous and boring to me.

“Of course, I understand that having people whom I care about can make me weak. However, I have been protected by people who care about me, and I wish to protect my friends and family too.

“It’s just that this world is cruel... Even if we don’t provoke others, trouble will still fall upon us. There could be people who want to kill us just by walking on the road. Even if we coop ourselves up, a single ripple from the fight between powerful experts could take our life.

“How can I protect anyone if I am not strong enough? That’s why I want to cultivate and become stronger than anyone else. I know that I won’t be able to definitely protect everyone whom I care for as long as there’s a person stronger than me. That’s the reason why I wish to become the strongest in the world,” Chu Feng said.

The Asura Evil Spirits fell silent. They had heard from many others the reason why they wished to become strong, and honestly speaking, Chu Feng’s answer was hardly special at all. However, his words carried sincerity in them that made them believe that it was not just empty talk.

They were reminded of the fact that Chu Feng was taking a huge risk by returning to the Asura Graveyard, but he did it in order to save his master, elders, and friends. This proved that Chu Feng possessed a precious quality that cultivators in the world direly lacked.

“We didn’t know each other before today, and I won’t bother trying to buddy up with you now. However, if you choose to follow me, you’ll be my family members from this day onward. I’ll need your protection now, but a day will come where I’ll be the one protecting you.

“We’ll advance together on the road to becoming stronger. If there’s an opportunity for you to raise your cultivation, I’ll not miss it even if it comes with great risks. I promise that as long as I don’t die, I’ll make sure that every

single one of you regain your cultivation within a hundred years and even surpass your previous limit!" Chu Feng declared grandly.

"A hundred years?"

The Asura Evil Spirits glanced at one another.

It had taken them tens of thousands of years to advance their cultivation to its current stage, so it was hard to believe that Chu Feng would be able to aid them to regain their cultivation within a hundred years.

It might be because Chu Feng was the person chosen by the Heavenly Lord of Massacre or some other reason unbeknownst to them at the moment, but they didn't think that Chu Feng was bragging. They felt that he was credible.

"Lord Chu Feng, I, Xiang Ji, am willing to establish a contract with you and serve you!"

Xiang Ji bowed deeply to Chu Feng before making his way to the contract formation to establish a contract with him.

Furious roars echoed right after, but if one were to listen closely, it was the voices of several million Asura Evil Spirits speaking simultaneously.

"Lord Chu Feng, I am willing to serve you!"

"Lord Chu Feng, I am willing to fight alongside you!"

"Lord Chu Feng, I'll obey your orders!"

...

...

With each shout, an Asura Evil Spirit would step forward to establish a contract with Chu Feng. Within moments, nearly a million Asura Evil Spirits had already contracted with him, and the number was still increasing...

**Martial God Asura #Chapter 5080: Difficult Decision -  
Read Martial God Asura Chapter 5080: Difficult  
Decision**

## Chapter 5080: Difficult Decision

In just a few short moments, all of the Asura Evil Spirits present, with the exception of Yaoyao, had already established a contract with Chu Feng. Unlike the Asura King, they immediately kneeled before Chu Feng after contracting with him.

Their attitude toward Chu Feng was extremely respectful.

It was a grand sight with millions of Asura World Spirits kneeling in order before Chu Feng.

Soon, a few million more Asura Evil Spirits flew over from afar. Leading them were the Asura King and Lord Yunliang.

These were the Asura Evil Spirits who opposed the Asura King's decision but were imprisoned after falling in defeat.

"Is that man Lord Chu Feng? I didn't think that he would be a junior!"

"However, it's an amazing feat for a person as young as him to have reached such a cultivation level. It's hard to imagine the extent of his talent. It looks like he'll achieve great things in the future."

"As expected of someone chosen by Lord Massacre. We'll be able to conquer the world of cultivation once again!"

The Asura Evil Spirits spoke amongst themselves. There was no doubt nor hesitation in their words, just admiration. They had already acknowledged Chu Feng at first glance.

Meanwhile, the Asura King saw his old subordinates kneeling before Chu Feng, but he didn't feel indignant at all. On the contrary, he was heartened by the sight. He turned to the Asura Evil Spirits behind him and said, "It's your turn to make your choice. Are you willing to follow Lord Chu Feng?"

"That's a redundant question. We have been waiting for this moment all our lives!"

The millions of Asura Evil Spirits who had just regained their freedom quickly made their way toward the contract formation, but Chu Feng never got to witness this great sight.

As he contracted more and more Asura Evil Spirits, the effects of God's Contract became more and more potent. He could feel the tremendous asura power stemming from God's Contract permeating his World Spirit Space, constructing something within him.

At the same time, a significant portion of the asura power was being converted to martial power and spirit power before flowing into his body. Under such circumstances, his cultivation level directly increased without invoking the lightning ordeal.

Rank five Martial Exalted level, rank six Martial Exalted level...

Within moments, his cultivation had already risen to rank eight Martial Exalted level!

At the same time, his spirit power was swiftly growing stronger too. Within a matter of moments, he had already risen from rank seven Dragon Transformation Sensation to rank nine Dragon Transformation Sensation.

What was even more astonishing was that this wasn't the end yet.

He could feel more asura power surging into his body. There was still plenty of room for his martial cultivation and spirit power to grow, but this situation only left him feeling extremely uneasy.

The foundation of his cultivation had always been extremely sturdy thus far, and that was the reason behind his powerful fighting prowess. To use an analogy, cultivating was similar to building a tower.

It was possible to build towers that rose to the clouds within moments, and those did look impressive, but they tended to be weak and unstable. Conversely, some towers took an extremely long time to build, but they were sturdy enough to weather any storm.

Chu Feng's cultivation had always been incredibly sturdy, which was one of the key reasons why his fighting prowess had been superior to his peers. Yet, for the first time, he sensed the foundation of his cultivation loosening.

His cultivation had reached rank eight Martial Exalted level, making him far more powerful than before. However, in terms of how his fighting prowess compared to cultivators of the same level, he was no longer confident that he was peerless compared to everyone else.

That put him in a quandary.

If he continued to enjoy the benefits brought about by God's Contract, he was confident that he could advance to Half-God level and become a God-cloak World Spiritist. However, he would also pay a price for it. It would become much harder for him to reach greater heights.

This single moment of greediness could very well become the bottleneck that limited his future potential.

It was hard for Chu Feng to not be tempted, especially after all of the setbacks he had faced in the Nine Souls Galaxy. He was confident of becoming a powerhouse in the world of cultivation in the future given his talent, but what was the use of it if those whom he cared about were to lose their lives before then?

He was weak right now, and it wouldn't do for him to just rely on others. Be it the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect's sectmaster or the Divine Deer, they weren't compelled to help him just because he asked for it. It was not as if they owed him anything. If he wanted to protect those around him, he needed to become strong himself.

However, it wasn't easy for him to come this far either. Giving in to this temptation would mean rendering his previous efforts futile. His goal was to reach the top of the world of cultivation, and taking on this bottleneck could spell the end of his dream.

On one hand, he could achieve the cultivation level he dreamed of right away.

On the other, he could take his time reinforcing the foundation of his cultivation and eventually climb his way to the very top.

This was not an easy decision to make, but he soon made up his mind.

He put a halt to the benefit he was receiving from God's Contract. He knew that this was a one-off thing, and this benefit would be forever lost if he didn't accept it now. Nevertheless, he firmly believed that it was more important for him to preserve the foundation of his cultivation.

Eventually, his cultivation stopped at rank eight Martial Exalted level and rank nine Dragon Transformation Sensation. It was a pity that he didn't advance

any further, but this was still a huge leap for him. That was four whole cultivation ranks within a matter of moments!

Of course, it came at a price. The foundation of his cultivation had loosened, and his relative fighting prowess against his peers had been lowered. Fortunately, the effects weren't too severe. As long as he worked hard, he should be able to make up for the deficiency and reinforce his cultivation.

After putting a halt to the benefit from God's Contract, Chu Feng didn't return his consciousness to his physical body. Instead, he dived into his World Spirit Space to examine the changes that had occurred. He quickly noticed a sinister black gate towering at a height of ten thousand meters had formed in there.

The black gate was opened, allowing Chu Feng to see the situation inside.

A beautiful meadow could be seen on the other side of the gate. It resembled the Asura Graveyard quite a bit.

Boom boom boom!

However, thunderous rumbling could be heard in the depths of the meadow. Dust was constantly puffing into the air in the far distance, and a great amount of spirit power was flowing in the sky. This realm was still under construction, and the end result was likely to be far larger than what Chu Feng was seeing right now.

"Chu Feng, are you able to enter there?" Yu Sha asked.

Chu Feng focused his consciousness and easily passed through the gate to enter the meadows.

"Yeah, I'm inside now," Chu Feng replied with a chuckle.

"Don't worry, Yu Sha. Even though this realm is created by the Heavenly King of Massacre's formation, it's still within the boundaries of my World Spirit Space. It's safe," Chu Feng replied.

"I... can't enter the gate," Yu Sha replied.

She raised a hand and pushed it through the gate, but a surge of invisible energy pushed her back.

“You aren’t able to enter the gate?”

Chu Feng was baffled. He tried leaving and entering the gate once more, and he was able to do it without a problem. Yet, the gate denied Yu Sha entry.

Chu Feng took a step back to carefully examine the black gate, and he soon realized that there was more to it than he had expected.

#### Chapter 5081: Mysterious Silhouette

There were complicated inscriptions on the black gate that resembled an ancient formation or special characters. Chu Feng couldn’t decipher them, but he noticed that there was a formation embedded into the two doors of the gate.

These two formations were incomplete, but they formed one whole together. In other words, the formation would be completed when the doors to the gate were closed. It was just that Chu Feng couldn’t see through it at the moment.

He would have checked a little more, but sensing that something was happening outside, he quickly retracted his consciousness from his World Spirit Space. It was only then that he noticed over tens of millions of Asura World Spirits kneeling before him.

Of them, eight million were at Exalted Martial level and nearly a million had reached pinnacle Martial Exalted level.

Even for Half-God level—a height that the Lady of Dao Sea, the Godwish Grandmother, the Nine Souls Sacred Clan’s Clan Chief, and the other top experts of the Nine Souls Galaxy dreamed of reaching—there were nearly ten thousand of them.

The strongest one amongst them was the Asura King, who was at rank four Half-God level. Other than that, there were roughly a hundred of them at rank three Half-God level and nearly a thousand at rank two Half-God level.

One must know that this was after their cultivation levels had regressed. Otherwise, they would have been much more powerful.

What was worth noting was that Lord Yunliang, who had his cultivation crippled, had regained his cultivation under the effect of God’s Contract. His current cultivation was at rank three Half-God level.



“Everyone, please rise. I’ll make sure that you won’t regret the choice you have made today!” Chu Feng declared.

The Asura World Spirits finally rose to their feet.

“Daddy, why can’t I establish a contract with you?” Yaoyao looked at Chu Feng begrudgingly as she asked.

“Yaoyao wants to contract with me too?” Chu Feng asked.

“Yup yup! I want to be with daddy, but I don’t know how to do the contract,” Yaoyao replied with a pout.

“Lord Chu Feng. I taught Brightmoon—no no no, I mean Yaoyao—how to establish a contract with you earlier, but it didn’t work. My guess is that Yaoyao is unable to contract with you due to her special origins,” the Asura King replied.

“Yaoyao is indeed an unusual existence. She isn’t an Asura Evil Spirit, and it’s impossible to tell whether she’s a world spirit or not. She seems more like a normal human than anything, being able to live in the world of cultivation without any restrictions,” Chu Feng replied.

He turned to Yaoyao, patted her little head, and said, “Yaoyao, you don’t have to make a contract with you. You’re already irreplaceable in my heart.”

“Hehehe!”

Yaoyao revealed a sweet smile.

The Asura King was heartened to see Yaoyao’s smile. He knew that he had done many bad things to Yaoyao—he had sacrificed Yaoyao’s mother in order to help Yaoyao acquire power—and the truth was that he had been blaming himself for it.

He would have nothing to say even if Yaoyao chose not to forgive him for life, but he couldn’t help but feel bitter about it since she was his flesh and blood, after all. That was why he was glad to see that Yaoyao had found someone to rely on, and that person happened to be the master chosen by the Asura World Spirit Army. It was such a coincidence that he thought that it might have been heaven’s will.

Weng!

The contract formation suddenly disappeared at this moment. It left Chu Feng feeling conflicted as the immense power harnessed within God's Contract had vanished along with it. It was likely to be gone for good.

However, he could sense that the construction inside his World Spirit Space had been completed. With a thought, he summoned the ten thousand meters tall black formation gate in front of him.

"Everyone, I have come here to request your help. I have encountered a difficult opponent, but I believe that I'll be able to defeat them with your strength. Thus, I ask you to follow me to battle," Chu Feng told the Asura World Spirit Army.

Grar!

"Fight for Lord Chu Feng!"

"Fight for Lord Chu Feng!"

"Show them the prowess of our Asura World Spirit Army!"

"Goddamnit! I'll massacre anyone who dares to mess with our lord!"

Deafening cheers resounded in the Asura King Palace, making their enthusiasm known. Amidst their cheers, they quickly made their way into the black formation gate.

However, the Asura King didn't enter the formation gate right away. Instead, he made his way to Chu Feng's side and took out a black compass. The compass resembled an elliptical rock, but it was clearly a treasure and had a powerful formation embedded within it.

The compass used to harness formidable energy, but the energy was on the verge of drying up.

"How could this be?" Lord Yunliang exclaimed in astonishment upon seeing the compass.

The other Asura World Spirits who noticed the compass also halted their footsteps to stare at it. Some of the Asura World Spirits who had already entered the black formation gate even flew back out.

It was clear that this compass held great significance to them.

“What is this?” Chu Feng asked the Asura King.

“This is a treasure from Lord Massacre. It’s thanks to its nourishment that we were able to survive here for so long and advance our cultivation. However, the energy it contains isn’t limitless. I only disobeyed Lord Massacre and sought another way out of the Asura Graveyard because this treasure is about to run out of energy.

“If the energy within this compass dries up before we find a new master, it wouldn’t be long before we breathe our last here. Now that we have found ourselves a new master, I shouldn’t be the one holding onto this treasure anymore.

“Lord Chu Feng, please.”

The Asura King handed the compass over to Chu Feng.

Chu Feng sensed that the compass was intricately linked to all of the Asura World Spirits present, but he could only sense the power it harnessed and not its true nature. Be it this compass, God’s Contract, or the changes that had happened to his World Spirit Space, they were all powers beyond his understanding.

And these were things that the Emperor of Massacre had left on a whim tens of thousands of years ago.

If the Emperor of Massacre was still alive in this age, it was hard to imagine just how powerful he would be.

“Milord, doesn’t that mean that it’s only a matter of time before we die here if we had chosen not to contract with Lord Chu Feng?”

A few of the Asura World Spirits asked the Asura King.

“Indeed. That’s also the reason I didn’t tell you about this. I wanted to know how many of you earnestly wish to pledge your loyalty to Lord Chu Feng, and I am heartened by the result. None of you have chosen Lord Chu Feng out of fear of death,” the Asura King said.

Shortly later, he added, "From this day onward, don't call me your king anymore. Just Kui Ting will suffice. We only have one king now, and that's Lord Chu Feng."

The Asura King then turned his eyes to Chu Feng.

"Lord Kui Ting, am I your master now?" Chu Feng asked.

"Of course, Lord Chu Feng," the Asura King quickly replied.

"Since that's the case, I order you to continue being the Asura King. You shall be the one to command the Asura World Spirit Army," Chu Feng said.

The Asura King was taken aback, but he quickly fell to the floor and bowed deeply.

"I'm flattered by Milord's trust in me! I, Kui Ting, will definitely not let you down!" the Asura King cried out.

The Asura World Spirit Army quickly entered Chu Feng's World Spirit Space afterward. Chu Feng was intending to have the Asura King stay behind and bring him around. That would have made traveling much faster.

However, the Asura King replied that he was now an Asura World Spirit and could lend his powers to Chu Feng any time, even when he was within the World Spirit Space.

That reminded Chu Feng of how he had borrowed Eggy's power to dominate the Nine Provinces Continent back when he was still in the Ancestral Martial Lower Realm. For a moment there, he felt like he had returned to his younger years.

So, he accepted the Asura King's proposal. He decided to not have the Asura King directly help him but instead to borrow the Asura King's power and settle everything himself.

Weng!

Chu Feng's eyes suddenly turned pitch-black, and he began releasing black gaseous flames. His current appearance looked just like an Asura World Spirit. He was now harnessing the power of a rank four Half-God level cultivator.

“So this is a Half-God level cultivator...”

Despite being a rank eight Martial Exalted level cultivator himself, he couldn't help but feel how insignificant Martial Exalted level cultivators were now that he was harnessing the power of the Asura King. The current him was unprecedentedly strong.

“Pill Dao Immortal Sect and Sima Xiangtu. I'll see who dares to undermine me this time around!”

Boom!

There was a burst of black gaseous flames, and Chu Feng vanished from the Asura Graveyard. He was already on his way to the Nine Souls Sacred Clan.

With his departure, the previously noisy Asura Graveyard became deathly silent. However, shortly after he left, there was a spatial distortion in the Asura King Palace, and a silhouette came into appearance.

Chapter 5082: A Person He Respects

That person was dressed in a robe covered in flickering runes. The robe contained incredibly strong spirit power that fully concealed the presence of its wearer. It was through this robe that the person was able to avoid the detection of even the Asura King.

If Chu Feng were to see the person under the robe, he would have surely been surprised. It was the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect's sectmaster.

“It's a good thing that I didn't interfere needlessly. The hellfire is indeed the entrance to the Emperor of Massacre's trial,” the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect's sectmaster murmured under her breath.

While she seemed to have returned to her residence after Chu Feng left, the truth was that she had secretly followed him. Not only did she know about the Asura Graveyard, but her knowledge of it far surpassed most people.

That was also the reason she didn't make a move when Chu Feng leaped into the hellfire even though she could have saved him.

Many years ago, when she was accompanying Dugu Lingtian on a mission, she stumbled upon the secret of the Asura Graveyard, which was none other

than the clue left behind by the Heavenly Lord of Massacre that most people were unaware of.

However, Dugu Lingtian dared not to challenge the Asura Graveyard's hellfire. He even went so far as to claim that anyone who successfully cleared the hellfire's trial was likely to possess talent superior to his.

Back then, Dugu Lingtian had awed the entire Hidden Dragon Martial Sect with his overwhelming talent. It looked as if there was no one in the world who could rival him.

For that reason, the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect's sectmaster confidently replied that there would be no such people. It was implausible to her back then that a person could possibly clear a trial that even Dugu Lingtian dared not to challenge. It almost felt ironic how she was witnessing this in person now.

The Hidden Dragon Martial Sect's sectmaster followed Chu Feng and left the Asura Graveyard. Chu Feng was no longer anywhere to be seen, but she knew where he was heading to. She gazed in that direction too, but she suddenly turned around to look at the entrance of the Asura Graveyard.

That was the exact same spot where she and Dugu Lingtian had stood back then.

"Young master Lingtian, how wonderful it would be if you could have witnessed this sight in person. Someone whom even you would respect has appeared, and it truly is coincidental how he's from our Hidden Dragon Martial Sect."

Those words were initially spoken with a joyous tone, but her voice slowly grew hoarse.

...

In the Nine Souls Sacred Clan, Sima Xiangtu was feeling overjoyed. After many days of preparation, he finally mastered his control over the puppet army. He was finally able to use their power to activate the Immortal Cauldron.

"This feeling...?"

Sima Xiangtu suddenly noticed that something was amiss. He rushed back to his residence and found someone standing there. It was the son of the Asura King, Prince Brightsun.

“Master.”

Prince Brightsun hurriedly bowed to Sima Xiangtu. It turned out that he was Sima Xiangtu’s disciple, as well as the mysterious man who crossed blows with Chu Feng.

“Your state... it looks like you’ve successfully freed yourself from being an evil spirit?” Sima Xiangtu exclaimed in delight.

The appearance and aura of Prince Brightsun now resembled that of an ordinary human. It was no longer possible to tell that he was from the Asura Spirit World.

“It’s all thanks to the cultivation technique you have bestowed to me, master. I can stay by your side now that I’m freed from the restraints of the Asura Graveyard. Master, I can help you reclaim the puppet army. Please lead the way forward!” Prince Brightsun said.

It turned out that Sima Xiangtu had been raising Prince Brightsun to free the puppet army from the Monstrous Spirit Clan. It was just that his identity as an Asura Evil Spirit and the limitations imposed by Lord Massacre’s formation had prevented him from leaving the Asura Graveyard, so he hadn’t been able to make a move thus far.

“There’s no longer any need for you to do that. Look, that’s the puppet army I’ve told you about.”

Sima Xiangtu waved his sleeves, and a formation appeared. It showed the puppet army stationed outside the room.

Prince Brightsun had relied on Sima Xiangtu’s formation to get here, so he was still unaware of what was outside.

“That’s the master’s puppet army? Incredible! But master, how did you manage to get them out of the Monstrous Spirit Clan?” Prince Brightsun asked out of curiosity.

“It’s Chu Feng. I used Chu Feng to get the puppet army out for me,” Sima Xiangtu replied.

“Chu Feng? That explains why he would bring Brightmoon to the Asura Graveyard. He was hoping to gather reinforcements against the master's puppet army,” Prince Brightsun remarked.

“Hm? You said that Chu Feng went to the Asura Graveyard?”

A tight knit formed on Sima Xiangtu’s forehead. He knew just how powerful the Asura Evil Spirits in the Asura Graveyard were.

“He has indeed gone there, but master, you need not worry. I have taken care of him.”

Prince Brightsun told Sima Xiangtu about everything that had happened in the Asura Graveyard. Of course, there was only so much that he knew since he left right after Chu Feng and Yaoyao had just disappeared in the hellfire.

“As expected of my disciple, well done. Brightsun, it isn’t the time for you to make an appearance yet. You should stay here for the time being. Once I succeed, those fellows from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect would no longer pose a threat. Just wait here and watch my performance.”

Sima Xiangtu maintained the formation so as to allow Prince Brightsun to continue seeing what was happening outside. He left the room and quickly headed toward the Immortal Cauldron.

“Everyone, I’ve kept you waiting. Today is the day that you will be tributed.”

As Sima Xiangtu spoke, the cultivators of the Nine Souls Galaxy below rose into the air and floated above the Immortal Cauldrons. None of them were moving on their own accord, evident by the endless miserable cries begging for mercy.

All of them implicitly understood that they were no different from ingredients about to be tossed into a pot. Death would befall them if they were dropped into the Immortal Cauldron.

However, Sima Xiangtu paid no heed to their pleading. He took his eyeball and opened the confinement formation to bring out the Ox-nosed Old Daoist, the Godwish Grandmother, Wang Yuxian, and the others.



Under Sima Xiangtu's pressure, they were all forced to kneel above the Immortal Cauldron.

Unlike the other cultivators, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist and the others didn't beg Sima Xiangtu for mercy, unlike the other cultivators, but they still revealed looks of despair when faced with the terrifying energy in the cauldron. They knew that they were soon going to die.

There was no fear on Wang Yuxian's face. She raised her head to look at the sky, hoping to take one last look at the world around her before she left. All of a sudden, she noticed a figure appearing on the distant horizon and froze up.

To her astonishment, the figure resembled Chu Feng.

### Chapter 5083: Chu Feng's Return

It was just that the figure was gone in a flash so that Wang Yuxian couldn't tell if she had seen wrong. Still, she started to panic.

She knew just how loyal Chu Feng was, and she was afraid that Chu Feng had returned to save them. It was one thing if he had brought allies back, but he would be courting death if he returned alone.

"Zhuge Yuankong, you probably would have never thought that you would die in my hands?" Sima Xiangtu said with a gleeful smile.

"Sima Xiangtu, you do perfectly well as a scum, but you should know that scums have to eventually face their retribution. You can be gleeful for now, but know that a day will come where my disciple, Chu Feng, will knock on your door and claim your life," the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

"Chu Feng? I nearly forgot to tell you that your disciple is already dead," Sima Xiangtu said.

"Rubbish! Chu Feng can't possibly be dead!" Wang Yuxian refuted loudly.

The others revealed looks of disbelief too, but Sima Xiangtu wasn't deterred in the least.

"Well, I must say that your disciple is indeed loyal. He actually went to the Asura Graveyard to request the help of those Asura Evil Spirits for your sake. He brought a little girl named Yaoyao there, and she turns out to be the

princess of the Asura Graveyard and possesses the power to bring the Asura Evil Spirits out. Furthermore, he nearly succeeded.

“He nearly succeeded, if not for the fact that I have people there too. Right before Yaoyao could free those Asura Evil Spirits, my disciple pushed her into the hellfire. Chu Feng leaped into the hellfire after her in order to save her.

“He probably didn’t know that the Asura Graveyard’s hellfire can burn all things in the world, such that even a Half-God level cultivator would be reduced to ashes within moments. All it took was a split moment for him to completely disappear from the face of the world. How pitiful!” Sima Xiangtu exclaimed.

Wang Yuxian, the Godwish Grandmother, and the Lady of Dao Sea were appalled. Sima Xiangtu’s words sounded incredibly convincing, especially since they knew about Yaoyao’s origins.

Wang Yuxian broke down into tears. She wished that the person she had just seen was none other than Chu Feng. At the very least, that would have meant that he was still alive.

“Lele, why are you crying? Don’t tell me that you buy into that old thing’s lies?” a familiar voice suddenly echoed from afar.

The crowd immediately looked over, and their eyes widened in astonishment. Be it the Ox-nosed Old Daoist, Wang Yuxian, Sima Xiangtu, or even Prince Brightsun, all of them found the situation inconceivable.

The person who had just appeared was none other than Chu Feng.

“Impossible! I saw him fall into the hellfire with my own eyes. How could he still be alive?” Prince Brightsun murmured in disbelief.

“Chu Feng, how dare you come back here?” a voice filled with hostility boomed.

Jiang Yuantai, Jiang Kongping, Jiang Taibai, and the others from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect stepped out from a nearby palace. It turned out that they had been spectating the ritual, but Chu Feng’s arrival prompted them to make an appearance.

“Jiang Yuantai, it’s good that you’re here. I wish to have another duel with you,” Chu Feng said.

“What’s wrong? You didn’t lose pathetically enough the last time and want to give it another try? Chu Feng, don’t you know that you would have already been dead if my younger brother, Jiang Kongping, hadn’t pleaded for mercy on your behalf?” Jiang Yuantai looked at Chu Feng mockingly.

While he was perplexed by how Chu Feng dared to return, he didn’t think that the latter was a threat at all. No matter how talented Chu Feng was, he could only see the latter as a defeated foe.

Since he was able to beat Chu Feng once, he would surely be able to do so for a second time. Loss was the last thing that was on his mind.

“Let’s not waste time spouting such nonsense. You can tell me straight if you don’t dare,” Chu Feng replied with a smile of ridicule.

Jiang Yuantai was provoked by those words. His massive ego wouldn’t allow an enemy whom he had already defeated to make light of him.

“Chu Feng, you must be either dumb or fearless. Very well, I’ll play with you once again. However, I shall warn you that I won’t spare you this time around no matter who begs on your behalf. You shall die under my spear!” Jiang Yuantai spat.

“Sure. Let’s go by the old rules. We’ll suppress our cultivation to rank four Martial Exalted level. Usage of martial skills, secret skills, and the sort are all forbidden. We’ll fight using weapons and our raw strength. If I lose, my life will be yours to take. If I win, you have to release my master and everyone else. On top of that, you’ll bring your Pill Dao Immortal Sect out of here and never return to the Eastern Region!” Chu Feng said.

“What arrogant words. Chu Feng, you can’t really be thinking that you’ll be able to defeat me?”

Jiang Yuantai looked at Chu Feng as if he was looking at a fool. It was as if a mere canary dared to stand up against an eagle. How hilarious it was!

Sima Xiangtu, the others from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect, and the many cultivators of the Nine Souls Galaxy couldn’t understand the situation either.

They couldn't comprehend why Chu Feng was challenging Jiang Yuantai once again.

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist, Wang Yuxian, the Lady of Dao Sea, and the others looked at Chu Feng with aching hearts. They kept sending voice transmissions to him, urging him to leave the place. They could already see the outcome of the duel.

In their view, there was no need for Chu Feng to go through with this meaningless farce if he had managed to find a powerful backing to save them. He could have just gotten the powerful backing to make a move straight away instead of relying on Jiang Yuantai's untrustworthy bet.

It was already apparent to them that Chu Feng had failed to find helpers and was simply risking his life for their sake.

#### Chapter 5084: The Victor Has Been Decided

Wang Yuxian, the Lady of Dao Sea, and the others sent voice transmissions to Chu Feng to tell him to leave this place. Chu Feng initially ignored them, and it was only till Jiang Yuantai took out those wooden weapons once more that he finally answered them.

"Don't worry, I won't lose today," Chu Feng replied confidently.

His response left Jiang Yuantai feeling even more displeased.

"Chu Feng, talk is cheap. If you're ready, I'm going to make a move now. Remember, I won't go easy on you this time around. If you lose, you die," Jiang Yuantai said.

He wasn't joking here. He was really intending to take Chu Feng's life.

"Come then. I just fear that you're overestimating your capabilities," Chu Feng replied with a disdainful smile.

It was as if Jiang Yuantai meant nothing to him at all. This made the already infuriated Jiang Yuantai even angrier.

Shoosh!

Jiang Yuantai bolted forth in a streak of light, rushing toward Chu Feng in a series of sonic booms.

Despite Chu Feng's earlier cheery attitude, his eyes immediately became serious as soon as Jiang Yuantai made a move. He raised the sword in his hand and counterattacked.

Shoosh shoosh shoosh!

To Jiang Yuantai's sword, Chu Feng brandished his single sword as if he had an army of swords in his possession. It felt almost as if swords were raining down on him. Even so, he wasn't intimidated in the least. He flung his spear with great agility and deflected all of Chu Feng's attacks.

He didn't spend decades training his spearmanship in vain, after all.

After blocking the attack, Jiang Yuantai quickly followed up with an attack of his own. Chu Feng saw it, but he chose to further his aggression instead of going on the defensive. Just like that, the two of them began trading blows.

"Formidable!"

Those who were present had seen the two of them trading blows before, but they were still awed by the sight. Neither of them was holding back at all, causing the duel to be intense right from the start. Both sides appeared to be equally matched, which only further added to the hype.

"Why does it seem like Chu Feng has gotten weaker? No, that's not it. It looks like he's weaker than before, but his movements are much faster than before. What's going on?" Jiang Kongping murmured under his breath.

As Chu Feng and Jiang Yuantai had suppressed their cultivation to rank four Martial Exalted level, Jiang Kongping was able to spectate the details of the duel without any trouble. He could tell that Chu Feng's attacks were less powerful than before, which should have put him at a disadvantage. However, that wasn't the case at all.

"His swordsmanship has gotten more delicate and profound than before. That's compensating for the decrease in his fighting prowess. But this doesn't make sense. Why would his fighting prowess be lowered all of a sudden?"

"He must be doing it intentionally. He's feigning weakness so that he can launch a surprise attack. That brat is as despicable as ever!"

Having thought of that, Jiang Taibai quickly sent a voice transmission to Jiang Yuantai.

“Young master Yuantai, Chu Feng is preserving his strength to launch a surprise assault on you. You mustn’t give him an opportunity to strike. It’ll be best if you can end this battle as soon as possible!” Jiang Taibai advised.

In truth, Chu Feng was already as good as dead. Regardless of whether he won this battle or not, there was no way he was getting out of here. However, those from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect cared a lot for their reputation, such that even if all of the cultivators from the Eastern Region were to die today, they still desired to achieve a beautiful victory.

Jiang Yuantai could also tell that Chu Feng was withholding his true strength. Knowing that it could get dangerous at this rate, he pushed his spear forward with much greater strength and speed than before. At the same time, the prowess of his spear formation grew by leaps and bounds.

Considering that the two of them were equally matched earlier, Chu Feng should have been hard-pressed to deal with Jiang Yuantai’s sudden increment in strength. Yet, Chu Feng was somehow still able to cope with Jiang Yuantai’s aggression.

To be more exact, Chu Feng was exerting more strength and moving faster than before, but not by much. At the very least, it was marginal compared to Jiang Yuantai’s explosive increase. Yet, he was still holding his own against Jiang Yuantai.

The reason for that was Chu Feng’s profound swordsmanship.

He was able to read Jiang Yuantai’s attack, allowing him to stand his ground against Jiang Yuantai even when there was a decisive disadvantage in terms of strength and speed.

“That fellow!”

Jiang Yuantai was displeased to see that his attack wasn’t working even after he had consumed a forbidden medicine. Chu Feng had put on an arrogant attitude right from the start as if this battle was his for the taking, which made Jiang Yuantai more determined than ever to crush him. Yet, for some reason, he hadn’t been able to clinch the upper hand ever since the start of the battle.

“I guess the white pill won’t be enough for you. Why don’t you consume the gray one too?” Chu Feng said.

“You?!”

Chu Feng’s words astonished Jiang Yuantai, Jiang Kongping, and everyone from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect. They were naturally aware that Jiang Yuantai had consumed two forbidden medicines the previous time they crossed blows, but they were confident that no one else was aware of it since the forbidden medicine wouldn’t alter one’s aura.

Yet, Chu Feng actually knew!

“Could it be that...?”

Jiang Kongping frowned as a possibility surfaced in his mind.

Shoosh shoosh shoosh!

While Jiang Yuantai was still in a daze, Chu Feng’s sword moved with even greater speed.

Pu!

There was a spurt of fresh blood, and everyone fell silent. Chu Feng’s sword also came to a halt, for it had severed Jiang Yuantai’s right arm along with the spear it was holding.

The victor for this duel had been determined!

Chapter 5085: Insults of the Weak

The world fell silent. Everyone was dumbfounded.

Putting aside the cultivators from the Nine Souls Galaxy, even Wang Yuxian, the Lady of Dao Sea, Jiang Taibai, and the others were flabbergasted too.

Chu Feng’s final slash was shockingly fast compared to his previous attacks, to the point that it was hard to believe that he was the one who had executed it. Something appeared to be amiss here.

Meanwhile, Chu Feng stopped his attack. In his view, there was no longer any reason to continue this duel.

“Looks like it’s my victory,” Chu Feng said with a chuckle.

Jiang Yuantai was stunned. Even though he was bleeding profusely from the severing of his arm, he made no move to heal himself. He was simply too bewildered by what had just happened.

I... was defeated?

While he had only consumed one forbidden medicine, his strength and mastery of the spear should have been enough to block Chu Feng’s earlier slash. Yet, he was somehow unable to do so, which resulted in his defeat.

“What did you do?” Jiang Yuantai asked coldly.

Indignance was brimming in his eyes.

“Big brother, he consumed my forbidden medicine,” Jiang Kongping spoke up before Chu Feng could.

“Forbidden medicine?”

Jiang Yuantai quickly turned to look at his younger brother, Jiang Kongping.

“Chu Feng took away my Cosmos Sack back then when he captured me. It contains three forbidden medicines from our Pill Dao Immortal Sect. He must have found a way to open our Cosmos Sack to acquire my forbidden medicine. The sudden rise in his fighting prowess must have come from that,” Jiang Kongping said.

Then, he turned to Chu Feng and said, “Chu Feng, you might have defeated my older brother today, but you didn’t win fair and square. You won only with the help of our forbidden medicine.”

“Are you admitting that your older brother has consumed forbidden medicine in the previous duel?” Chu Feng asked.

“You have no evidence to prove that my older brother has consumed forbidden medicine,” Jiang Kongping replied.

He knew just how prideful his older brother was, so there was no way he could admit that his older brother had relied on their forbidden medicine to defeat Chu Feng.



“No evidence? I noticed a sudden rise in Jiang Yuantai’s fighting prowess earlier, similar to the last time I fought with him. If your older brother consumed forbidden medicine, it should only be a matter of time before he suffers its backlash. Why don’t we just wait for a while and see who is right?” Chu Feng said.

Those from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect panicked upon hearing those words. They wanted to argue against Chu Feng, but it was a fact that Jiang Yuantai would soon face the backlash of the forbidden medicine at this rate.

The backlash was less severe than that of other forbidden medicine, but the symptoms would be apparent. Jiang Yuantai wouldn’t be able to conceal it. The truth was going to be exposed at this rate.

“So what if we consumed forbidden medicine? Didn’t you do the same too?”

The others from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect eventually pointed their fingers to Chu Feng.

They wouldn’t want to admit to this matter if possible, but seeing that it was no longer possible to hide it, they could only cling to the fact that Chu Feng had also violated the rules of the duel by consuming forbidden medicine.

“Regardless of whether I consumed forbidden medicine or not, it’s a fact that I’ve won,” Chu Feng said.

“You might have won, but it’s not a glorious victory. You must have consumed the gray forbidden medicine for your strength to have grown by so much. Didn’t you request for us to wait it out? Sure, let’s do just that. Let’s see who suffers the worst backlash!” Jiang Taibai said.

The abrupt surge in the speed of Chu Feng’s final slash made him certain that Chu Feng had consumed their forbidden medicine. Furthermore, it shouldn’t be possible for Chu Feng to overpower Jiang Yuantai given the latter’s mastery in spearmanship. Taking these into consideration, it was likely that Chu Feng had consumed a more potent forbidden medicine than Jiang Yuantai.

If so, Chu Feng would suffer a backlash sooner and more severely than Jiang Yuantai.

It was a fact that Jiang Yuantai had lost, but if they could prove that Chu Feng had consumed a more potent forbidden medicine, they could assert that Chu Feng had won unfairly. That was also the reason behind his words.

“You want to wait it out? Sure, let’s do that.”

Chu Feng crossed his legs and sat down.

Meanwhile, Jiang Yuantai glared intently at Chu Feng, not saying a word or moving at all. His gaze looked extremely terrifying. Anyone else would have been intimidated by Jiang Yuantai’s gaze, but Chu Feng was hardly fazed at all.

“What’s going on?”

Those from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect looked at each other.

Given their knowledge of their forbidden medicine, Chu Feng should have already suffered the backlash by now. Yet, his complexion still looked as glowing as ever. It didn’t seem like he was in pain at all.

“Wu!”

A while later, Jiang Yuantai let out a soft harrumph. A frown formed on his forehead, and he gritted his teeth. Beads of sweat flowed down his cheeks.

“Someone has indeed consumed forbidden medicine, but it isn’t my disciple but the young master of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect! So much for all his talk about having a fair duel. It turns out that he’s a hypocrite! I thought that it was weird how he suddenly became stronger in the middle of the duel, and it turns out he has been relying on the power of forbidden medicine all this while!” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist ridiculed.

“Shut up, you old thing!”

How could those from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect tolerate an outsider insulting their young master? They began berating the Ox-nosed Old Daoist. If not for Sima Xiangtu clearly telling them that he had a use for the Ox-nosed Old Daoist, they would have already made a move to kill him.

“Are you going to forbid others from telling the truth now? We’re all cultivators here. Do you really think that no one has noticed it?” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist replied nonchalantly.

He turned to the cultivators of the Nine Souls Galaxy around him and asked, “Everyone, don’t you think what I’ve said made sense? So much for being a powerhouse of the world of cultivation. A bunch of scums with no dignity at all, that’s what the Pill Dao Immortal Sect is!”

His words immediately won the approval of the crowd.

“Indeed, they are all shameless bastards!”

“Utterly disgusting. They put on white robes as if they are saints or something, but it turns out that they are worse than earthworms!”

“Hmph! I actually thought that Jiang Yuantai is really that talented, but it looks like he’s just a weakling desperate to prove himself.”

“Pui!”

All kinds of scoldings echoed in the air.

The cultivators of the Nine Souls Galaxy had already done all they could to beg for mercy in the past few days, but it was to no avail. Since they were going to die anyway, there was no reason for them to mince their words anymore. They hurled all kinds of nasty insults toward Jiang Yuantai and the others.

Jiang Yuantai and those from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect were displeased to hear that. Murderous intent began blazing from them.

They were only tolerating it so that Jiang Yuantai could prove himself, but if Jiang Yuantai’s loss was already confirmed, they would make sure that those who had humiliated them would pay a terrible price for it.

Chapter 5086: No One Can Save You

“Chu Feng, it seems like you can hold it in better than I thought. I’d like to see how long you can keep calm.”

Jiang Kongping kept his eyes firmly on Chu Feng. He knew how much his older brother cared for his pride, and that was also the reason why the latter

accepted Chu Feng's meaningless duel even when everyone from the Nine Souls Galaxy present was doomed to die.

Jiang Yuantai simply wanted to prove his strength.

However, the situation wasn't going according to Jiang Yuantai's plans. Thus, Jiang Kongping wanted to find a way to prove that his older brother didn't lose so as to make his older brother feel a little better.

"Hold it in? I didn't know that it was possible to hold in the backlash of forbidden medicine. You sure think of me as an incredible person!"

Chu Feng reached into his Cosmos Sack and took out a wooden container. He opened it up and showed it to Jiang Kongping.

"Take a good look, Jiang Kongping. Did I eat any of the three forbidden medicines you have?"

There were three pills in the wooden container, and that was all Jiang Kongping had in his Cosmos Sack.

"Impossible!"

Jiang Kongping was baffled to see the three pills. He was certain that Chu Feng had eaten the forbidden medicine, but the situation was telling him otherwise.

If Chu Feng had really consumed the forbidden medicine, he would have definitely suffered a backlash by now.

Jiang Taibai and the others also swiftly understood what was going on. It was finally apparent to them that Chu Feng hadn't consumed any of the forbidden medicine. He had defeated Jiang Yuantai with his own strength even when the latter had consumed a forbidden medicine.

But how in the world did Chu Feng become this powerful?

"How did you do it?" Jiang Yuantai finally spoke up after a long bout of silence.

He wanted to know how Chu Feng had won in this battle.

Shoosh shoosh!

Chu Feng brandished the sword in his hand.

“The fighting prowess you have displayed is a result of the spearmanship you have practiced; you should be clearer of that than anyone else. That day, under the pressure of your spearmanship, I comprehended a sword skill of my own. It’s just that I didn’t have time to fully develop it.

“However, over the last few days, I was able to fully master the sword skill. That’s also the reason why you aren’t a match for me anymore. I’m also glad that you have only consumed a forbidden medicine, or else the most I could have done was to force the match to a draw,” Chu Feng replied with a smile.

“It was the sword skill he grasped that day? He managed to develop it into such a formidable sword skill within such a short span of time?”

The cultivators from the Nine Souls Galaxy were shocked to hear those words. It sounded utterly ridiculous to them. In fact, even the Lady of Dao Sea and the others found it incredulous too.

“Hahaha!”

Jiang Yuantai suddenly burst into laughter. It had started out soft, but it swiftly crescendoed with an eerie undertone to it. Those listening to it felt a chill run down their spine.

“You’re truly a prodigy, Chu Feng. It’s no wonder my younger brother would lose to you. It’s just a pity that you’re dumber than a rock. If you had laid low, you might have just posed a threat to us many years from now. Yet, you foolishly chose to appear here for your so-called loyalty toward your friends. Do you even understand the situation you’re in?”

“Very well. Since you have chosen to come here on your own accord, it’d be rude of me to not reciprocate!” Jiang Yuantai said.

He revealed his murderous intent and released the suppression on his cultivation, causing it to recover back to rank eight Martial Exalted level. Clearly, he had already accepted his defeat and didn’t want to put on an act any longer.

He had decided to get rid of Chu Feng.

“Are you intending to go against our promise?” Chu Feng suddenly asked.

“Hahahahaha! How dumb must you be to ask the obvious? Did you really think that I would spare you if you defeated me? Well, if you begged me desperately after falling in defeat, I might have considered sparing you. But how could I allow someone who possesses as much talent as you to escape?”

Jiang Yuantai looked at Chu Feng as if he was a fool.

“I never thought that you would let me off. I just wanted to see how ugly you can get. It was right. You’re indeed a scum. Alright, I’m already done verifying whatever I want to. Let’s not waste any time and get along with it.”

Chu Feng nonchalantly shrugged with a smile on his lips, as if he had already accepted his death. His gesture looked incredibly provocative to Jiang Yuantai.

“Is Chu Feng out of his mind?!”

No one in the crowd could understand what Chu Feng was up to, even the Ox-nosed Old Daoist. They thought that Chu Feng was here to save his master and friends, but that didn’t look to be the case now. If Chu Feng had known that the Pill Dao Immortal Sect wouldn’t honor their promise, why did he even return here and challenge Jiang Yuantai to a duel?

It was no different from committing suicide!

“You dare to provoke me at a time like this? Do you want to die that much?” Jiang Yuantai spat through gritted teeth.

“Heh...”

Chu Feng’s smile widened, making no attempt to conceal the disdain he carried for Jiang Yuantai.

“Fine! I’ll fulfill your wish!”

Shoosh!

Jiang Yuantai thrust his palm toward Chu Feng’s neck with a speed so fast that he tore a hole through the fabric of space.

Pu!

Blood splattered all around, and the crowd fell silent yet again.

“!!!”

Even Jiang Taibai was in a state of disbelief after seeing what had happened.

Not only did Chu Feng dodge Jiang Yuantai's attack, but he had also used his sword to pierce Jiang Yuantai's left arm. One must know that Jiang Yuantai's cultivation was not at rank eight Martial Exalted level right now but rank nine Martial Exalted level. He had raised his cultivation by a single rank using his bloodline power.

Under normal circumstances, it should have been impossible for Chu Feng to even injure Jiang Yuantai. Yet, Chu Feng managed to do it, for he was also emanating the aura of a rank nine Martial Exalted level cultivator too!

“Chu Feng... did he manage to raise his cultivation level? But that's impossible! Isn't he at rank four Martial Exalted level? How could he raise his cultivation to rank eight Martial Exalted level within such a short period of time?!”

Everyone was astounded.

Chu Feng's current cultivation level was at rank nine Martial Exalted level, but Wang Yuxian and the others keenly noticed the Lightning Mark on his forehead, which told them that he had raised his cultivation by a rank too.

But they also knew that the Lightning Mark could only raise his cultivation by a single rank, which meant that Chu Feng's real cultivation level had reached rank eight Martial Exalted level! That meant that he was at the same level as Jiang Yuantai.

It was inconceivable to them how someone who was only at rank four Martial Exalted level could advance his cultivation by four ranks within such a short period of time, reaching rank eight Martial Exalted level.

Grar!

Jiang Yuantai let out a howl of defiance! A peculiar aura began seeping out of his body, granting him an additional level of Heaven-defying Battle Power.

Shoosh!

In response, Chu Feng swung his sword and easily severed Jiang Yuantai's arm. It turned out that he had manifested the Lightning Armor too, resulting in him gaining an additional level of Heaven-defying Battle Power too.

Given the same cultivation level, Jiang Yuantai wasn't a match for Chu Feng at all.

"Is that all you have? Since you were the one who first reneged on your promise, you shouldn't blame me for not showing mercy!" Chu Feng sneered.

He raised his sword up high, ready to take down Jiang Yuantai.

"Audacious!" a bellow suddenly sounded.

The earth shook and the sky tremored. A powerful oppressive might crushed down on Chu Feng.

Those from the Nine Souls Galaxy immediately knew that the situation had gone awry. The oppressive might had come from a Half-God level cultivator, and it was filled with killing intent.

It was from Jiang Taibai.

He was intending to take Chu Feng's life and end this farce. He had only held himself back because he knew that Jiang Yuantai would berate him for interfering in his affairs, but it was clear at this point that Jiang Yuantai wasn't a match for Chu Feng.

Given so, there was no way Jiang Taibai would allow Chu Feng to do as he pleased.

Boom!

Just as the oppressive might was about to reach Chu Feng, another loud explosion broke out. Following that, the surrounding space shook intensely. It was to the extent that even the gigantic Immortal Cauldron started to sway.

Many of the cultivators let out a pained groan under the impact, and the weaker ones even exploded into bits of flesh and blood.

Jiang Taibai's face paled. He knew very well what had just happened. His oppressive might had been deflected!



“What’s going on?”

The crowd swiftly noticed that something had happened, as shown by how Chu Feng was still alive. It seemed like someone had deflected Jiang Taibai’s attack.

But who could it be?

Did Chu Feng bring in a helper?

That was what the Lady of Dao Sea, the Godwish Grandmother, and the others were wondering. That was the only possibility in their minds.

“Why don’t you show yourself!” Jiang Taibai bellowed as he scanned the surroundings.

He also thought that Chu Feng must have brought in a powerful cultivator, and the powerful cultivator was the one who deflected his earlier attack.

“Heh...”

Chu Feng suddenly sneered at this moment. He raised his sword and impaled Jiang Yuantai’s neck.

“You bastard!”

Seeing that Chu Feng actually dared to hurt Jiang Yuantai, Jiang Taibai raised his hand and manifested a humongous ten-thousand meters large golden palm that swiftly fell upon Chu Feng.

Boom!

But the golden palm made out of martial power crumbled as soon as it came close to Chu Feng.

“That is!!!”

Jiang Taibai’s eyes widened in horror. He saw a layer of black gaseous flame appearing around Chu Feng. It was the black gaseous flame that had deflected his golden palm.

The black gaseous flame gave off a sinister aura that left him feeling incredibly unnerved.

Boom!

The black gaseous flame began to expand, swiftly forming a humongous sphere that spanned a diameter of over tens of thousands of meters. It sealed off the surroundings as if a black formation, completely isolating Chu Feng and Jiang Yuantai from the rest of the world.

Fear showed in Jiang Yuantai's eyes for the first time.

Chu Feng looked at him and sneered, "Unless I choose to spare you, no one can save you today."

Chapter 5087: Cornered

"What kind of terrifying power is this?"

The crowd couldn't help but shudder in fear looking at the barrier made out of black gaseous flames surrounding Chu Feng and Jiang Yuantai. It was an instinctive response arising from the malevolent nature of the black gaseous flame.

It felt like a force that had come not from hell.

"It's asura power. Did Chu Feng find a treasure made out of asura power?" the Godwish Grandmother suggested.

Her words snapped the crowd out of their daze.

The black gaseous flame was indeed asura power, just that it was so powerful that it didn't occur to them right away.

"Is it a treasure from the Asura Spirit World? Or does it mean that Chu Feng has..." Sima Xiangtu murmured with an uneasy frown.

Prince Brightsun had told him earlier that Chu Feng had entered the Asura Graveyard but died in the hellfire. Chu Feng had clearly somehow survived the hellfire, but it should have still been impossible for him to obtain the power of the Asura Graveyard.

He knew that because Yaoyao didn't wield such power.

Yet, Chu Feng returned stronger than ever, and he even formed a powerful barrier made out of asura power. He had no choice but to think that this was

related to the Asura Evil Spirits of the Asura Graveyard, and he knew just how terrifying they were.

With such thoughts in mind, he contemplatively lowered his gaze.

Shoosh!

Chu Feng raised his leg and stomped Jiang Yuantai down from the sky onto the ground. The sheer impact of the fall created a massive crater in the ground, and dust flew all over the place.

The crowd squinted their eyes to look through the dust, and they saw Chu Feng crushing Jiang Yuantai's chest with his leg. To be exact, Chu Feng wasn't just pinning Jiang Yuantai down but literally crushing his ribcage, putting him in a pitiful plight.

At the same time, Chu Feng pointed the sword in his hand at Jiang Yuantai.

Faced with such a situation, Jiang Yuantai's body froze up. Jiang Kongping was stunned too. This scene was familiar to the two of them because they had seen it in the prophecy. Everything had really unraveled according to the prophecy!

"Chu Feng, if you dare touch our young master, I'll guarantee that none of you will be leaving this place alive!" Jiang Taibai hollered.

An aura seeped out of his body, and his cultivation rose from rank two Half-God to rank three Half-God.

"You speak as if you would have spared me otherwise," Chu Feng sneered.

Without any hesitation, he plunged his sword into Jiang Yuantai's eye.

"You bastard!"

Jiang Taibai whipped out an Exalted Armament saber and swung it down.

Boom!

Golden light irradiated the world. A massive martial power saber that was tens of thousands of meters in length fell from the clouds to hack Chu Feng down.

Boom!

Yet, similar to the earlier golden palm, this powerful strike shattered upon contact with the barrier of black gaseous flame.

“My gosh! Even an attack of this caliber is unable to breach the barrier?”

The crowd was conflicted looking at the dissipated golden fragments falling from the sky. They couldn't clearly perceive Jiang Taibai's earlier attack, but they did feel the terrifying aura behind it. It was so powerful that they had no doubt that it would have taken their lives if it was directed toward them.

Yet, it couldn't faze the barrier of gaseous black flame at all!

Wu!

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist suddenly let out a groan.

It turned out that one of the Half-God level elders of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect had discreetly made his way over to the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's side to stab his body.

“Chu Feng, release our young master right now or else I'll kill your master!” the elder shouted.

Chu Feng glanced at the elder. He didn't say a word, but the viciousness in his eyes deepened.

Pu!

He pushed his sword through Jiang Yuantai's dantian.

“Stop!!!”

Those from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect were horrified.

“Step away from my master right away, or else I'll take his life!” Chu Feng said menacingly.

The elder was conflicted. He was hoping to force Chu Feng to release Jiang Yuantai by holding the Ox-nosed Old Daoist hostage, but it only prompted him to inflict harm on Jiang Yuantai instead. The vicious look on Chu Feng's face made it clear that he wasn't just joking around.

So, he quickly released the Ox-nosed Old Daoist and backed away.

“Chu Feng, don’t hurt my older brother anymore!” Jiang Kongping suddenly spoke up.

Upon hearing that request, Chu Feng pulled his blade out of Jiang Yuantai’s dantian.

“Jiang Kongping, you pleaded for my behalf that day. I’d have killed your older brother otherwise no matter what anyone else said, but since you have spoken up, I’ll spare him for today. Go and treat your older brother.”

Chu Feng dissipated the barrier of gaseous black flames with a wave of his hand before throwing Jiang Yuantai toward Jiang Kongping.

“This...”

The cultivators of the Nine Souls Galaxy were stunned. Chu Feng’s actions were utterly incomprehensible to them. He could have used Jiang Yuantai as a hostage to force the Pill Dao Immortal Sect into submission, but instead, he actually gave Jiang Yuantai back to them.

He even dissipated the barrier of gaseous black flames that was protecting him. Wasn’t he asking to be killed?

Those from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect were perplexed too. They had no idea what Chu Feng was up to. Nevertheless, they dared not to carelessly make a move upon recalling what he had done thus far.

Shoosh!

While everyone was trying to figure out Chu Feng’s intention, Jiang Taibai waved his hand and conjured a golden object from his hand. It was originally extremely small, but it swiftly enlarged into a thousand-meters-tall golden gate.

The golden gate opened, and countless silhouettes darted out from within.

“This is bad!”

The cultivators of the Nine Souls Galaxy despaired upon seeing the figures coming out from the golden gate. They were all members of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect, and every single one of them was extremely powerful.

There were several hundred Half-God level cultivators amongst them and countless more Martial Exalted level cultivators.

All in all, they numbered more than a million.

With the appearance of this army of million cultivators, Sima Xiangtu's puppet army suddenly didn't seem like a big deal anymore.

All of them quickly formed a tight encirclement around Chu Feng.

"Spit it out! What is the power you have just used?" Jiang Taibai questioned.

It turned out that they were only sparing Chu Feng for the time being in order to find out what he had been through and the means he had acquired.

"What if I refuse to speak?" Chu Feng answered.

"Hmph!"

Jiang Taibai harrumphed coldly. He glanced at the army of cultivators and ordered, "Set up the formation!"

The million cultivators of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect immediately got into position and quickly started setting up a formation. Even Jiang Taibai also joined in as well. Within moments, a massive net made out of blinding golden light covered the sky, trapping Chu Feng and the cultivators of the Nine Souls Galaxy within.

The cultivators of the Nine Souls Galaxy, including the Godwish Grandmother and the Lady of Dao Sea, fell in despair upon seeing the massive formation. They could sense just how powerful the formation was.

"What's this? Are you trying to put up a performance?"

However, Chu Feng remained fearless.

"Chu Feng, take a good look at the situation you're in. You're already cornered. If you obediently follow our orders, we might still consider sparing you from a world of pain," Jiang Taibai said.

"Cornered?" Chu Feng remarked with a chuckle.

Then, his eyes suddenly turned sharp.

Boom!

There was a loud explosion as Chu Feng suddenly morphed into a surge of gaseous black flame and dashed straight at the golden formation constructed by the million cultivators of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect. The golden formation hardly put up any fight against the sheer destruction might of the gaseous black flame, shattering almost right away.

“How is that possible?”

The crowd was dumbfounded. The terrifying golden formation was actually torn apart by Chu Feng as if it was just a flimsy piece of paper.

While everyone was stunned by the situation, a massive spirit formation gate opened up in front of Chu Feng. The next moment, everyone began shuddering out of fear.

Countless figures darted out from the spirit formation gate, and every single one of them carried an intimidating aura. To make things worse, there were more than ten million of them. The Asura World Spirit Army swiftly spread out and covered the entire sky.

They were superior to the Pill Dao Immortal Sect’s army of million cultivators, be it in terms of physique, aura or number of troops. It took mere moments for them to completely surround them.

Standing before the terrifying Asura World Spirit Army, the crowd suddenly found it hard to breathe. They didn’t even dare to mutter a word at all. Such was the case for the previously arrogant members of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect too.

While everyone was shuddering in fear, Chu Feng’s voice broke the silence.

“Jiang Taibai, who did you say was cornered?”

Chapter 5088: Making Peace

“He actually managed to do it...”

Sima Xiangtu’s face was ashen. He knew that there was such a possibility, but he still found it hard to accept.

“Are these the Asura Evil Spirits of the Asura Graveyard? Such a powerful army actually submitted to Chu Feng?”

Those from the Nine Souls Sacred Clan and the cultivators of the Nine Souls Galaxy looked at Chu Feng in a mixture of awe and fear. They could feel for themselves just how powerful the Asura World Spirit Army was, and they knew what it meant for Chu Feng to become the master of such an army.

Even Wang Yuxian, the Godwish Grandmother, the Lady of Dao Sea, and the others were startled by the sight of the Asura World Spirit Army, let alone the others.

Prince Brightsun, who was hiding inside Sima Xiangtu’s palace, was already scared out of his wits.

“How did it turn out like this? Chu Feng actually made Lord Father and the others submit to him?”

Prince Brightsun felt like someone had clubbed him on the back of his head, causing his mind to go woozy. He could tell that the Asura Evil Spirits had reverted back to Asura World Spirits, and the only way that could have happened was for them to have submitted to Chu Feng.

But Chu Feng was only a junior! He might be talented, but he was just a junior!

Prince Brightsun thought that he was at least on par with Chu Feng, so what rights did the latter have to make the Asura World Spirit Army submit to him?

He couldn’t make sense of it.

Nevertheless, he glanced at Sima Xiangtu and murmured, “I’m sorry, master. I have to at least protect myself.”

He took out a teleportation talisman and crushed it. Spirit power swiftly suffused him, and he was teleported out of the Nine Souls Sacred Clan. He was out of Chu Feng’s surveillance area, and the teleportation was done discreetly, such that Chu Feng didn’t notice Prince Brightsun.

Rather, Chu Feng’s eyes were focused on a single person—Sima Xiangtu.

That was a person he definitely couldn’t spare.



Shoosh shoosh shoosh.

Numerous Asura World Spirits made a move at the same time, each of them heading for Sima Xiangtu, Jiang Taibai, Jiang Kongping, Jiang Yuantai, and the key figures of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect.

In order to ensure that nothing went awry, the strongest Asura King was sent over to deal with Jiang Taibai. Just like that, those from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect were suppressed.

“That person over there deserves death.”

Chu Feng glanced at the elder of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect. He was the one who had plunged a dagger into the Ox-nosed Old Daoist in order to force Chu Feng to spare Jiang Yuantai.

In fact, if Chu Feng hadn't been vicious enough to impale Jiang Yuantai's dantian right away, that elder would have likely killed the Ox-nosed Old Daoist and proceeded on with the Godwish Grandmother and the others, judging from the murderous aura he had emanated back then.

That was the moment that Chu Feng placed that elder into his kill list.

An Asura World Spirit was already standing right behind that elder, and it was a person whom Chu Feng was familiar with—Lord Yunliang.

As soon as Chu Feng said those words, Lord Yunliang raised his blade and decapitated that elder.

“You...”

The cultivators of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect immediately responded with outrage, but before they could retaliate, a powerful oppressive might suddenly swept across the area.

Boom!

It was from the Asura King. He was still standing next to Jiang Taibai, but his oppressive might was more than enough to control the situation. He wouldn't hesitate to decimate anyone who dared to move carelessly within his sphere of control.

That effectively extinguished the anger of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect. Faced with such absolute force, they had no choice but to reassess the situation.

One, they were in a disadvantageous position and wouldn't stand a chance in a confrontation at all.

Two, Chu Feng was no timid soul. He wouldn't hesitate to kill any of them if they dared to pull anything. The elder who was killed without any hesitation just a moment ago was the perfect example.

"Someone is indeed cornered today, but I'm afraid that it isn't me," Chu Feng glanced at Jiang Taibai and said.

"Chu Feng, you shouldn't underestimate us. Young master Yuantai and young master Kongping's father is our Pill Dao Immortal Sect's Lord Jingyu. If you dare to mess around, I can tell you that none of your friends will get away scot-free!" Jiang Taibai spat.

It was just that those words didn't sound so threatening given the situation they were in. Even the members of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect weren't convinced by it, let alone Chu Feng.

Chu Feng burst out into laughter.

"Jiang Taibai, it looks like there's something wrong with your head. Do you really not know why I'm here today? If not for you attempting to massacre my master and the others, I wouldn't have to resort to this in the first place," Chu Feng spat.

"You're wrong, Chu Feng," Jiang Kongping suddenly spoke up. "The one who wants to kill your master and the others has always been Sima Xiangtu and not us. Otherwise, I wouldn't have pleaded on your behalf back when my older brother tried to kill you.

"Our Pill Dao Immortal Sect had only helped Sima Xiangtu due to a promise we have made. Similarly, if we had been in a partnership with you, Chu Feng, instead, we would have unconditionally helped you deal with your enemies regardless of whether we had a grudge against them or not. These are the principles that our sect abides by," Jiang Kongping said.

"I won't deny your principles or your stance, but they don't make a difference to me. From my perspective, all of you deserve death," Chu Feng replied.

“You’re right. We chose to become your enemy by helping Sima Xiangtu. However, Chu Feng, you have also killed an elder of our Pill Dao Immortal Sect. I believe that makes things equal between us. Besides, just like what Jiang Taibai said, if you massacre all of us today, my father won’t let you off. You might be able to escape, but will the others be able to do the same?”

“That’s why I would like to make a proposal. Why don’t we just call it quits here and bury the hatchet? Let’s not cross paths ever again in the future,” Jiang Kongping said.

“Can I take your word for it? I think that you’re a trustworthy person, Jiang Kongping, but I don’t trust your older brother, your father, and anyone else in your Pill Dao Immortal Sect,” Chu Feng said.

“Chu Feng, if you spare us today, I guarantee that our Pill Dao Immortal Sect won’t make things difficult for you,” Jiang Kongping said.

Chu Feng fell silent upon hearing those words.

He had no doubt that Jiang Kongping’s father would indeed exact vengeance on him if he massacred Jiang Kongping and the others here today. Besides, it was a fact that Jiang Kongping had saved his life. He could kill everyone else without any hesitation, but his principles wouldn’t allow him to do the same to Jiang Kongping.

After weighing the pros and cons, Chu Feng eventually came to a decision.

“Jiang Kongping, are you able to speak on behalf of everyone in the Pill Dao Immortal Sect?”

Chu Feng shot a glance at Jiang Yuantai and Jiang Taibai as he said those words.

Jiang Kongping lifted his hand up, revealing a glowing golden token. Inscribed on the token was the anime ‘Jingyu’.

“Members of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect, tell Chu Feng whether my words count or not!” Jiang Kongping roared.

His question was answered by deafening voices.

“We’ll listen to young master Kongping’s orders!”

That was the response from the million cultivators of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect.

“Very well, Jiang Kongping. I’ll spare everyone on your account. Let’s call it quits and bury the hatchet. If you can uphold your promise, I won’t hold this matter against the Pill Dao Immortal Sect anymore. However, I want to make it clear that if you dare go after me or my friends, I’ll make sure that you pay the price,” Chu Feng said.

“Brother Chu Feng, you can rest assured. If any of my men dare to make a move against you and your friends, I’ll execute him myself. If I am unable to do so, you’re free to take my life,” Jiang Kongping said.

“Sounds good to me. Let’s settle things with that then. However, I definitely cannot spare that person over there.”

Chu Feng turned his sights toward Sima Xiangtu.

“Lord Taibai, young master Kongping, s-save me! Save me!”

Sima Xiangtu anxiously pleaded with Jiang Taibai and Jiang Kongping. Jiang Taibai turned to look at Jiang Kongping, a gesture indicating that he would listen to Jiang Kongping’s order on this matter.

“Brother Chu Feng, if you don’t mind, I’d like to say something about Sima Xiangtu,” Jiang Kongping said.

Chu Feng frowned upon hearing those words.

“If you’re going to plead on his behalf, don’t bother,” he said with a cold voice.

His intent was clear. He wouldn’t spare Sima Xiangtu regardless of what anyone else said.

Jiang Kongping chuckled softly and said, “Sima Xiangtu is an utterly repulsive excuse of a human being. I’m ashamed that our Pill Dao Immortal Sect had to work with someone like that. Since our values diverge, there’s no reason for us to continue our partnership. I hereby declare that the partnership between our Pill Dao Immortal Sect and Sima Xiangtu is severed!

“Brother Chu Feng, as a show of sincerity, I’m more than willing to deal with that old scoundrel Sima however you want to on your behalf,” Jiang Kongping said.

He drew his weapon and began walking toward Sima Xiangtu.

This outright betrayal left Sima Xiangtu completely stunned.

Chapter 5089: Sima Xiangtu’s Hand

“Hahaha…”

Sima Xiangtu suddenly burst into laughter. His voice that was tinged in indignance and rage felt unnerving.

Chu Feng kept his eyes on Sima Xiangtu. The absence of Yao Cheng and the 32 puppets, which he hadn’t been able to confirm the cultivation of, had not gone past his notice. While Sima Xiangtu appeared to be a goner given the current situation, he didn’t dare to make light of the man.

He didn’t order the Asura World Spirit Army to eliminate Sima Xiangtu thus far because he thought that it would be letting the latter off light, but he made sure to order the Asura King to keep a close eye on him.

“The Pill Dao Immortal Sect is indeed untrustworthy. It’s one thing for you not to protect me, but you actually chose to side with Chu Feng to deal with me? You’ll regret your decision today.”

Spirit power appeared around Sima Xiangtu.

“Elder, do it!” Chu Feng ordered the Asura King.

Weng! n@**VE.LB**.In

The Asura King immediately exerted his powerful oppressive might that could easily crush Sima Xiangtu into bits, but for some reason, it wasn’t reaching the latter at all. The spirit power had formed a barrier around Sima Xiangtu to protect him.

“Chu Feng, don’t underestimate me. The trash of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect is nothing more than my chess pieces. We’ll meet again.”

Sima Xiangtu shot a look at Chu Feng before vanishing into thin air. Disappearing with him was Chu Feng's master, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

"Damn it!"

Chu Feng cursed with a livid look on his face.

He did expect Sima Xiangtu to have prepared an escape plan, but he didn't think that the latter would actually be able to successfully escape right under the eyelid of the Asura King. Most important of all, he even took the Ox-nosed Old Daoist with him.

"Chase him! Find that man at all costs!" the Asura King ordered.

The Asura World Spirit Army immediately dispersed to search for Sima Xiangtu, but Chu Feng knew that it was futile. There was no way Sima Xiangtu would be so careless as to get himself caught right after making his escape.

"That Sima scoundrel actually had such a treasure on him. You must be careful, Chu Feng. Based on what I know, Sima Xiangtu possesses exceptional talent. It's only a matter of time before he makes a comeback," Jiang Kongping walked over to Chu Feng's side and said.

"Talent?"

Chu Feng was taken aback to hear those words.

He conceded that Sima Xiangtu was indeed a cunning man, but he didn't think that the latter was particularly talented. Otherwise, he should have already reached Half-God level at his age.

"I understand your astonishment, but Sima Xiangtu is far more talented than you expect."

Jiang Kongping shared the astonishing result of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect's talent assessment treasure with Chu Feng.

"Is what you said true?" Chu Feng asked in disbelief.

"Brother Chu Feng, I have no reason to lie to you about this. Despite Sima Xiangtu's unassuming appearance, he has many means in his possession.

He's not someone we can underestimate. It'll be best for you to tread carefully," Jiang Kongping said.

"I'll be careful of Sima Xiangtu, but I'm more worried about your Pill Dao Immortal Sect," Chu Feng replied.

"Brother Chu Feng, allow me to tell you something."

Jiang Kongping told Chu Feng about how all of them present here had already left the Pill Dao Immortal Sect. He could only guarantee that their group of people wouldn't be hostile toward Chu Feng, but he couldn't say the same about the rest in the Pill Dao Immortal Sect.

Even Jiang Kongping's father didn't have the power to interfere in the affairs of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect anymore.

"Brother Kongping, I want to make it clear here that I'm not afraid of trouble. I could have killed all of you here, but I chose not to do so because I don't want to kill you," Chu Feng said.

"Brother Chu Feng, you don't have to say anything more. We might have phrased it as a ceasefire, but I'm aware that you have spared our lives today on my account. I guess this conflict did bring us closer together. I do admire you as a person, and I trust that you can feel it too. Putting all things aside, I already see you as a friend," Jiang Kongping said.

The two of them chatted together a little, and Jiang Taibai even joined in for a while.

Chu Feng was hoping to gather more information about Sima Xiangtu from them since the latter had taken the Ox-nosed Old Daoist together with him, but unfortunately, they had no idea where Sima Xiangtu could have gone.

This left Chu Feng feeling incredibly insecure. He wasn't afraid of Sima Xiangtu exacting vengeance on him, but he was worried about his master's safety.

**Martial God Asura #Chapter 5090: The Awakened God -  
Read Martial God Asura Chapter 5090: The Awakened  
God**

## Chapter 5090: The Awakened God

While Chu Feng was saving the crowd with the Asura World Spirit Army, a huge incident broke out in the Monstrous Spirit Clan.

All Monstrous Spirit Clansmen were gathered in front of the stone sculpture they had worshiped for tens of thousands of years now with complicated looks in their eyes. More specifically, they were staring at the pendant worn by the stone sculpture.

They noticed that there was some kind of fluid contained inside the pendant, filling it to the brim. On top of that, the pendant was glowing as brightly as the sun.

The Monstrous Spirit Clansmen had no idea what was going on, but they had a feeling that this was an omen that something huge was going to happen.

Kacha!

Kacha!

Cracks started appearing on the stone sculpture.

“Lord Clan Chief, what’s going on?”

The Monstrous Spirit Clansmen turned to the Monstrous Spirit Clan’s Clan Chief in panic. The Monstrous Spirit Clan’s Clan Chief quickly stepped forward and attempted to stop the stone sculpture from cracking open.

Boom!

However, before the Monstrous Spirit Clan’s Clan Chief could get close to the stone sculpture, a powerful surge of energy suddenly burst out of the stone sculpture. It sent the Monstrous Spirit Clan’s Clan Chief flying into the crowd, knocking down those who were in her path.

By the time she managed to curb the force, she realized that all of the clansmen whom she had knocked down had all lost their lives. She herself had also suffered severe muscle tears and bone fractures.

“Lord Clan Chief!!”



The Monstrous Spirit Clansmen quickly rushed forward to treat the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief, but it only made them tear up out of nervousness. The injuries of the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief were so severe that it was impossible to heal her up.

"T-that is..."

One of the clansmen looked at the sculpture and gasped in horror. The crowd quickly followed suit, and their faces swiftly paled too.

The sculpture had completely crumbled, and a figure now stood in its place. It was an average-looking middle-aged man with an appearance identical to the stone sculpture, just that he was made out of flesh and blood.

That alerted the Monstrous Spirit Clansmen to a possibility so frightening that all of them found themselves at a loss for words.

The middle-aged man stretched his body a little before finally reaching for the pendant hanging around his neck. Then, his lips curled into a smile.

"It's indeed that brat? I haven't waited in vain," the middle-aged man said.

Despite his appearance, his voice was hoarse like an old man.

"Milord, i-is it you? Did you come back to life?" the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief asked feebly.

The current situation was inconceivable to her, but she couldn't think of any other possibility here.

"I have never died. I have been here all along," the middle-aged man replied.

"Milord, if you have been here all along, why didn't you say a word over all of these years? Were you bound by the stone sculpture?" the Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief asked concernedly.

"You must be joking. Did you think that the poison concocted by your Monstrous Spirit Clan could curb me? I petrified myself of my own will," the middle-aged man replied.

"You petrified yourself? W-why?"

The Monstrous Spirit Clan's Clan Chief and the others couldn't understand why the middle-aged man would do such a thing.

"Since I have time to spare, I'll at least fulfill your curiosity before sending you on your way."

The middle-aged man first looked at the sky before he sat down on the floor and looked at the Monstrous Spirit Clansmen.

"It was under the guidance of a master that I came here back then. The master told me to look for the Monstrous Spirit Clan and await the arrival of a junior who would aid me in mastering my divine skill. Everything that I did back then was in accordance with the master's instructions, including constructing the puppet army for you.

"The master calculated two possibilities for me. If the Monstrous Spirit Clan was thankful for my help and welcomed me with the utmost cordiality, I would be able to meet that junior much earlier, and the Monstrous Spirit Clan would achieve an unprecedented level of prosperity. But obviously, your Monstrous Spirit Clan was too foolish to enjoy such a blessing," the middle-aged man sneered.

The Monstrous Spirit Clansmen showed looks of guilt. They knew that they had done the middle-aged man injustice back then.

"That master told me that if the Monstrous Spirit Clan knows not of gratitude and allows greed to get the better of them, I might not be able to meet the junior. Fortunately, he imparted me with an alternative method should such a situation occur. He told me to turn into a stone sculpture, and that would aid me in staying safe and recuperating from my injuries. Most important of all, I'd eventually meet the junior, though it would take much longer.

"I didn't think it would take that long, but I wouldn't have recovered if not for that. After all, I nearly died back then."

A deep smile formed on the middle-aged man's lips.

"I'm glad that my patience paid off."

He lifted his pendant up to examine it once more. He was delighted by the changes that had happened with the pendant.

“Milord, is the person you’re waiting for Chu Feng?” the Monstrous Spirit Clan’s Clan Chief asked.

“Chu Feng? I won’t know until I meet him in person, but I reckon... it should be him?” the middle-aged man replied.

“Milord, you mentioned that he can help you master your divine skill, but Chu Feng is only a Martial Exalted level cultivator. How would he be able to help you?” the Monstrous Spirit Clan’s Clan Chief asked.

“How else? By taking his talent and life, of course,” the middle-aged man replied.

The faces of the Monstrous Spirit Clan’s Clan Chief and the others paled.

Even though they had worshiped this middle-aged man for many years, they also thought that Chu Feng was a decent person too. They couldn’t bear the thought of him being sacrificed by the middle-aged man as fodder for the latter’s divine skill.

That being said, none of them voiced their opposition toward the middle-aged man’s decision. It went without saying that the middle-aged man was more important to them than Chu Feng. After all, they had worshiped this middle-aged man for countless years, and their reverence toward him was unshakable.

“It’s about time. I need to go now.”

The middle-aged man rose to his feet, but as he did so, he casually waved his hand toward the Monstrous Spirit Clansmen.

Bam!

Bam!

Bam!

Countless dull thuds echoed.

The Monstrous Spirit Clan’s Clan Chief stared at the sight before her in utmost shock. She was still alive, but she was completely covered in blood. Not only so, but a massive puddle of blood had also formed around her.

It was the blood of her clansmen.

With just a single strike from the middle-aged man, all Monstrous Spirit Clansmen, with the exception of her, had all been reduced to blood water.

“Milord, i-is this your doing?”

The Monstrous Spirit Clan’s Clan Chief looked at the middle-aged man with a look of disbelief. It was a redundant question since she had witnessed it with her own eyes, but she was unable to accept it.

“Who else could it be other than me?” the middle-aged man replied nonchalantly.

“Milord, you... But why?! Since you were conscious all this while, you should have known how much we worship you. Even if our ancestors have done your injustice, none of us here have shown the slightest disrespect toward you!” the Monstrous Spirit Clan’s Clan Chief exclaimed in despair.

The Monstrous Spirit Clan revered the middle-aged man as their god, but their god had now massacred them all.

“You’re right. It’s your ancestors who deserve to die. But I can’t exact vengeance on them now that they are all already dead, so I can only vent my anger on their descendants. You shouldn’t be blaming me for this. You should be blaming your ancestors for their greed instead.”

The middle-aged man waved his hand once more, and the Monstrous Spirit Clan’s Clan Chief was reduced to a puddle of blood too.

With that, the Monstrous Spirit Clan had gone completely extinct.

Despite having reduced so many beautiful ladies into a massive puddle of blood, the middle-aged man didn’t look fazed in the least. Instead, his attention was on the pendant around his neck.

“Chu Feng, is it? The time is ripe. You’re next.”

With those words, the middle-aged man disappeared into thin air.

Chapter 5091: Sima Xiangtu’s Final Step

The Asura World Spirit Army had combed the vicinity of the Nine Souls Sacred Clan, but they were unable to find Sima Xiangtu.

Meanwhile, the Pill Dao Immortal Sect had retreated from the Nine Souls Galaxy, taking the Immortal Cauldron back with them.

Chu Feng knew that the Immortal Cauldron was a formidable treasure and had wanted to take it for himself, but he had already made peace with the Pill Dao Immortal Sect and didn't want to renege on his promise with Jiang Kongping and the others. Naturally, this meant that he couldn't take the Immortal Cauldron from them.

The Pill Dao Immortal Sect definitely wouldn't have allowed him to have the Immortal Cauldron.

In truth, this negotiation was a bet that the Pill Dao Immortal Sect knew of gratitude and wouldn't turn their backs on them in the future. He was hoping that his show of kindness would at least reduce his number of enemies by one.

There was no doubt that it was a risky bet, but he chose to go on with it due to the favor Jiang Kongping had shown him back then. He would have died to Jiang Yuantai if Jiang Kongping hadn't pleaded on his behalf.

If not for that, he would have simply killed everyone from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect.

It was Chu Feng's nature to prioritize relationships over benefits.

At this very moment, those from the Pill Dao Immortal Sect had boarded a warship and entered an ancient teleportation formation under Jiang Taibai and Jiang Kongping's command.

"Hmph! That Chu Feng doesn't know that there's a much larger world out there than what he sees! He was just lucky to have grasped control over a bunch of evil spirits. What rights does he have to negotiate with us? Just wait till Lord Lingtian arrives! I bet he'll be scared witless!"

"In any case, we really have young master Kongping to thank. If not for young master Kongping, that Chu Feng definitely wouldn't have let us off!"

The members of the Pill Dao Immortal Sect praised Jiang Kongping while insulting Chu Feng. Despite their vicious words, they were feeling deeply relieved that they had managed to escape from that near-death situation.

“Who told you that I was lying to Chu Feng?” Jiang Kongping questioned with a hostile voice.

That stunned everyone on the warship.

They thought that the negotiation was nothing more than a ploy to placate Chu Feng, but it was clear now that Jiang Kongping had different thoughts from theirs.

“Kongping, you can’t possibly be intending to make peace with Chu Feng just like that? Didn’t you see what he did to me? I nearly got my cultivation crippled!”

Jiang Yuantai stood up and glared at Jiang Kongping with eyes blazing with fury. He was displeased that his younger brother was siding with a stranger here.

Jiang Kongping was actually afraid of Jiang Yuantai, especially when the latter was angry. However, he bucked up his courage this time around to face Jiang Yuantai.

“Big brother, let this go on my account. Your grudge with Chu Feng started because of me. Don’t try to exact vengeance on him anymore,” Jiang Kongping said.

“This matter is now between Chu Feng and me. It has nothing to do with you anymore,” Jiang Yuantai replied.

“Big brother, as long as you’re willing to let this matter go, I’ll cultivate just as you have requested of me,” Jiang Kongping said.

Jiang Yuantai widened his eyes in surprise. He was initially determined not to let Chu Feng go, but his determination wavered upon hearing those words.

Even Jiang Taibai and the others also turned to look at Jiang Kongping in a mixture of astonishment and delight.

“Kongping, are you serious about this?” Jiang Yuantai asked after a moment of silence.

“Big brother, I mean what I say. If I can’t fulfill my promise, you can do whatever you like. However, if I manage to hold to my promise, I hope that you won’t cause any trouble to Chu Feng anymore. This includes all of us,” Jiang Kongping said.

“Very well. Since you’re willing to go this far, I’ll let this matter go on your account.”

Jiang Yuantai walked up to Jiang Kongping and embraced him tightly.

“Kongping, your feelings for Chu Feng don’t seem to be just admiration. You like him, don’t you? I never thought that there would be a person in the world who could induce such a change in you,” Jiang Yuantai spoke with a heartened smile.

It was such an abrupt change in mood as if the humiliation he suffered from Chu Feng was nothing compared to this.

Jiang Taibai and the others were also delighted by the turn of events.

Everything else was of lesser importance compared to Jiang Kongping taking his cultivation seriously.

“This is not a decision I’m making because of Chu Feng. Big brother, didn’t you tell me that God’s Era has already started? I don’t know whether I’m the one who’ll reach godhood, but I hope to make a name for myself in this era,” Jiang Kongping said.

“Kongping, you have finally thought things through. I’m proud of you.”

Jiang Yuantai burst into hearty laughter. He was very satisfied with Jiang Kongping’s response.

...

While the Pill Dao Immortal Sect was retreating from the Nine Souls Galaxy, a powerful formation was activated in one of the Nine Souls Galaxy’s Lower Realms.

Within the formation were the 32 puppets whose cultivation Chu Feng was unable to see through. They were accompanied by the traitor of the Monstrous Spirit Clan, Yao Cheng.

All of a sudden, a concealment formation was released, and another person appeared in the Lower Realm. It was Sima Xiangtu.

“Xiangtu, you came faster than I thought. Did everything go well?”

Yao Cheng quickly rushed up to Sima Xiangtu with eyes filled with affection.

“I underestimated Chu Feng. Chu Feng managed to grasp control of the Asura Graveyard’s Asura World Spirit Army. It’s fortunate that I had a protection talisman I acquired from an ancient remnant, or else I would have lost my life,” Sima Xiangtu harrumphed.

“What?! Are you injured, Xiangtu?”

Yao Cheng anxiously examined Sima Xiangtu’s body for injuries.

“I’m fine.”

Sima Xiangtu turned his sights toward the 32 puppets.

“It looks like they have been completed,” he said with a delighted smile.

“Really?” Yao Cheng asked with a tinge of joy.

She couldn’t comprehend the formation even though she had been guarding it all this while. She was only doing it in accordance with Sima Xiangtu’s request.

“Look, the color of the puppets has changed. This shows that they have been completed. All that’s left is one last step to unseal their powers. As long as I do it, Chu Feng’s Asura World Spirit Army will be nothing before me!” Sima Xiangtu spoke gleefully.

“That’s wonderful! Xiangtu, I knew that you would be able to do it. What’s the final step?” Yao Cheng asked.

“You’re the final step,” Sima Xiangtu said.

“Me?”



Yao Cheng was stunned.

Pu!

A sharp pain suddenly assaulted her dantian. Sima Xiangtu had penetrated her dantian with his hand while her guard was down. There was a formation in his palm that sapped her bloodline power.

Chapter 5092: The Man Who Knocked Back a God

Yao Cheng was stunned.

“Xiangtu, what are you doing?!”

She couldn't believe what was happening was real. Never in her wildest dreams did she think that Sima Xiangtu would harm her.

Sima Xiangtu took in her reaction and burst into laughter.

“Yao Cheng, take a look in the mirror. There's not a single person in the Monstrous Spirit Clan who is uglier than you. Why do you think I approached you at all? It's simply because your naivety and bloodline are useful to me.

“You might be ugly, but you have the most potent bloodline in the Monstrous Spirit Clan. Even your clan chief pales in comparison to you. My puppet army is constructed using this Celestial Master's Army Seal, but its core is still centered around your clan's bloodline power.

“These 32 puppets possess cultivation comparable to a rank six Half-God level cultivator, but I have made them so powerful that I was unable to complete them myself. I require a catalyst in order to push for their completion, and the catalyst is none other than your blood,” Sima Xiangtu said.

“Were you... lying... to me from the very start? You have never fancied me, not even for an instant?” Yao Cheng asked with tears in her eyes.

“I acknowledge your talent, but there's no way I could possibly fancy an ugly freak like you. I pray that you'll be smarter in your next life.”

There was a faint smile on Sima Xiangtu's lips from the start to the end, but his eyes were glowing with viciousness. It didn't take long before Yao Cheng breathed her last and collapsed to the ground as a withered corpse.

Through the catalyst of Yao Cheng's blood, the formation in Sima Xiangtu's eyes shone with great brilliance. It swiftly fused with the formation shrouding the 32 puppets, and the puppets began emanating an aura.

It was the aura of a rank six Half-God level cultivator.

"It's finally completed," Sima Xiangtu said in excitement.

He knew that Chu Feng and the Pill Dao Immortal Sect couldn't pose a threat to him anymore now that these 32 puppets were finally completed. He could finally continue with his plan.

However, an old voice filled with disappointment suddenly echoed behind Sima Xiangtu.

"Why are you here?"

Sima Xiangtu quickly turned around to take a look, only to see that a middle-aged man had appeared behind him at some point in time. He froze on the spot, for he recognized the middle-aged man.

It was the person depicted in the stone sculpture worshiped by the Monstrous Spirit Clan, the person who visited the Monstrous Spirit Clan tens of thousands of years ago. He was the true owner of the Celestial Master's Army Seal.

But based on what Sima Xiangtu knew, the middle-aged man should have died tens of thousands of years ago. It should be impossible for the latter to appear here!

Realizing that there was something wrong and dangerous with the middle-aged man, Sima Xiangtu quickly took out the military seal.

Shoosh shoosh shoosh!

All 32 puppets charged at the middle-aged man right away with overwhelming killing intent. He was intending to take the middle-aged man's life!

Whoosh!

Sima Xiangtu's pupils dilated in fright.

Before these 32 rank six Half-God level puppets could reach the middle-aged man, they suddenly crumbled into wooden smithereens and fell all over the ground.

Sima Xiangtu didn't see the middle-aged man make a move at all, but he sensed an unprecedentedly terrifying aura the moment the 32 puppets shattered. Not even a pinnacle Half-God level cultivator could release such a powerful aura.

The middle-aged man was an existence that had far surpassed Half-God!

"Milord, who... are you?" Sima Xiangtu asked with a subconsciously subservient attitude.

He had realized that he was faced with an incredibly formidable figure who had likely overcome the limitations of Half-God level!

"Who am I? Shouldn't you know where that military seal of yours came from?" the middle-aged man asked.

"Milord, are you saying that... you're the man who appeared in the Monstrous Spirit Clan tens of thousands of years ago?" Sima Xiangtu asked.

He did fathom such a possibility, but it was simply too unbelievable to him. So many years had passed since then, after all. However, based on the other party's aura, it did seem credible now for him to be the owner of the Celestial Master's Army Seal.

"You aren't dumb. It's no wonder why you could play those fools of the Monstrous Spirit Clan like a fiddle. However, you shouldn't be the person I'm looking for. Why is the Celestial Master's Army Seal in your hands?" the middle-aged man asked.

"Milord, the Celestial Master's Army Seal has always been in my hands. I never thought that I'd be the person you're looking for."

Sima Xiangtu finally managed to piece together the situation. He had heard that the middle-aged man had visited the Monstrous Spirit Clan back then to await someone, and from the looks of it now, the person the middle-aged man was waiting for was him.

“Milord, I’ve deeply respected you ever since I laid my eyes on this Celestial Master’s Army Seal. I have been wanting to meet you in person even in my dreams, and I felt deep regret when I heard that you’re no longer in this world. I never thought that my wish would actually come true and that you would still be alive.

“Milord, please take me in. I’m willing to serve you!”

He could sense just how powerful the middle-aged man was, which was why he was willing to go with the latter.

“It shouldn’t be you... But that master told me that the person in possession of the Heavenly Army Token when the pendant fills to the brim is the one who’ll aid me in mastering my divine skill. There should be no mistake here,” the middle-aged man muttered under his breath.

He wasn’t interested in Sima Xiangtu’s expression of loyalty at all. What he was baffled about was why the person standing before him wasn’t Chu Feng but Sima Xiangtu.

“Forget it. I’ll know once I give it a try.”

The middle-aged man opened up his hand.

Weng!

A small storm brewed around him as a formation appeared on his palm. Sima Xiangtu’s face darkened at the sight of the formation.

It was the same formation he had used to devour Yao Cheng earlier, just that the prowess of the middle-aged man’s formation was several thousand times stronger than his.

“Milord, w-what do you mean by this?”

Sima Xiangtu panicked. Both the formation and the words spoken by the middle-aged man had left him with an ominous feeling.

“There’s no need to get so nervous. It’s a blessing and an honor for you to become a part of me,” the middle-aged man said with a sinister smile as he slowly walked up to Sima Xiangtu.

Sima Xiangtu trembled in fear. He had already ascertained the middle-aged man's intention by now, but he was unable to move at all. The middle-aged man's strength was so beyond his recognition that it wouldn't be an exaggeration to call him a god.

If the middle-aged man sought to take his life, he could only wait for death no matter how reluctant he was.

"Am I, Sima Xiangtu, going to die here just like that?"

Sima Xiangtu looked at the sky in indignation.

Many times he had thought about his future, but it had never occurred to him that he would meet with such an end.

Boom!

All of a sudden, a deafening thud trembled the world. Powerful shockwaves rippled downward with terrifying force. It took a long while before everything slowly calmed down.

The baffled Sima Xiangtu quickly scanned his surroundings to see what was going on, only to stiffen in shock. He found that everything around him had been decimated by the earlier burst of energy.

He had never seen such great power before.

Under normal circumstances, there should have been no way he could have survived under an explosion—even the slightest nick could have taken his life—but he still emerged from it unscathed. That could only mean that the person who had made the attack had intentionally protected him.

Sima Xiangtu quickly looked at the middle-aged man and saw that he was hundreds of thousands of meters away. His arms were crossed in front of him, a defensive posture that suggested that someone had knocked him back.

Could it be that the earlier attack was directed toward the middle-aged man, and it successfully knocked him back?

Sima Xiangtu thought it was inconceivable how anyone would have the power to knock back an existence as powerful as the middle-aged man. More

importantly, a person who had the power to knock back a god could only be a god himself.

No one in the Nine Souls Galaxy should possess such capabilities.

Could it be that the middle-aged man's mortal nemesis had found it and coincidentally saved him? But how could something as coincidental as that happen out of the blue?

"Sima Xiangtu, what's with your reaction? Scared witless?" a voice echoed beside him.

Startled, Sima Xiangtu turned his head over and saw that a person was standing next to him.

"I-it's you?!"

Sima Xiangtu's eyes widened in disbelief. It was someone he would recognize even if the other party was reduced to ashes, but that only made the situation even more ridiculous. Why would that man possibly save him?

It was the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

Chapter 5093: Legendary Figure

"You!!!"

Sima Xiangtu felt a jolt in his soul as goosebumps rose all over his body. There were many things he would like to say, but he found himself incapable of speaking coherently.

How could it be the Ox-nosed Old Daoist of all people?!

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist was looking at him with a smile, showing no fear despite being faced with a godlike enemy. It was almost as if everything was under his control.

The two of them used to be close brothers many years ago. The world thought that the two of them were equals, but actually, Sima Xiangtu had grown under the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's protection back when they were in the Holy Light Galaxy. Every time Sima Xiangtu encountered danger, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist would step forward and save him.

It was with the same composed and confident expression he was showing right now that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist would resolve all crises with ease.

But... those were just small fries from the Holy Light Galaxy. Those enemies weren't worth a mention at all when he looked back on them now. There was no way they could compare to the overwhelmingly powerful god before him.

So how could the Ox-nosed Old Daoist still appear so composed and confident?

That very instant, Sima Xiangtu realized the truth. It was just that the truth was so terrifying that it immediately shattered the self-confidence he had painstakingly built up.

It turned out that he had never surpassed the Ox-nosed Old Daoist...

It turned out that the distance between them had only been growing larger over time...

"Why didn't you kill me?" Sima Xiangtu asked uncomprehendingly.

"Xiangtu, let's talk about our affairs later on. I'll deal with this man first."

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist flicked his hand, and Sima Xiangtu's Celestial Master's Army Seal immediately appeared in his grasp. He began examining it closely.

"The Celestial Master's Army Seal is one of the Ten Sect Treasures of the Celestial Master's Sacred Sect. It was said to be personally constructed by the sect founder by absorbing the spiritual essence of countless beings using the Immemorial Soul Ring and manifesting it into a soul rallying spirit formation. Its spirit formation can be used to create spirit soldiers.

"Rumor has it that the sect founder passed the treasure to his 17th personal disciple, Shentu Haoting, before passing away.

"Back then, the Celestial Master's Sacred Sect was vying with the Seven Realms Sacred Mansion for supremacy in the Seven Realms Galaxy. Shentu Haoting lost his life in the conflict, and the Celestial Master's Army Seal disappeared along with him. From the looks of it now, it would appear that Shentu Haoting didn't die and instead brought the Celestial Master's Army Seal with him to the Nine Souls Galaxy."

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist turned to look at the middle-aged man.

“I never thought that someone would remember this old man even after so many years. I’m also surprised by the strength wielded by the juniors in the present era. Are you from the Nine Souls Galaxy?” the middle-aged man asked.

He wasn’t angered by the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s aggression. On the contrary, it looked like he was filled with admiration for the latter.

Of course, his words were an implicit acknowledgment that he was indeed Shentu Haoting.

“It matters not to you where I’m from. Speak. Why are you suddenly appearing here now after so many years of concealment? Are you just waiting for a person to aid you in mastering your divine skill? Even so, there’s no way you would have waited for such a long time for no reason. It can’t be that you’re heeding some kind of dog crap prophecy, are you?” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist asked mockingly with smiling crescent eyes.

It was almost as if he was saying that Shentu Haoting was a fool for waiting so many years just because of a single prophecy.

“Are you determined to protect him?” Shentu Haoting asked.

Those words revealed his intention.

“Only I can take his life,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist replied.

“I am someone who cherishes talents, so I’ll give you a choice. As long as you return the Celestial Master’s Army Seal to me, I’ll spare that man,” Shentu Haoting said.

“Oh? The Celestial Master’s Army Seal is a wonderful treasure. How could I return it to you?” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said as he slipped the Celestial Master’s Army Seal into his robe.

Sima Xiangtu’s face turned ghastly pale at that sight. The Ox-nosed Old Daoist was simply too arrogant!

He had heard of Shentu Haoting before; the latter was one of the strongest individuals in the Celestial Master’s Sacred Sect back then. To put it in the



other words, the middle-aged man was practically someone who had walked out from the legends!

It was a miracle that Shentu Haoting was still alive after so many years, but this also meant that he must have made substantial advancements in his cultivation during this period of time. That made Shentu Haoting a real 'ancient monster' in the present era.

Yet, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was coveting the treasure of such a person? That was no different from courting death!

“Heh...”

Sima Xiangtu was stunned by what came afterward. Despite the Ox-nosed Old Daoist going overboard with his greed, Shentu Haoting actually shook his head and smiled.

“Juniors nowadays sure are scary. Since that’s the case, I’ll give the Celestial Master’s Army Seal to you.”

Shentu Haoting was actually prepared to give the Celestial Master’s Army Seal to the Ox-nosed Old Daoist! After saying those words, he turned around and got ready to leave.

“Where are you going?”

But barely after Shentu Haoting turned around, a figure suddenly appeared in front of him. It was a clone of the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“What do you want?” Shentu Haoting asked.

“You said that you wanted Sima Xiangtu to help you master your divine skill, but your disappointment shows that the person whom you are looking for isn’t him. If I’m not mistaken, the junior whom you have been waiting for is Chu Feng, right?” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist asked.

“You know Chu Feng too?” Shentu Haoting asked with a frown.

He was getting an ominous feeling.

“It sure is a coincidence, but Chu Feng is my beloved disciple,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

“Shit! Why are there such coincidences in the world?” Shentu Haoting couldn’t help but curse under his breath, but he was able to quickly adjust his mood.

“Alright. Since Chu Feng is your disciple, I shan’t bother him. Let’s call it quits here,” Shentu Haoting said.

“I don’t think that you’re listening to me. Since Chu Feng is my beloved disciple, it’d be dangerous if an old monster like you had your eyes set on him. It’s my job as his master to eliminate such dangers lurking around him ahead of time,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

Shentu Haoting’s face turned icy-cold. He looked at the Ox-nosed Old Daoist with a sudden burst of hostility. He emanated such an intimidating aura that hardly anyone would dare to look at him in the face, but the Ox-nosed Old Daoist remained unfazed.

“What do you want to do then?” Shentu Haoting asked.

“It’ll take a dead man to assure me,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist replied.

Boom!

A ferocious storm filled with murderous intent swept across the surroundings. It was released by Shentu Haoting.

Sima Xiangtu trembled in fear at the sight. He had never seen such terrifying murderous intent before. Once again, he was enlightened as to how powerful the top powerhouses of the world of cultivation were.

“You’re more arrogant than you look. I gave you multiple chances, but you trampled all over my goodwill. Did you think that you would really be able to stop me?” Shentu Haoting asked coldly.

“If you’re trying to intimidate me, I’m afraid that I won’t buy into that. Do the cultivators of your generation really talk so much? I should probably let you know that empty words won’t scare anyone in the present era. Shentu Haoting, if you want to live, you’ll have to prove yourself worthy.”

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s eyes suddenly turned grim.

Boom!

A deafening explosion sounded, and shockwaves devoured the surroundings.

At this very moment, Sima Xiangtu could only wrap his arms around his head and squat helplessly on the spot. He couldn't see anything at all, and all he could feel were devastating shockwaves rampaging around him. Even the slightest shockwave nicking him could easily disintegrate him.

Yet, he remained safe and sound because there was a barrier protecting him. It came from the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

#### Chapter 5094: The Ox-nosed Old Daoist's Identity

In the Nine Souls Sacred Clan, Chu Feng had freed all of those cultivators who had been imprisoned by Sima Xiangtu. It didn't take long for the Nine Souls Sacred Clan to revert back to its original state.

Xian Miaomiao's mother was freed. The Nine Souls Sacred Clan's Clan Chief was still unconscious since he had suffered quite a bit of torture. It would take him a while before he regained consciousness.

Meanwhile, Chu Feng was standing in the sky of the Nine Souls Sacred Clan, looking upon his surroundings with a conflicted feeling in his heart. He still remembered how much he hated the Nine Souls Sacred Clan when he first learned about the mishap that had befallen Xian Miaomiao. In fact, he even considered destroying the Nine Souls Sacred Clan.

But after everything that had happened, his anger had mostly disappeared. At the very least, he didn't intend to make things difficult for the Nine Souls Sacred Clan anymore.

Of course, if Xian Miaomiao wanted to exact vengeance on the Nine Souls Sacred Clan after being freed from Princess Xiaoxiao's body, Chu Feng would help her.

With the rapid advancement in his spirit power, he had already learned of a method to free Xian Miaomiao from Princess Xiaoxiao, just that he needed a lot of materials for it. He chose to hand over the material list to the Nine Souls Sacred Clan as an opportunity for them to make up for their mistake.

How could those from the Nine Souls Sacred Clan possibly dare to offend Chu Feng after witnessing what he was capable of? They immediately started gathering the materials.

"Look, it's Lord Chu Feng!"

“Lord Chu Feng, Lord Chu Feng!”

Resounding cheers started echoing from all around. Those voices were loud and filled with admiration. There were even some who knelt down and kowtowed deeply toward Chu Feng.

These were all of the cultivators who had been previously trapped by Sima Xiangtu. They had been loitering around the Nine Souls Sacred Clan because they wanted to express their gratitude toward Chu Feng. Chu Feng’s heroic deed had imprinted deeply in their hearts.

However, Chu Feng only felt sorrowful upon seeing all these. He had saved so many people, but he failed to save the single person he wanted to save.

He looked at the starry night sky above him and solemnly prayed that his master would survive being in Sima Xiangtu’s clutches. At the same time, he thought about everything that had happened thus far.

Far too many things had happened over the last few days that it felt like it had all been a dream.

“I remember it now.”

Chu Feng suddenly thought of something and took out the Celestial Master’s Horsetail Whisk. When his eyes fell upon the treasure, he became more certain of his deduction.

He had felt a sense of familiarity from the barrier and the puppets back when he was at the Monstrous Spirit Clan, but he couldn’t figure out where this sense of familiarity was coming from. It was actually from the Celestial Master’s Horsetail Whisk.

“Could it be that the lord worshiped by the Monstrous Spirit Clan is related to the Celestial Master’s Sacred Clan?”

Chu Feng thought that there must be some kind of relationship between the two.

Weng!

A brilliant white light suddenly enveloped the night sky, lighting up the world as if a new day had come. Soon after, the earth started shaking.

Boom!

A piercing explosion ensued, rattling the entire world.

“Oh my lord, what in the world is going on here?”

All of the cultivators were horrified by the extent of the shaking. It felt as if the world was coming to an end.

Innumerable figures quickly rose from the ground and headed toward Chu Feng’s side, whether they were on close terms with Chu Feng or not. They realized that a terrifying power had emerged in the world, and Chu Feng was the only one who could give them a sense of security.

However, the truth was that even Chu Feng felt uneasy too.

It was fortunate that the light didn’t last for too long before it dissipated, and the shaking soon alleviated too. Everything reverted back to normal as if it was all their imagination.

“What was that?”

Chu Feng looked at the night sky, hoping to figure out the source of the light. The crowd did the same too.

“It has disappeared,” Princess Xiaoxiao suddenly remarked.

Everyone could see that the light had disappeared, so no one paid any heed to her words. However, Princess Xiaoxiao headed over to Chu Feng’s side and pointed toward the place where the light had initially appeared from.

“Chu Feng, there used to be a realm there, but it vanished after the light,” Princess Xiaoxiao elaborated.

“Ah?!”

The crowd was astonished upon hearing that, especially those from the Nine Souls Sacred Clan. They had been living here from a young age, and many of them had the experience of counting the stars in the sky. These stars were actually realms from both within the Nine Souls Galaxy and beyond.

Not all realms were recognizable to them, but they were at least able to identify the closer ones.

Thus, they could tell that Princess Xiaoxiao was right; one of the realms had disappeared. It was the Nine Souls Galaxy's Fogtree Lower Realm.

"What could have happened?"

"Fogtree Lower Realm really vanished!!!"

...

Sima Xiangtu was still standing in the same place as before, but his face was covered in fear like never before. Despite not having moved a step, the ground beneath his feet had vanished without a trace. He was in space.

The fragmented bits all around him made one thing clear to him: the world he was in earlier had been destroyed.

"What are you zoning out for, Xiangtu?" a voice sounded.

Sima Xiangtu turned around and saw the Ox-nosed Old Daoist. The latter held a tattered corpse in his hand. Needless to say, the tattered corpse was Shentu Haoting.

"You... did this?" Sima Xiangtu asked.

"Who else could it be?" the Ox-nosed Old Daoist replied mockingly.

"I'm referring to the Fogtree Lower Realm," Sima Xiangtu added.

"Ah. I accidentally used too much force. It isn't that bad since there aren't many cultivators there," the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

"W-what kind of monster are you?" Sima Xiangtu's voice was trembling.

"Me? I can tell you if you really wish to know," the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said with a smile. *nOve(lB-1n*

He took out a Cosmos Sack and flung it to the side. A person fell out from within.

It was the Wretched Black Demon.

There were no wounds on the Wretched Black Demon, but his face was pale and his eyes looked vacuous. His body wouldn't stop trembling, and he couldn't utter a word at all. He seemed to be in a traumatized state.

The Wretched Black Demon had tried to steal the Zhuge Clan's treasure under Sima Xiangtu's order, but Zhuge Feiluan managed to slip away under his eyelid with the treasure. He managed to capture the Zhuge Clan's Clan Chief alive though, so Sima Xiangtu told him to force Zhuge Feiluan out by using the Zhuge Clan's Clan Chief as a hostage.

The Wretched Black Demon promised to capture Zhuge Feiluan, but he vanished into thin air since then.

Sima Xiangtu thought that the Wretched Black Demon had betrayed him, but it turned out that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist had captured him. He was certain that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist had been inside his confinement formation all this while, so when did the latter do it?

Sima Xiangtu soon shook his head with a bitter smile.

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist was able to easily destroy a realm and even nab a legendary figure like Shentu Haoting, so how difficult could it be for him to nab the Wretched Black Demon without him knowing?

"Why did you capture him? Is it because he offended Chu Feng?" Sima Xiangtu asked.

He knew that he was already a goner, so he simply wanted to clarify the doubts lingering in his heart now.

"It's not because of Chu Feng. I simply didn't wish to see the destruction of the Zhuge Clan," the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

"You're acquainted with the Zhuge Clan?" Sima Xiangtu asked in surprise.

"Of course. The treasure you were hoping to obtain from the Zhuge Clan was something I left them with," the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

"You're lying. I know that the Zhuge Clan obtained the treasure from Zhuge Guangyao... Wait a moment, could it be?!"

Sima Xiangtu was initially doubtful of the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's words, but he suddenly realized something.

"You are Zhuge Guangyao?" he exclaimed.

Zhuge Guangyao was the most powerful world spiritist that had ever appeared in the Zhuge Clan. He was the one who brought the Zhuge Clan to the peak of its height. It was just that Zhuge Guangyao had already died for many years, so how could the Ox-nosed Old Daoist be him?

In the first place, their ages weren't right. The Ox-nosed Old Daoist was around the same age as him, which made Zhuge Guangyao much older than him.

Yet, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist reacted nonchalantly to the deduction.

"I did spend a lifetime under the alias of Zhuge Guangyao, but that isn't my real name. What's my real name again? It has been far too long, and I have used too many names since then. I'll have to think for a while."

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist started thinking hard.

Meanwhile, Sima Xiangtu looked at the Ox-nosed Old Daoist with eyes filled with fear. He realized that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist wasn't from the same generation as him but an old monster who had lived through the ages.

Even Zhuge Guangyao was nothing more than an identity he had assumed.

"Ah, I remember. The very first name should be Dugu Lingtian," the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

Chapter 5095: Godsoul Formula

"Dugu Lingtian?"

Sima Xiangtu sieved through his memories, thinking that 'Dugu Lingtian' must have been a formidable figure given the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's earnest tone. However, he had no recollection of that person at all.

"You have never heard of him? I don't blame you for that. You're still young and immature, after all. I can tell you that I was much more satisfied with my life as Dugu Lingtian than Zhuge Guangyao.



“If I didn’t obtain the Godsoul Formula by coincidence and made up my mind to cultivate it, I would have already become a respected powerhouse in the world of cultivation by now. If so, the Hidden Dragon Martial Sect should have become known throughout the world of cultivation.

“What a pity that things never go as one intended them to. I ended up choosing the Godsoul Formula,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

He was the most satisfied with his time as Dugu Lingtian, but that life was also filled with regrets for him. No matter how many times he reincarnated, the only identity he truly recognized was Dugu Lingtian. It was unfortunate that he couldn’t use the name anymore.

He didn’t want to disappoint some people.

This was simply how life was. A single choice could dictate the trajectory of one’s future, and there was no way to reverse it.

“You said that you spent a lifetime as Zhuge Guangyao, but why did you do that? What’s your goal?” Sima Xiangtu asked.

He was much more interested in Zhuge Guangyao than Dugu Lingtian since Zhuge Guangyao was known to be a prodigy who had awed the entire Nine Souls Galaxy back then. He was also interested to know what the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was aiming for.

“Xiangtu, what’s your goal for preparing the Pill Dao Immortal Sect’s Immortal Cauldron and turning me into a cultivation resource?” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist posed a question of his own instead.

“Why ask the obvious? We are both cultivating the Godsoul Formula,” Sima Xiangtu replied.

The Godsoul Formula was an incredibly powerful skill that he and the Ox-nosed Old Daoist discovered in their younger years in an ancient remnant. The two of them made the decision to cultivate it together. It was through the Godsoul Formula that Sima Xiangtu was able to continuously strengthen his soul and eventually reach his current height.

His previous goal was to use the Immortal Cauldron to refine innumerable souls and use them as fodder for a breakthrough in his Godsoul Formula. He thought that he could reach Half-God level if he succeeded.

That was how powerful the Godsoul Formula was.

“The Godsoul Formula is demanding on not just one’s hard work but one’s aptitude too. The strength of a person’s soul is decided from the moment of birth, but only a perfect soul is capable of cultivating a true Godsoul. So, the creator of the Godsoul Formula came up with a method that allows one to reincarnate with his full memories so as to construct a perfect soul,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

“Reincarnate? Why didn’t I see that in the Godsoul Formula I cultivated?”

Sima Xiangtu glared at the Ox-nosed Old Daoist hatefully. He realized that the Godsoul Formula he had cultivated was incomplete, which meant that he had been duped by the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Needless to say, what you have cultivated isn’t the Godsoul Formula,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist replied.

“You planned it all. You lured me to that ancient remnant so that I would discover the Godsoul Formula. What’s your motive for doing that?” Sima Xiangtu asked.

He knew that he was likely to die here, but he still wanted to know where he had gone wrong.

“Calm down, I’ll explain everything to you. It’ll be a long story,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said with a smile.

“I have already realized that my soul wasn’t perfect enough back when I first obtained the Godsoul Formula. I didn’t want those around me to know about the Godsoul Formula since it was an unorthodox skill, so I decided to reincarnate and cultivate it under a new identity.

“Thanks to my thorough preparations, my soul was able to approach perfection in my first reincarnation. That was during my life as Zhuge Guangyao. But I swiftly realized that ‘approach perfection’ and ‘true perfection’ were two entirely different concepts,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

Sima Xiangtu suddenly interjected and said, “Zhuge Guangyao was famed for his talent in the Nine Souls Galaxy despite his young age. He was afflicted with a terminal disease and died prematurely... But that isn’t true. You simply wanted to die and start anew.”

“The goal of reincarnation is to obtain a perfect soul. Since I didn’t achieve my goal, it goes without saying that I’d have to start anew. My greatest flaw is that I value relationships too much. My parents in the Zhuge Clan weren’t my true parents but simply people whom I have chosen beforehand, but I still got attached to them. That’s why I feigned sickness so that they could quickly come to terms with my departure and forget about me.

“Before I left, I constructed a defensive formation for them and gave them a treasure as compensation. I simply didn’t expect that the descendants of the Zhuge Clan would be so lacking in talent. Even with my treasure and defensive formation, they still fell into decline.

“Well... I guess the current generation’s Zhuge Feiluan is still not bad. If he matures, the Zhuge Clan could rise to prominence once more. That’s why I couldn’t allow the Wretched Black Demon to kill him,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

He glanced at the Wretched Black Demon as he spoke, but the latter stared back at him vacuously, as if he couldn’t understand what the Ox-nosed Old Daoist and Sima Xiangtu were talking about. Seeing that, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist burst into laughter.

He knew better than anyone else how the Wretched Black Demon ended in his current state.

“Who else did you reincarnate into?” Sima Xiangtu asked.

“I reincarnated many times in the future, but the time I spent cultivating grew shorter and shorter. I was still living for decades each lifetime, but it soon reduced to just a couple of years.

“I realized no matter how close my soul comes to perfection, imperfections would still appear as I age. I kept reincarnating and reincarnating, but the outcome was the same. That was the first time that I experienced true despair. I regretted having chosen to cultivate the Godsoul Formula. But there was no turning back. I have already chosen my path. I’d have to walk to the end of it.

“So, I began researching the Godsoul Formula. It took a while, but I eventually comprehended its crux. Reincarnation is a crucial step to attaining a perfect soul, but it isn’t enough. External nourishment is required for a soul that is approaching perfection to reach true perfection.

“When I finally became Zhuge Yuankong, I decided not to reincarnate anymore. There’s no need to since I have already found a way to perfect my soul,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

“What is it? Is normal cultivation not sufficient?” Sima Xiangtu asked anxiously.

The Godsoul Formula he had cultivated wasn’t perfect, but it did make his soul stronger. He had a profound reverence for the Godsoul Formula, viewing it as a divine skill that had changed his life. Even if he was doomed to die, he wanted to know what the true Godsoul Formula was like.

“Normal cultivation? Xiangtu, why are you suddenly uttering such foolishness? Haven’t I already told you that the Godsoul Formula you have cultivated isn’t real?” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

“Zhuge Yuankong, what do you mean by that?” Sima Xiangtu asked in agitation.

The words from the Ox-nosed Old Daoist pricked at his nerves.

“I thought that I was already being direct, but you still don’t get it?” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist asked.

“If what I have been cultivating wasn’t the real Godsoul Formula, what could I have been cultivating all this while? What are you driving at?” Sima Xiangtu spoke with increasing rage in his voice.

He initially thought that the Godsoul Formula was incomplete, but the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was saying that what he cultivated wasn’t even the Godsoul Formula at all. This was unacceptable to him since the Godsoul Formula was the faith that had been pushing him on all this while. How could he accept this turn of events?

Chapter 5096: The Truth

“Don’t worry, I’ll let you die a knowing death,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said before continuing on.

“Anyone can cultivate the Godsoul Formula and become stronger through it, but it takes a perfect soul in order to bring out its true potential. Since reincarnation is insufficient to attain a perfect soul, I had no choice but to

resort to other means to perfect my soul. That's the only way I can obtain a true Godsoul.

"I found that the way to perfect my soul is to find another person whose soul is close to perfection. Through nourishing that person's soul and assimilating his soul into mine, my soul will be able to achieve true perfection. With that, I would be able to start cultivating the real Godsoul Formula," the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

The gaze he directed toward Sima Xiangtu was predatory, reminiscent of a person looking at food on a chopping board.

"You laid this trap for me right from the start. The cultivation skill I have been practicing all this while was to nourish my soul and make me into the perfect cultivation resource for you to perfect your soul?" Sima Xiangtu asked with a quivering voice.

The truth was unbearable to him.

He thought that he had been playing the Ox-nosed Old Daoist like a fiddle all this while, but it turned out that he was the one who had been toyed with. From the very start, he had been nothing more than a fool.

"As expected of Xiangtu. You do have a good brain. Cultivation resource, you said? It looks like you know your place well," the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said with a smile.

"Ox-nosed Old Daoist, you bastard! How could you be this despicable? To think that I thought of you as a brother! How can you treat me like that?!" Sima Xiangtu bellowed furiously.

He felt indignant and angry. The thought that everything he had been doing over the past few centuries had been futile left him so frustrated that he thought that he was going to lose his mind.

"Brother?"

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist chuckled softly.

"I did have an ulterior motive for approaching you, but if you did care for me as a brother, I doubt that I would have been able to bring myself to lay my hands on you. But you were so despicable that it doesn't prick my conscience in the

least to do this. I admit I did feel uneasy when I first set up my mind to do this, but the more you betrayed my goodwill and backstabbed me, the more relieved I felt.

“What can I say, Xiangtu? Your vileness didn’t hurt me in the least. Instead, it assuaged my conscience. Your ‘torture’ felt great to me too. My body never felt so refreshed before. I was able to eat and sleep whenever I liked. It has been a long while since I took such a nice break.

“Come, Xiangtu. Stand there and don’t move. Let me offer you my sincere thanks.”

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist actually lowered his back and bowed to Sima Xiangtu.

Sima Xiangtu was infuriated by the mockery, and murderous intent flared in his eyes.

“Zhuge Yuankong, you beast! I’ll kill you!” Sima Xiangtu roared.

Despite knowing that he wasn’t a match for the Ox-nosed Old Daoist, he still charged at the latter furiously. He threw a fist packed with his full strength at the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist didn’t even bother to dodge.

Bam!

The strike landed squarely on the Ox-nosed Old Daoist, but it didn’t deal the slightest damage at all. The Ox-nosed Old Daoist continued smiling unfazed.

Gah!

Instead, it was Sima Xiangtu who hissed in pain. His bones were fractured, and his entire right arm was crippled under the rebound force.

“Don’t get so angry. I did compensate you for it. Didn’t I let you have your moment of triumph when you colluded with the Dao Enlightenment Sage Exalted against me? You must have felt exultant. I also allowed you to defeat and torture me as you pleased. Have you forgotten the bright smile on your face as you inflicted harm on me?”

“Look, you didn’t live your life in vain. At least you had your own moments too,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said with a chuckle.

Sima Xiangtu burst into tears.

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s words stabbed into his heart like sharp venomous thorns. He thought that he had successfully schemed against the Ox-nosed Old Daoist, and he had felt gleeful about it. Yet, it turned out that he had been played like a fool all this while.

“Aiyo, why are you crying? Aren’t you ashamed to be crying at your age? Come, let me dry your tears.”

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist walked up to Sima Xiangtu, took out a handkerchief, and passed it over. Needless to say, Sima Xiangtu didn’t take the handkerchief. Instead, he cried even harder than before.

Sima Xiangtu thought of himself as an ambitious man, but the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s words made him realize that he was just a puppet on strings. All of his pride and self-esteem crumbled altogether.

“You’re already losing yourself after hearing the truth. Xiangtu, you’ve changed. You didn’t use to be this weak. I remember that you were still rather thick-skinned in the past,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

That only made Sima Xiangtu cry even harder.

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist decided to stop and watch Sima Xiangtu sob. It was almost as if this was a scene he had been anticipating all this while.

It took a while before Sima Xiangtu finally calmed down. He thought of something and raised his head to look at the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Zhuge Yuankong, tell me the truth. Would I have been unable to make a breakthrough even if I assimilated those cultivators with the Immortal Cauldron?” Sima Xiangtu asked.

“That’s right. What you have been cultivating all this while wasn’t the Godsoul Formula; it’s just a way to refine your soul,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist replied.

“Why are you only making a move on me now? If I’m nothing more than a cultivation resource to you, you could have already assimilated me a long time ago,” Sima Xiangtu said.

“I could, but I thought this would be a good opportunity to train my disciple too,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

“Train your disciple? Hahaha!”

Sima Xiangtu suddenly burst into laughter out of sheer despair. Despite all of the scheming he had done, it turned out that Zhuge Yuankong thought of him as nothing more than a tool to train his disciple.

“You wanted to squeeze out the last bit of value in me before I die? Zhuge Yuankong, you’re truly a despicable man. I admit that I have thoroughly lost to you. Kill me.”

Sima Xiangtu closed his eyes. He was ready to face death.

“You’re already giving in? Why the rush? I haven’t told you the biggest truth yet,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

“The biggest truth? What else is there to say?”

Sima Xiangtu opened his eyes and looked at the Ox-nosed Old Daoist in confusion. He thought that he had already heard everything that he had to, and he couldn’t imagine that there was anything else.

“Xiangtu, the truth is that you possess excellent talent that’s on par with me. It was the fake Godsoul Formula I gave you that limited your talent. If you have cultivated normally, you should have at least reached True God by now,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

Sima Xiangtu’s face paled at those words. His eyes glowered with a frightening gleam. *noVe/lb.1n*

“Zhuge Yuankong, you bastard! I’ll kill you! I’ll f\*cking kill you!!!”

He thought all this while that he possessed mediocre talent, and it was the Godsoul Formula that helped him rise through the ranks. Yet, the truth turned out to be the opposite of that; it was the fake Godsoul Formula that had been limiting him all this while!



He struggled so much just so that he could reach Half-God level, but the truth was that he could have been at True God level by now! How could he possibly not feel frustrated at the revelation?

And this was all because of the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's scheming!

But this time, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist froze him in mid-air, not allowing him to get close at all.

"I wouldn't have chosen you if you weren't talented enough," the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

Then, he walked up to Sima Xiangtu.

Pu!

Uwaaa!

Sima Xiangtu's face contorted in pain. The Ox-nosed Old Daoist had pierced his hand through his body and was siphoning his soul. He looked at the Ox-nosed Old Daoist in indignation.

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist looked back at him with the composed and confident smile he was familiar with.

"Xiangtu, you did well. Rest in peace," he said.

Pu!

Fresh blood splattered all around, and Sima Xiangtu's body swiftly dried up. Then, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist pulled out his hand, revealing a bundle of light in his grasp. The bundle of light looked impeccably pure and brilliant.

It was the soul Sima Xiangtu had nourished over many years.

Chapter 5097: Thousand Transformations Illusory Palace and Demon Subjugating Immortal Exalted

"Your heart might be black, but your soul is pure. I must say that my method of soul nourishment is rather effective," the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said with a gleeful smile.

This was what he had been anticipating for a long time.

Yet, his excited smile soon faded a while later. There was a forlorn look on his face when he looked at the withered remains of Sima Xiangtu.

“After so many years of scheming, I thought that I would be too excited to sleep when I finally succeeded. I didn’t think that I would feel this way instead,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist muttered under his breath.

He pondered for a long while before finally coming to a decision.

“Forget it, I’ll grant you a dignified death.”

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist waved his hand, and spirit power rushed into Sima Xiangtu’s body. His withered body swiftly recovered back to its normal form. He was still dead, but at least his corpse looked dignified.

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist personally constructed a coffin and placed Sima Xiangtu’s corpse in it. Then, he lightly pushed it outward and watched as it floated into the vast world of cultivation. It was only when it finally vanished from his line of sight that he turned his attention back to the soul in his grasp.

Without any hesitation, he opened his mouth and gobbled the soul up. Following that, he formed a series of hand seals. Light glowed from his eyes, and his body started undergoing a transformation.

If anyone else was present, they would have been able to tell that this transformation was for the better. However, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist started to panic.

“I’m still off by a bit?”

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist turned his sights toward the Wretched Black Demon and pulled him into his grasp.

Gah!

The Wretched Black Demon let out a wretched cry as the Ox-nosed Old Daoist devoured his soul. It didn’t take long for him to fall completely silent.

When the Ox-nosed Old Daoist finally released him, his body dissipated into ashes and scattered all around the vast world of cultivation. However, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s panic didn’t alleviate in the slightest.

“He’s too weak. This isn’t enough,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist murmured.

However, his face soon brightened up.

“I nearly forgot about that old man.”

He took out an item from his Cosmos Sack and threw it upward. The item quickly expanded into a massive palace. It was the Thousand Transformations Illusory Palace, a treasure that once belonged to the Wretched Black Demon.

Back then, Chu Feng, Xia Yan, and Princess Xiaoxiao had once entered the Thousand Transformations Illusory Palace as a trial during the matchmaking convention of the Wretched Black Demon’s granddaughter.

The Thousand Transformations Illusory Palace was a unique treasure, in the sense that it wasn’t completely under the Wretched Black Demon’s control despite belonging to him. It would be more accurate to say that they were in a partnership.

The Wretched Black Demon had to infuse the Thousand Transformations Illusory Palace with thirty years worth of spirit power in order to open it once, and access into the palace was limited to only the juniors.

If a junior obtained something good from the palace, the Wretched Black Demon would be able to receive rewards from the Thousand Transformations Illusory Palace. That was also why the Wretched Black Demon was willing to allow outsiders in despite having expended thirty years of spirit power on it.

Boom!

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist thrust his palm forth and struck the Thousand Transformations Illusory Palace, causing cracks to appear all over it. Then, he manifested a hand out of martial power and slipped it into the palace through one of the cracks.

When he finally pulled out the hand made out of martial power from the tower, there was an additional figure in his grasp.

It was an old man with hair and beard that flowed gracefully like silk for tens of meters. He looked like a benevolent immortal descending from the world of immortals. Yet, his body was shackled down by countless chains that extended into the Thousand Transformations Illusory Palace.

Chu Feng had met this old man back when he entered the Thousand Transformations Illusory Palace. The old man told him that he was trapped in the palace, and that if Chu Feng returned to save him after becoming a God-cloak World Spiritist, he would repay Chu Feng for the favor.

The old man also said that the Thousand Transformations Illusory Palace was under the control of the Thousand Transformations Fox Demon, which implied that he was trapped here by the latter.

He wasn't willing to reveal anything else other than that, so Chu Feng's deepest impression of the old man was his powerful Demon Subjugating Divine Flame.

Whoosh!

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist suddenly tugged at the chains with his hand of martial power, and all of the shackles shattered right away. That shocked the old man.

After breaking the chains, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist finally released the old man, returning the latter his freedom.

"Milord, thank you for saving me from the Thousand Transformations Illusory Palace."

The old man immediately bowed deeply to the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

"You told my disciple to save you that day, promising to reward him if he did so. I saved you in place of my disciple today, so you can reward me instead," the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

In truth, he had been following Chu Feng all this while.

He was the hidden figure who eavesdropped into the conversation between the Lady of Dao Sea and the Godwish Grandmother back then. He was the mysterious man who saved Chu Feng from Shengguang Shishen and Shengguang Qianyu back at the Whitesky Star River.

He was also present at the Wretched Black Demon's matchmaking convention. In fact, he was able to peer into the Thousand Transformation Illusory Palace to know what was happening within.

“Milord, may I know who your disciple is?” the old man asked.

“My disciple is Chu Feng. You might have been hiding inside the Thousand Transformations Illusory Palace, but I didn’t seal off your vision. You should be aware of what happened. I’d be annoyed if you continue feigning ignorance, Demon Subjugating Immortal Exalted,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said with a smile.

He was well aware of the old man’s capabilities, so he knew that the latter could see everything that had happened from the moment he captured the Wretched Black Demon. The only thing the old man wouldn’t know was that Chu Feng was his disciple.

“You know who I am?” the old man asked in surprise.

He wasn’t surprised that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was aware of his encounter with Chu Feng. Given the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s capabilities, it was not impossible for him to peer through the Thousand Transformations Illusory Palace.

However, it was a shock to him that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist knew of his true identity.

“I don’t just know who you are, I’m also aware that you’re a vicious person. After your master, the Demon Subjugating Saint, passed away, you attempted to massacre everyone in the Demon Subjugating Divine Flame Sect so that you could monopolize the Demon Subjugating Divine Flame.

“In order to stop you, your juniors sacrificed their lives to activate your master’s treasure, the Thousand Transformations Illusory Palace, in hopes of destroying you. It was just that they were too weak. They succeeded in sealing you within the Thousand Transformations Illusory Palace, but they weren’t able to kill you.

“I’ve already checked the internal structure of the Thousand Transformations Illusory Palace. While you were sealed by the palace, you did inherit your master’s teaching and have some understanding of the palace. Over the years, you were able to gain partial control over the palace. In fact, you were the one who orchestrated the deal with the Wretched Black Demon. n.-σ-)v-.e.-ℓ-.ℓ((1-)n

“No, it would be more accurate to say that you have struck a deal with everyone who came into possession of the Thousand Transformations Illusory Palace. Those people would pour into the palace not just spirit power but countless lives too. How could someone like you possibly have a kind heart?”

“You only allowed juniors into the Thousand Transformations Illusory Palace because you wanted to find someone who can help you. You only helped my disciple that day because you noticed that he was talented and saw through his loyal nature. You thought that you could use him to regain freedom and establish full control over the palace.”

“And my guess is that even if he did help you, you weren't planning to reward him with anything at all. On the contrary, you would have taken his life,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

He looked at the Demon Subjugating Immortal Exalted with sharp eyes that looked as if they had seen through everything right from the start.

*Chapter 5098: Demon Vanquishing Divine Flame Formula*

“I don't know where you heard those rumors from, but it was the Thousand Transformations Fox Demon who attempted to massacre our Demon Vanquishing Divine Flame Sect after my master passed away. I worked together with the sect to seal it away. Even though I succeeded, I ended up getting sealed within the tower as well.”

“As for your disciple, I don't deny that his talent and loyalty did catch my eye, and I did hope that he could save me from the Thousand Transformations Illusory Palace. However, I would have rewarded him handsomely if he did save me. I have no intentions of harming him at all,” the Demon Vanquishing Immortal Exalted said.

“Demon Vanquishing Immortal Exalted, look closely at me and my face,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist pointed to his own face as he spoke.

The Demon Vanquishing Immortal Exalted did as he was told, but the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's appearance was just so-so. He had no idea what the latter was up to, so he asked, “What do you mean by that?”

“Do I look like a fool to you?” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist asked.

“Hmph!”

The Demon Vanquishing Immortal Exalted's face turned cold, and he flung his sleeves in annoyance.

Shoosh!

Along with a breeze, the Demon Vanquishing Immortal Exalted vanished into thin air. He had chosen to leave the area.

However, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist sneered coldly and extended his palm toward empty space.

Hu!

As if there was a bottomless hole in his hand, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist exerted a powerful suction force that pulled everything into his grasp. A figure swiftly flew from the depths of space toward his hand.

It was none other than the Demon Vanquishing Immortal Exalted.

“You!!!”

The Demon Vanquishing Immortal Exalted couldn't remain calm when he saw that he was unable to escape from the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's grasp. He had known that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was incredibly powerful, but he only understood the gap between them at this very moment.

“Demon Vanquishing Immortal Exalted, why are you in such a hurry to run away if you believe that you're in the right?” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist asked.

“I am indeed telling the truth, but you refuse to believe me. I know that it'll be hard for me to change your mind, so I didn't want to bother staying here and arguing with you. I really didn't lie to you, so I hope that you can spare me,” the Demon Vanquishing Immortal Exalted said.

“In other words, you were sincerely intending on rewarding my disciple if he saved you?” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist asked.

“Of course. I would never hurt my benefactor,” the Demon Vanquishing Immortal Exalted replied with a nod.

“Since that's the case, I'll accept your reward. However, I'll get to decide what to take. First and foremost, I want you to hand over the Demon Vanquishing Divine Flame Formula,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

The Demon Vanquishing Immortal Exalted hesitated upon hearing those words.

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist looked at the Demon Vanquishing Immortal Exalted with a patient smile, but it only made the latter rain buckets of cold sweat.

“It’s contrary to my master’s wishes, but you did save my life. I believe that my master will understand my actions.”

In the end, the Demon Vanquishing Immortal Exalted took out an ancient scroll and handed it over to the Ox-nosed Old Daoist. The Ox-nosed Old Daoist unfurled the scroll and began reading it.

“Rumor has it that the Demon Vanquishing Divine Flame has the power to subjugate demons, decimate evil, dispel poison, heal injuries, cleanse all beings, and even remove curses. I thought that it was an exaggeration, but it does seem like there’s some credence to those rumors.

“It’s no wonder why you would go to the extent of massacring your own sect members for the sake of monopolizing the Demon Vanquishing Divine Flame. Your position would be unshakable if you’re the only one in possession of the cultivation skill,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said with a satisfied nod before slipping the Demon Vanquishing Divine Flame Formula into his robe.

He then snatched over the Demon Vanquishing Immortal Exalted’s Cosmos Sack and took it for himself too. If he was still asking politely earlier, what he was doing now was no different from robbery.

However, the Demon Vanquishing Immortal Exalted dared not to voice his displeasure at all. Instead, he subserviently asked, “May I leave now?”

“Leave? Where are you going? You aren’t done rewarding me yet,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

“Is this not enough?” the Demon Vanquishing Immortal Exalted asked in bewilderment.

“Of course not. It just so happens that my Godsoul Formula is still lacking a bit of nourishment. The soul of an ordinary cultivator is insufficient for me, but I think you might just be able to meet the mark,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

“You!!!”



The Demon Vanquishing Immortal Exalted's face paled. He immediately turned tail and attempted to flee. By now, it was clear to him that the Ox-nosed Old Daoist had no intention of sparing him.

However, as he turned around, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist suddenly stabbed his hand into his body.

Gah!

A wretched cry echoed loudly, and the Demon Vanquishing Immortal Exalted's body was swiftly reduced to dust.

Finally, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's aura calmed down.

"It's done. What a close shave!"

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist heaved a sigh of relief. He turned to the Thousand Transformations Illusory Palace and shouted, "Stop hiding and come out."

A black little fox came out of the palace. Despite its small physique, its eyes reflected wisdom.

"Oh hoh, isn't this the legendary Thousand Transformations Fox Demon? To think that you would be reduced to such a state. Did you expend all of your energy wrestling control over the Thousand Transformations Illusory Palace?" the Ox-nosed Old Daoist asked.

The black fox was none other than the Thousand Transformations Fox Demon, the true owner of the Thousand Transformations Illusory Palace.

"Are you going to kill me?" the Thousand Transformations Fox Demon asked.

Surprisingly, its voice was reminiscent of a young boy.

"Thousand Transformations Fox Demon, you're probably the only one of your kind left in the world? It'd be a pity to kill you. Why don't you come with me? I'll help you regain your true strength and bring you to the height of your ancestors," the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

"I'm willing to go with you, milord," the Thousand Transformations Fox Demon replied without any hesitation.

"A wise decision."

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist nodded. He sapped away the remaining energy of the Thousand Transformations Illusory Palace, causing the palace to collapse on itself. Then, he infused the sapped energy into the Thousand Transformations Fox Demon.

The Thousand Transformations Fox Demon swiftly grew into a hundred meters large monstrous beast.

“I heard that you were over a hundred thousand meters long at your peak?” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist asked.

“Milord, I am less than a hundred thousand meters long in my normal state, but I’m able to reach over a million meters large when rampaging.”

The Thousand Transformations Fox Demon’s voice was no longer that of a young boy but a man. It was filled with vigor as one would have expected from a powerful beast.

“As expected of a monstrous beast that destroyed an entire Starfield by itself,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist remarked.

He wouldn’t have taken in the Thousand Transformations Fox Demon if he hadn’t thought that it was strong enough.

“Hm? This aura...” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist mumbled with a frown.

He quickly turned his sights toward an Upper Realm of the Nine Souls Galaxy.

“Follow me. Let’s take a look.”

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist got onto the back of the Thousand Transformations Fox Demon, and the two of them disappeared with a streak of black light.

All that was left in their wake were the fragmented remains of what used to be a Lower Realm.

*Chapter 5099: Master’s Help*

Yator Upper Realm was one of the Upper Realms located in the vicinity of the Nine Souls Sacred Clan. It was a realm directly under the rule of the Nine Souls Sacred Clan.

However, a monster had appeared in Yator Upper Realm. Terrifying black gaseous flames filled the sky with a malevolent aura, but its origin was from a small little body.

That person was none other than Prince Brightsun.

Prince Brightsun was currently on a rampage. His body was emanating strength far greater than his cultivation. He seemed to have lost consciousness, leaving behind just a streak of aggression within him.

It was fortunate that there was no one nearby, or else he would have gone on a slaughter given the bloodthirst coming from him,

All of a sudden, a humongous figure flitted across space and landed not too far away from Prince Brightsun. It was the Thousand Transformations Fox Demon and the Ox-nosed Old Daoist.

“Ah, it’s this rascal. Did he escape to this place using Sima Xiangtu’s formation? I never thought that his bloodline power would be this powerful, though his powers appear to have gone amok? It seems like Sima Xiangtu has left some kind of formation in him. I’m guessing that he was intending to use this rascal’s power to go on a massacre?”

“I’d expect no less from Sima Xiangtu. He wants to drag the world down with him even if he loses his own life,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist remarked.

He did notice that there were multiple formations inscribed on Prince Brightsun long ago. Some of them were from the Asura World Spirit Army, but the rest were from Sima Xiangtu.

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist didn’t pay much heed to it back then, but their purpose was clear to him now. It was a formation that forced Prince Brightsun to go on a rampage should Sima Xiangtu ever lose his life.

And the power that Prince Brightsun was exerting right now would have been enough to slaughter the whole Nine Souls Galaxy under normal circumstances.

“It looks like he has noticed us,” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist remarked.

Prince Brightsun had locked his murderous eyes onto the Ox-nosed Old Daoist. Clearly, he was intending to make a move on the latter.

Grar!

A beastlike roar echoed from Prince Brightsun. At the same time, the black gaseous flames morphed into numerous massive black claws that swiped at the Ox-nosed Old Daoist and the Thousand Transformations Fox Demon.

It looked like they were planning to tear the Ox-nosed Old Daoist into pieces.

“Hmph!”

But with a mere harrumph, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist stopped the terrifying black gaseous flame in its tracks. Not only so, but even Prince Brightsun also appeared to have his movements sealed. No matter how he bared his teeth and growled, he was unable to move in the least.

Killing intent flashed across the eyes of the Ox-nosed Old Daoist. He rose into the air and approached Prince Brightsun a step at a time.

Prince Brightsun started to panic despite his lack of consciousness, seemingly due to the intensity of the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s killing intent. Surprisingly, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist didn’t take his life right away.

“It feels like a pity to kill you off just like that. Your existence might just be of help to that disciple of mine. Why don’t you live on with that burning hatred of yours?”

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist changed his mind. He placed his two palms together and started constructing a formation.

Weng!

There was a brilliant burst of light that was many times more intense than Prince Brightsun’s black gaseous flame. It looked almost as if a new sun had suddenly risen in this realm, irradiating the surroundings with its brilliance.

Then, the formation started to contract on the Ox-nosed Old Daoist’s hand till it was the size of a chicken’s egg. The Ox-nosed Old Daoist smacked the formation into Prince Brightsun’s head.

The next moment, the black gaseous flame receded into Prince Brightsun’s body, and his terrifying eyes slowly reverted back to normal. By then, the Ox-

nosed Old Daoist and the Thousand Transformations Fox Demon had already vanished from sight.

“What... happened earlier?”

Prince Brightsun looked at his surroundings in confusion.

He did escape to this place through Sima Xiangtu’s formation, but for a moment there, he felt like he had entered a peculiar state. He couldn’t tell whether what he had gone through earlier was real or that it was just a dream.

He suddenly thought of something, and a sharp glint flashed across his eyes.

“I’ll kill you, Chu Feng.”

Speaking those words with utmost hatred, Prince Brightsun rose to the sky and left the area.

Meanwhile, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist was hidden inside the fabrics of space. When he saw Prince Brightsun depart with a hateful look on his face, a satisfied smile showed on his face. However, he soon turned around and looked behind him.

“Why don’t you show yourself since you’re already here?”

Right after those words were spoken, the area where he was gazing at started distorting. Soon, a middle-aged man carrying an ax on his back walked out from the distortion. Despite the middle-aged man’s ordinary appearance, he possessed unfathomable strength.

This was the person who forced the Netherworld Envoy to relinquish his hold on the terrifying little girl and send Chu Feng back to the Nine Souls Galaxy.

“Should I be calling you the Woodcutter or Song Changsheng?” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist asked.

“Should I be calling you Dugu Lingtian or the Ox-nosed Old Daoist?” the middle-aged man replied.

“Hahaha! You’re the only one in the current Eastern Region who dares to speak to me in such a manner!” the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said with a chuckle.

The middle-aged man paid his words no heed. He looked in the direction where Prince Brightsun left and asked, "Is it really good for you to have done that? That asura brat possesses a powerful bloodline power, but you planted a seed of hostility against Chu Feng in him. Aren't you afraid that he might really kill Chu Feng if he manages to mature?"

"What do you know? I wouldn't harm my own disciple. I'm helping him here," the Ox-nosed Old Daoist snorted.

"Whatever."

The middle-aged man was led here by the aura emanated by Prince Brightsun, but since the matter had been resolved, he decided to turn around and leave.

"Wait wait, don't be in such a hurry to leave," the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

"Do you need me for anything?" the middle-aged man asked.

"I'm worried that my disciple might stray from the path thinking that I have been kidnapped by Sima Xiangtu. Help me send a letter to him," the Ox-nosed Old Daoist took out a letter and tossed it to the middle-aged man as he spoke.

"You want me to mail your letter?"

The middle-aged man received the letter with an irritated look on his face.

"It's just a small favor. At least do it on that man's account and make a trip for me, alright?" the Ox-nosed Old Daoist said.

The middle-aged man's eyes widened as soon as he heard those words.

"Is Chu Feng really his son?" he asked.

"You still don't know? All you have to do is to pop into the Ancestral Martial Galaxy to take a look, and you'd have the answer to that question," the Ox-nosed Old Daoist replied.

"I promised him to never step into the Ancestral Martial Galaxy," the middle-aged man replied before leaving with the Ox-nosed Old Daoist's letter.

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist was assured to see that, knowing that the middle-aged man would do him that favor. He smiled to himself and murmured,

“Really. All I did was to snatch a treasure from you in that ancient remnant back then. Do you have to hold a grudge against me for so long?”

He looked in the direction of the Nine Souls Sacred Clan.

“Chu Feng, God’s Era has already started. We must both work hard. I hope that the two of us will reunite one day at the end of our cultivation paths.”

With those words, the Ox-nosed Old Daoist got onto the back of the Thousand Transformations Fox Demon, and the latter rose into the sky and charged into space.

The Ox-nosed Old Daoist was traveling not through teleportation formations but space. From the direction of his travel, it was apparent that he was intending to leave the Eastern Region.

#### Chapter 5100: Xian Miaomiao’s Master

“Who could it be?”

Chu Feng was resting in a chamber in the Nine Souls Sacred Clan, but there was a knit on his forehead. He was feeling uneasy.

Through the ancient teleportation formation, they discovered that their link with the Fogtree Lower Realm had been severed. That verified their deduction that something had happened to it. Something huge must have happened there even if it hadn’t been destroyed.

Not to mention, he had witnessed with his own eyes that brilliant light, that terrifying energy, and the disappearance of the Fogtree Lower Realm right after. This strongly suggested its destruction.

It didn’t make sense for a Lower Realm to be destroyed all of a sudden. It would take tremendous strength to pull that off.

He thought about everything that had happened at the Nine Souls Galaxy thus far, and he was worried that this matter had something to do with Sima Xiangtu or the Pill Dao Immortal Sect.

No matter who it was, this meant that they already possessed strength that he was unable to withstand. Even his Asura World Spirit Army would be powerless against someone who had the power to completely destroy a Lower Realm.

He was worried that Sima Xiangtu would make a comeback since the latter possessed many incomprehensible aces up his sleeves. There was no way

he would underestimate Sima Xiangtu since he had already seen some of them himself.

Of course, it could also be the Pill Dao Immortal Sect too.

In any case, this didn't bode well for Chu Feng and the others. He could only pray that it was unrelated to either of them.

"This feeling is..."

All of a sudden, Chu Feng narrowed his eyes. He quickly turned his sights outward and saw a pillar of light descending from the sky and enveloping a sleeping chamber within the Nine Souls Sacred Clan. That was where Princess Xiaoxiao resided.

Realizing that something was amiss, Chu Feng quickly made his way over.

The phenomenon had also alerted the whole Nine Souls Sacred Clan as crowds of people rushed over.

"What incredible energy. I can't enter at all."

The crowd tried to break the light enveloping to enter the sleeping chamber but to no avail. Not even the Asura King was able to do so. The light had completely isolated the room from the rest of the world, making it impossible for Chu Feng's Heaven's Eye to see what was happening inside.

Chu Feng and everyone else felt nervous and worried. Their expressions looked as if the apocalypse had fallen upon them.

They couldn't be blamed for feeling that way since the Fogtree Lower Realm had just only been destroyed, and a powerful pillar of light that even the Asura King was helpless against suddenly fell upon the Nine Souls Sacred Clan. It was inevitable that they would link the two matters together.

"May I know who you are? Feel free to speak if you need something from us, but I ask you not to hurt my friend."

Chu Feng could only clasp his fist toward the pillar of light and ask politely, but there wasn't any response at all.

Soon, the entire Nine Souls Sacred Clan was plunged into a state of terror. Some of the more cowardly ones even started fleeing. They were afraid that the pillar of light was the same one that destroyed the Fogtree Lower Realm, and they didn't want to be killed just like that.

However, Chu Feng, Wang Yuxian, the Godwish Grandmother, the Lady of Dao Sea, and the others had chosen to stay in the Nine Souls Sacred Clan.



They felt that the owner of the energy was after Chu Feng and not Princess Xiaoxiao. Clearly, Chu Feng wouldn't be able to escape against someone as powerful as that even if he tried to flee, so they decided to accompany him instead.

Whether it spelled calamity or anything else, they were already prepared to face it together with him.

As for the others, they were just loyal to the Nine Souls Sacred Clan.

Weng!

The pillar of light lasted for a while before it started undergoing a transformation. Everyone present noticed it.

Chu Feng even boldly walked toward the pillar of light and placed his hand on it. To his surprise, his hand passed right through the pillar of light when no one else was able to breach it earlier on. This was likely to be a result of the pillar of light's transformation.

So, he quickly entered the pillar of light without any hesitation.

Upon seeing that, Wang Yuxian quickly rushed over and attempted to enter the sleeping chamber too, but she found herself unable to pass through the pillar of light.

"It looks like Chu Feng is the only one able to pass through the pillar of light," she said.

The Godwish Grandmother and the others tried it too, but they weren't able to pass through. The transformation in the pillar of light seemed to be catered only to Chu Feng.

This made them feel even more uneasy as it verified their earlier deduction that the owner of this energy was here for Chu Feng.

Meanwhile, Chu Feng passed through the pillar of light and found that Princess Xiaoxiao's sleeping chamber was undamaged. He could see what was happening inside through the Heaven's Eye, and what he saw astonished him.

He saw Princess Xiaoxiao in a deep sleep on her bed. Her deep and steady breathing showed that she was safe and sound. However, what truly surprised Chu Feng was the other person inside the sleeping chamber.

Xian Miaomiao.

Xian Miaomiao had actually managed to escape from Princess Xiaoxiao's body, and she seemed to be in a good condition.

It was impossible for Xian Miaomiao to have escaped by herself. In fact, even if Chu Feng had extracted her using his spirit power, it was likely that Xian Miaomiao would sustain a fair bit of damage in the process, such that she would suffer a period of debility.

In other words, it was highly unusual for Xian Miaomiao to be standing there unharmed.

Xian Miaomiao was probably the only one who had an answer to that question, so Chu Feng pushed the door to the sleeping chamber open and entered without hesitation.

"Chu Feng."

Xian Miaomiao showed a sweet smile upon seeing Chu Feng and quickly ran up to him. She was delighted, but she didn't seem to be surprised by Chu Feng's appearance. This hinted that she knew that he would come.

"Are you fine, Miaomiao?"

As curious as Chu Feng was, the first thing he did was to grab Xian Miaomiao's pulse to check on her condition.

"Silly Chu Feng. Can't you see that I'm perfectly fine?" Xian Miaomiao replied with a grin.

After a quick inspection, Chu Feng could also tell that Xian Miaomiao was perfectly fine.

"Miaomiao, how did you come out from Princess Xiaoxiao's body?" Chu Feng asked out of curiosity.

His instinct told him that Xian Miaomiao was likely to have the answer to that question.

"My master helped me escape. He told me everything that has happened while I was asleep. Chu Feng, you're incredible. You saved all of us back at the Ancestral Lower Realm, and you were able to do the same here at the Nine Souls Galaxy too," Xian Miaomiao complimented with a heartened smile.

However, Chu Feng was confused by her response.

"Who is your master?" Chu Feng asked.

"To be honest with you, I have no idea who he is either," Xian Miaomiao scratched her head as she answered merrily.

“You don’t know?”

Chu Feng was baffled to hear that.

“Yeah. I mean, I just met him and I decided to take him as my master on the spot,” Xian Miaomiao replied.

“Elder, are you willing to meet me?” Chu Feng asked with a clasped fist.

He knew that Xian Miaomiao’s master was the person who enveloped this place with the pillar of light. Since the pillar of light was still around, her master should be in the vicinity. Furthermore, the fact that her master was willing to take in Xian Miaomiao as his disciple and recount everything that had happened during this period of time suggested that he wasn’t an enemy.

“Don’t bother, Chu Feng. My master wouldn’t have tasked me to pass on a message to you if he wished to meet you,” Xian Miaomiao said.

“Pass on a message to me? Miaomiao, your master has something to say to me?” Chu Feng asked.

“To be exact, it’s your master who has something to say to you.”

Xian Miaomiao took out a letter. It was the one which the Ox-nosed Old Daoist had handed over to the middle-aged man carrying an ax.